

A NEW
HISTORY
OF THE
EAST-INDIES.

WITH BRIEF
OBSERVATIONS

ON THE
Religion, Customs, Manners and Trade of
the INDIANS.

WITH A

2729

Description of all the Forts and Settlements of the
EUROPEANS, and the Trade carried on by the *East-
India* Company; with an Account of the Wars they
have been engaged in from their first Settlement by
Queen *Elizabeth* in the Year 1601, down to the present
Treaty of Peace with the Nabob. With a Full Account
of the Taking and Destruction of *Tulagee Angria* the
Pirate, by the *ENGLISH*, and a particular Ac-
count of the Defeat of the Nabob by Admiral *Watson*.

With a MAP of the Country.

By CAPTAIN COPE

L O N D O N :

Printed for H. OWEN, at the *Britannia* Printing-Office
in *White Friars*, and Sold by the Booksellers in Town
and Country.



T H E P R E F A C E.



R. POTTER, the late learn d Archbishop of Canterbury, in his *Antiquities of Greece*, tells us, the ancient Atticans, were of Opinion, that in the Beginning of the World, Men and Women, like Plants, were in the several Parts thereof, produced out of the fertile Womb of one common Mother, the Earth, by some strange prolific Virtue. This, though quite contrary to the Mosaic System, is nevertheless much more rational and creditable than the making all Men, every where, spring from one Man only; hence the Northern, &c. as well as the Eastern Nations might be, as they certainly were, peopled at one and the same Time. And in this there doth not appear the least Absurdity or Inconsistency, since that Almighty Power, which in Eden produced the first Man and Woman, was equally capable of causing the Earth in every Part of it, Island as well as Continent, he thought proper, to produce therein also a first Man and Woman.

AND tho' the ancient Fathers were not of this Opinion, yet they often in their Dissuasives to the People from the too eager Pursuit of Riches, and in their Reflexions on the

*the Hazards and Dangers of the Seas and long Jour-
nies assert, that Almighty God has in every Country and
Nation, provided at Hand all Things necessary for the
Support and Convenience of Life, and that whatever
we want more is not absolutely necessary, but are the
Inventions of Luxury and Vice.*

*THE Study of Trade and Commerce therefore in the
early Ages of Christianity gave Place to Religion and
Devotion; and from hence it happened, that a vast
Number of Monasteries and religious Houses were created
and endowed with large Estates in this and all other
Parts of Christendom; but at length it pleased GOD,
to expel the Darkness of Popish Superstition, the Worship
of Images, blind Devotion, and implicit Faith, with
all the Traditions and lying Wonders of designing Men by
the Introduction or Restoration of primitive Christianity
under the Dispensation of Protestantism, which has not
unfitly by some of our most learned Divines been styled,
the Beginning of Christ's Reign here on Earth, predicted
in the Revelation of St. John.*

*HENRY the Eighth observing, that almost all Property
was centered in the Hands of the Ecclesiasticks of his
Time, and being justly weary of the Tyranny and Op-
pression of the See of Rome discovered the most effectual
Manner to put an End to the Dominion and Hierarchy
of the Church by selling and disposing of the Abby and
sacred Lands, to the Laity, which produced this great
Blessing that the new Nobility and Gentry created there-
by, would fight for their Property, and support his Su-
premacy.*

*TILL the glorious Reign of Queen Elizabeth we made
but an inconsiderable Figure in commercial Affairs,
and it must be allowed, that the Discovery of the Indies
have greatly improved the Trade, Shipping, Naviga-
tion*

tion and Commerce of all the Europeans. The Queen and her faithful Council sensible of the great Utility of a Trade to East India incorporated a Society of Merchants to carry it on by a Common Fund, who extended their Commerce to Arabia, India, China and Japan; to all which Parts they have from Time to Time exported considerable Quantities of our Manufactures. Besides which, this Trade is one of the greatest Nurseries of Seamen, above Five Thousand whereof are continually employed in the Service of this Company.

WE yearly export to these Parts great Quantities of Bullion, Lead, Tin, all Sorts of our Cloths, especially Broad Cloths, Stuffs, Callimancoes, Long-Ells, &c. and in Return import, China-ware, Tea of all Sorts, Cabinets, Raw and Wrought Silk, Muslin, Callicoës, Cotton-Cloths, Coffee, Canes, Diamonds, Drugs of many Kinds, and Grocery Wares of various Sorts.

THIS Trade has hitherto proved the most beneficial of all others to this Nation, and the Government truly sensible thereof has with the utmost Expedition fitted out a Fleet to protect it from the daring Insults of the French, or of any other Power who should have the Effrontery to obstruct it.

As to the general Benefit of Trade to this Island, it is now become so important, that it is the Basis of our Liberty and Happiness, the Support of the State, the Bulwark of our Religion, and the Source of our Wealth. It is from hence, that we are able to maintain and man our Navy, and keep in Pay a Standing Army. It is Commerce that makes our Lands valuable, our Estates saleable, and our Funds useful. And if it should be said there are some Inconveniences arising from foreign Trade, not quite so agreeable to the primitive Simplicity, this is not the Fault of the Thing itself so much as it is an Evidence

dence of the general Corruption and Depravity of Mankind.

These Considerations and the Importance of the East-India Trade have induced me to draw up the following History thereof, with brief Observations on the Religion, Customs, Manners and Commerce of the Inhabitants. I shall therefore now leave the Reader to the Perusal of the ensuing Work, which, with how little Art soever it may be executed, will yet from the Importance of the Subject merit some Share of the public Attention.



T H E
C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. I.

A Brief Narrative of the first Discovery of the *Philippine*
Islands. Page 3

C H A P. II.

Contains a Description of the *Spice* Islands, viz. the *Malucca*,
Banda, *Amboyna*, and *Ceylon*, with those that cover them. 33

C H A P. III.

The first Voyage of the *Portuguese* to *India*, in the Year 1798.
57

C H A P. IV.

Contains a Description of the *Sunda* Islands, with Captain *Beck-*
man's Opinion concerning the Management of the Trade to
Borneo. 77

C H A P. IV.

Contains a Description of the Islands of *Sumatra* and *Java*. 97

C H A P. V.

Describes the Kingdom of *Tonquin* and *Cochin-china*. 134

C H A P. VI.

Contains a Description of *Siam*, and of the Kingdoms of *Pegu*,
Ava and *Arracan*. 145

C H A P. VII.

Gives a short Description of the Islands in the *Ethiopian* Seas,
with some remarkable Passages historical and accidental. 172

C H A P. VIII.

Gives a Description of *Zeyla's* Sea-coast, and of a Part of *Ethi-*
opia, *Zuakin* and *Upper Egypt*. 176

C H A P. IX.

Gives a little Description of the Coast of *Arabia the Happy*, from
Mount *Sinai* to *Mocha*, with some Observations on the Reli-
gion, Customs and Laws, as they are now established. 181

C H A P. X.

Contains a Description of *Aden*, with some historical Remarks about the *Turkish* Expedition from thence into *India*: Also an Account of the Sea-coast of *Arabia Petraea*, as far as *Muskat* and *Bassora*; with a particular Account of an *English* Ship lost on the Island of *Maceira*.

191

C H A P. XI.

Treats of the Kingdom and City of *Muskat*, and of their religious and civil Customs; with some historical Account of their Wars and Oeconomy. And a little Account of the Sea-coast of *Arabia Deserta*, also of *Bassora*, with the famous River of *Euphrates*.

195

C H A P. XII.

Observations on the Empire of *Persia*, giving an Account of its Magnitude, the Reduction of *Ormuse* to the Obedience of *Persia* by the Assistance of the *English*. Also of the late Revolution by *Meriweys*.

210

C H A P. XIII.

Treats of the *Mogul's* Dominions on the River *Indus*, particularly of the ancient Kingdom of *Sindy*; its Product and Commerce, Religion and Customs of the Inhabitants; with a Description of the River *Indus*.

219

C H A P. XIV.

Gives an Account of the ancient Kingdom of *Guzerat* now a Province annexed to the *Mogul's* Dominions, its Situation, Product, Manners and Religion; with some Account of the Pirates that inhabit Part of it, and some Observations on *Diu*, a *Portuguese* City on the Island appertaining to *Guzerat*.

227

C H A P. XV.

Gives an Account of the Cities of *Cambay*, *Baroach*, and *Surat*; with several Occurrences that happened to them, and of the Sea-coast from *Damaan* to *Bombay*.

234

C H A P. XVI.

Gives a Description of *Bombay*, with historical Remarks on its Wars, Government and Trade, till the Year 1687, when the Foundation of a War was laid which proved the Ruin of the then *English East-India* Company.

254

C H A P. XVII.

Gives an Account of the *Sundah Rajah's* Dominions, the Product, Religion, and Customs of his Country, with Observations on his War with the *English East-India* Company in the Year 1718; with a short Description of *Canara*.

291

C H A P.

The CONTENTS.

vii

C H A P. XVIII.

Observations on the *Samorin* and his Country, and of *Couchin*; their Religion, Laws and Customs, Product of the Country, and its Commerce; an Account of their Commerce with the *Dutch*, begun in the Year 1708, and the Consequences of it.

301

C H A P. XIX.

Gives a short Description of Fort *St. George*, its first Settlement and Rise, its Situation and Sterility, and some Remarks on its Government, and the Actions of some of its Governors, with some Occurrences that happened to the *English* Factory at *Vizagapatam*.

318

C H A P. XX.

Gives an Account of the famous Kingdom of *Pegu*, its Situation and Product; with its Laws, Customs, and Religion, &c.

325

C H A P. XXI.

Treats of *Merjee* and *Tenacerin*, and of the Sea-coast in the Kingdom of *Siam's* Dominions, of the Massacre there of the *English* in the Year 1687.

340

C H A P. XXII.

Gives an Account of the Islands and trading Ports on the Coast of *Sumatra* and of the Island of *Java*, &c.

344

C H A P. XXIII.

Gives an Account of *Borneo*.

353

C H A P. XXIV.

Gives an Account of *Cambodia*, its Trade; also of a late War brought into their Country by the *Siamer*, and the ill Successes they had.

372

C H A P. XXV.

Treats of *Couchin-china*, and *Tonquin*, their Religion, Laws, Customs.

376

C H A P. XXVI.

Gives some Account of the Religion, Laws, Customs, Commerce, Riches, Cities, Temples, Gods, Goddesses, Priests, Military Forces, Produce, and Manufactories, &c. of *China*.

379

C H A P. XXVII.

Some Occurrences that happened among the *English* at *Amy* in the Year 1700.

382

C H A P.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A short Account of the Taking of the *Manila Ship*, in the *East-Indies* by Mr. *Anson* in the Ship the *Centurion*, in the Year 1742. 388

APPENDIX.

- SECT. I. THE Success of an *English Squadron* in the *East-Indies*. 393
- SECT. II. An Account of an Engagement between the *French* and *English Fleets*, and the Taking of *Madras*, in a Letter from Fort *St. David*, dated *Aug. 17*. 394
- SECT. III. An Account of the *Dutch* surprising the Island of *Madras*. Written by a Person on the Spot, and authenticated by the Testimony of several others present. 398
- SECT. IV. Some Account of *Angria* the Pirate, and the Taking of *Geriah* by Vice-Admiral *Watson*. 409
- SECT. V. An Account of the Loss of the Company's Settlements at *Bengal*, in a Letter from a Gentleman at Fort *St. George*. 415
- SECT. VI. An Account of the Retaking of *Calcutta*, and the other Forts. 417
- SECT. VII. An Account of an Engagement between three *East Indiamen* and two *French Men of War*, in a Letter from Captain *Wilson*, of the *Suffolk*. 420
- SECT. VIII. An Account of the Taking of several Forts by the *English*, and of the Articles of Peace acceded to and signed by the Nabob of *Bengal*: And also the Articles agreed to between Admiral *Watson* and the Council of the *French East-India Company*: In three Letters from Vice-Admiral *Watson*. 421



A NEW
HISTORY
OF THE
EAST-INDIES.

CHAP. I.

*A brief Narrative of the first Discovery of the
Philippine Islands.*



It is generally agreed, that the Knowledge of the World is the most useful and entertaining Subject, a Man can employ his Thoughts upon: The reading Novels and Romances indeed, ingrosses a great deal of the Time of the present Generation; but I persuade myself, that a Majority of these Readers would rather apply themselves to the Study of instructive History, if it could be rendered equally pleasant and interesting.

MANY Colonies of our Countrymen having within these two hundred Years, since Trade, Commerce and every Science began to revive and flourish under the auspicious Reign of the ever memorable *Elizabeth*, being from Time to Time established on the vast Continents of *Asia* and *America*, we are hence naturally induced to read with Pleasure the Accounts of People, their Customs and

Manners, which before were unknown to us; but since which Period most of us have, through the great Increase of Commerce, Friends and Relations concerned in the Traffic carried on to those Places, and many of us have Sons and Kindred settled there. It is therefore I humbly presume, the following Treatise concerning the *English* Settlements and Trade to the *East-Indies*, and the neighbouring Continent, describing the Religion, Government, Customs and Manners of the Natives of those Parts will be acceptable to the Reader.

THE Globe is divided into two great Continents; the Eastern comprehending *Asia*, *Africa* and *Europe*, and the Western *America* only.

THE Antients were not acquainted with half the eastern Continent, and as to *America*, and great Part of *Asia* and *Africa*, neither Antients nor Moderns knew any thing of them three hundred Years ago. The *Atlantick* Ocean divides *Europe* and *Africa* from *America*; the *Pacifick* Ocean divides *America* from *China*. That Part of the eastern Continent which is denominated *Asia*, is bounded by the Ice-Sea, or Frozen Ocean, on the North; by the *Pacifick* Ocean on the East; by the *Indian* Ocean on the South; and on the West by the Rivers *Oby* and *Don*, the *Palus Mœtis*, the *Euxine* Sea, the *Bosphorus*, *Hellepont*, *Egean* Sea, or *Archipelago*; and by the *Levant*, the *Red* Sea, and the Isthmus of *Suez*, which separate it from *Europe* and *Africa*. *Asia* lies between the Equator and seventy-two Degrees of North Latitude, and between twenty-five and a hundred and forty-eight Degrees of eastern Longitude, and comprehends *China*, *Siberia*, *Persia*, *Arabia*, *Asiatick* Turkey, and the two *Indies*, East and West.

THE *Portuguese* having discovered the Way to *India* by the Way of the Cape of *Good Hope*, planted the Coasts of *Africa* and *Asia*, till they arrived at length at the Kingdom of *China*.

JOHN, King of *Portugal*, having expelled the *Moors* from that Kingdom, pursued them to the Coast of *Africa*, and took *Ceuta* from them; in the Year 1415. King *John* was attended in that Expedition by his Son Prince *Henry*, who being informed, while in *Africa*, that the *Moors* traffick-
ed

ed with the Coast of *Guinea*, over Land by their Caravans, and brought home Gold Dust, Ivory, &c. from thence, projected the Discovery of that Coast by Sea, and, accordingly, equipped a Squadron of Ships at his Return to *Portugal*, and commanded them to make what Discoveries they could on the South-West Coast of *Africa*, and after forty Years diligent Search, the *Portuguese* advanced, by slow Degrees, as far as *Sierra Leon*, on the *Guinea* Coast, in seven Degrees of North Latitude, planting Colonies on the Shoars all the Way they went; and their Language is spoke almost all along the Coast of *Africa* at this Day.

PRINCE *Henry* dying in the Year 1463, the *Portuguese* proceeded to plant the Gold Coast, in the Year 1469, and erected the Fortrefs called *St. George del Mina*, now in Possession of the *Dutch*: And in the Reign of King *John* II. in the Year 1486, *Bartholomew Diaz*, the *Portuguese* Admiral discovered the Cape of Good Hope, the most southern Promontory of *Africa*, which lies in thirty four Degrees one half of South Latitude, but found the Ocean so tempestuous, that he gave it the Name of *Cabo Tormentosa*, and did not think it feizable to pass it at that Time. King *John* dying in the Year 1495, his Successor, Don *Emanuel*, commanded his Admiral, *Vasco de Gama*, to endeavour to furround this stormy Cape, which, being effected, King *Emanuel* gave it the Name of the Cape of Good Hope, as he had now a fair Prospect of tracing out the Way to *India* by Sea: The Admiral having doubled the Cape on the eighteenth of *November*, 1497, which is their Summer Season, sailed along the eastern Coast of *Africa*, till he arrived at *Melinda*, three Degrees South of the Equinoctial, from when he shaped his Course to the Eastward, and arrived at *Calicut*, on the *Malabar* Coast of the *Hither India*, on the 20th of *May*, 1498.

THE *Portuguese* soon after made several Settlements, and planted Colonies on the Coast of the *Farther India*, and in the Spice Islands, and arrived at *Canton* in *China*, in the Year 1517, where they were permitted to traffic, and fix a Colony on the little Island of *Macao*, at the Mouth of the River of *Canton*, which the *Portuguese* possess at this Day; but as Subjects to the Crown of *China*. Their Missionaries were not permitted, however, to go

over to the Continent, till some Years after *Francis Xavier*, from his indefatigable Labours, stiled the Apostle of the *Indies*, who died in the Year 1552, was never suffered to set his Foot a-shoar upon the Continent of *China*: The *Portuguese* laboured for more than thirty Years after in vain, to get their Missionaries admitted into that Kingdom.

ROGER and *Ricci*, two Jesuits, were the first that were permitted to reside on the Continent, who became very acceptable by their Skill in the Mathematicks; but the *Chinese* were amazed, when they saw them produce a Map of the World, to find that *China* was so very small a Part of it. These Jesuits were permitted to compose a Catechism, and explain the Christian Doctrines, and gained great Numbers of Converts among People of Figure; but at the same Time were insulted by the Mob. They continued their Mission, however, for seven Years, till a new Viceroy came to *Canton*, and obliged them to retire to *Macao*; however they were soon after recalled, and obtained Leave to reside in the capital City of *Pekin*, whither they carried Presents for the Emperor, among which was a Clock and repeating Watch; but a little before they arrived at *Pekin*, they were stopped by an Eunuch, a Commissioner of the Customs, and imprisoned, on Pretence that a Crucifix which they carried in a Portmanteau, was a Charm, which might affect the Emperor's Life; however, an Order soon after arrived, for bringing those Foreigners up to *Pekin*, where they were well received by the Emperor, and their Presents accepted, and a House and a Maintenance were assigned them, with the Liberty of making what Proselytes they could, among whom they relate were many Princes of the Blood; and the Converts encreased so fast, that in the Province of *Kiamfi* alone there were ninety Churches, and forty-five Oratories. The Bonzes (the Priests of the God *Fo*) raised several Persecutions against them; but nothing proved more fatal to them than the Opposition they met with from the *Dominican* Friars at *Macao*; one of this Order declaring that the Jesuits had a Design to depose the Emperor, and usurp his Throne. That the Places they were settled in between *Canton* and *Pekin*, favoured their Design, and that the

Dutch

Dutch Fleet, which was then upon the Coast, was intended to protect them; that the Governor of *Pekin* was in their Interest, and that the Christians of *Japan* were ready to join them.

THE Viceroys and Governors of Places were exceedingly alarmed at this pretended Conspiracy, and one of the Missionaries passing through *Canton* before the Forgery was discovered, was condemned to the *Bastinado*, under which he died; but *Ricci* was protected by the Emperor at *Pekin*, and the Falsity of the Report being proved, he lived in that Capital in Peace, till the Year 1610, when he died, aged eighty-eight Years, twenty-seven whereof he had resided in *China*; and the Emperor had such a Regard for him, that he ordered a Piece of Ground to be assigned for building him a Tomb, which was afterwards the Jesuits Burying-place.

A PERSECUTION being raised against the Jesuits and their Profelytes in the Year 1617, they were obliged to retire to *Macao*; but there happening a War with the *Tartars*, in the Reign of the succeeding Emperor, he recalled them again, knowing they would be very useful to him in the Management of his Artillery, and they lived unmolested in the Kingdom until the Year 1628. Two Years after the Jesuit, *Adam Shaal*, resorted to the Court of *Pekin*, and was mightily caressed by the Emperor and his Ministers, on account of his Skill in the Mathematicks; and the same Year the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans* got Admission into *China*, and, as well as the Jesuits, boast of the numerous Converts they made; and notwithstanding the Revolution that happened in the Year 1640, when *Xunchi*, King of *Niuch*, made a Conquest of *China*, the Jesuits maintained their Ground, and were no less in Favour with the Emperors of the present *Tartar* Race, than they were with those of the *Chinese*. *Adam Shaal* was made President of the Society of Mathematicians by the Emperor *Xunchi*, which had been under the Direction of the *Mahometans* for three hundred Years before. It was *Adam* that reformed the Kalendar, which still encreased his Interest at Court, and the Emperor was so sensible of the Service the learned *Europeans* were capable of doing him, that he sent for fourteen more of the Missionaries to

Court, among whom was Father *Verbieft*; and the Jesuits insinuate, that they should have made a Convert of the Emperor, if the Ladies of the Court had not prevented it, on his reproving that Prince for entertaining one of them.

ON the Accession of *Kanghi*, the Son of *Xunchi*, the first *Tartar* Emperor, *Adam Shaal* was made Preceptor to the young Monarch, who was then but eight Years of age, and the Bonzes (Priests of *Fo*) were expelled the Palace; whereupon the Bonzes presented a Petition to the Regents, setting forth, that the Jesuits had been banished their Country for their Disaffection to their natural Princes, and would infallibly raise a Rebellion in *China*: That they had introduced a Multitude of Foreigners into the Empire, who travelled through the Provinces, and made Plans of their strong Towns, and that they only waited a favourable Opportunity to raise a Rebellion. To this Petition they annexed a Book, published by *Adam*, containing a List of their Churches, and of the Converts they had made, which the Bonzes suggested was the Muster-Roll of an Army, which they could bring into the Field on the first Signal; that their Beads were Marks whereby the Conspirators knew one another, and shewed, in the Popish Books they distributed, the Picture of *Christ* crucified, saying, *Behold the God of the Christians nailed to a Cross, for attempting to make himself King of the Jews; this is the God they invoke to favour their treasonable Conspiracies against the Government.*

THIS Charge against the Jesuits being brought before the Tribunal of Rites, they were imprisoned and laid in Irons, and the Christian Religion was declared to be a false and pernicious Doctrine. *Adam Shaal* was condemned to die, and though the Sentence was never executed, he died under the Hardships he suffered in the Year 1666; twenty-five of the Missionaries were banished to *Macao*; but four were still permitted to remain at Court, who sometime afterwards procured an Order for recalling the rest of their Brethren, and procured a Declaration from one of the principal Tribunals; *That the Christian Law had been unjustly condemned, and that it taught nothing inconsistent with the Welfare of the State.* The Christians were

were thereupon tolerated, and put into Possession of their Churches again, in the Year 1671. Father *Verbiest* taught the Emperor Mathematicks, and caused light Brass Cannon to be cast, which gained the Emperor great Advantages in his Wars, by which he became so much in Favour, both with Prince and People, that Multitudes of Converts were daily made, and *Verbiest* wrote to *Europe* for more Missionaries, whereupon *Lewis XIV.* sent over six Jesuits from *France*, among whom was *Le Comte*, who resided in the *Chinese* Court many Years, and wrote the best History of that Kingdom which has been published. These Jesuits arrived at *Nimpo* in *China*, in the Year 1688; *Verbiest* being dead before their Arrival, they were presented to the Emperor soon after, who always kept some of them near his Person, who improved him so far in the Mathematicks, that he wrote a Book upon that Subject. Some of the Viceroy's in the distant Provinces, however, raised a Persecution against the Christians, in which they were countenanced by some Tribunals, and it was as much as the Emperor could do to protect them; he advised them to be very circumspect in their Conduct, and give as little Offence as possible, or his appearing their Protector might endanger his Throne.

THE Encouragement the Missionaries received from the Emperor, brought over more of them from *France*; and the present *French* King *Lewis XV.* settled an annual Revenue of 9000 Livres a Year upon twenty of them, that were sent to *China* and *India*. The Fathers *Gerbillon* and *Bouret* having cured the Emperor of an Ague, he gave them a large Sum towards building a Church, which they finished, and made it one of the finest Temples in that Part of the World.

THE Jesuit Missionaries were so complaisant to the *Chinese* Christians, in suffering them to retain the Worship of *Confucius*, their Ancestors, the Heavens, &c. that they might have remained in *China*, and made Profelytes to this Day, if the *Dominican* and *Franciscan* Friars had not opposed this Practice, and charged the Jesuits with countenancing Idolatry, which creating great Feuds among the Fathers, they prosecuted one another in the Courts of *China* with great Violence, representing their Opponents

as disaffected to the Government, and several of them were imprisoned, and severely used by the *Chinese* Magistrates. At length both Parties appealed to the Pope. The Jesuits represented, that unless they complied with the *Chinese* in these Articles, the Christians would infallibly be expelled the Country; and insisted, that these Compliances were very innocent; that it was not intended to pay divine Honour to *Confucius*, when they prostrated themselves before his Image, but only to pay their Respect to him as a Legislator: That the Libations and Ceremonies observed before the Images of their Parents, only expressed the Veneration and Affection they had for their deceased Relations; and this they procured the Emperor of *China* to certify the Pope: Whereupon his Holiness deputed the Cardinal *de Tournon* his Vicar in *China*, with full Authority to examine and determine this Matter. The Cardinal having admonished the Missionaries to lay aside their Animosities and Disputes, which had given great Scandal to the Infidels, as well as to those who had been converted to Christianity, he decreed and commanded all the Missionaries, especially the Jesuits,

1. THAT in their Writings and Sermons they should disapprove and condemn only such Doctrines and Customs of the *Chinese*, as were inconsistent with the Christian Faith.

2. THAT they should declare, that the Offerings made by the *Chinese* to Heaven, the Moon, and other Planets, to Spirits and Inventors of Arts, were only due to God, the Creator of all Things; that they should condemn particularly the Offerings to *Confucius*, and the Adoration of the Pictures of deceased Men, as inconsistent with the Service of the true God, and with the Declaration of the Pope, the infallible Guide of the Christians, in all Matters that concern Religion.

Signed,

Dated at *Nankin*,
28 January, 1707.

CHARLES,

Patriarch of Antioch, Cardinal, &c.

THE

THE Jesuits and Missionaries of other Orders continued to wrangle on these Heads, until the Year 1720, the Jesuits being all the while caressed at Court, while the others were thrown into Prisons, and severely persecuted. At length a Deputation being sent to the Pope, to know if he would admit of no Alteration in the Decree of Cardinal *de Tournon*, Cardinal *Messabarba*, titular Patriarch of *Alexandria*, was sent over with the Pope's Answer; but the Jesuits so managed Matters, that he was not permitted to see the Emperor for some Time, and could only read the Answer of his Holiness to the Mandarins, who were sent to receive it; the Tenor whereof follows:

1. THE Missionaries may tolerate in private Houses, the Use of Tablets, containing only the Name of the dead Person, putting on the Side of it a convenient Explication.

2. THEY may tolerate all the *Chinese* Ceremonies towards deceased Persons, which are not superstitious, but merely civil.

3. THEY may render to *Confucius* a Worship merely civil, adding a convenient Explication; and it may be lawful to light Candles, burn Incense, and offer Meat, by way of Oblation, before the Tombs, or the dead Bodies themselves.

5. THEY may permit Tables to be set with all manner of Meats and Fruits before the Tombs of the Deceased, as a civil Honour and Act of Piety towards them, without observing any superstitious Rite.

Signed,

C. A. Alexandrinus & *Legatus Apostolicus*.

THE Mandarins thereupon declared, that the Emperor would be satisfied with this Answer; but *Suarez*, the Jesuit observed to them it was all a Trick, for the Words, *This is the Seat of the Soul of the Deceased*, were to be omitted; however the Jesuits and Mandarins being of another Opinion, the Answer was translated, put in Writing, and carried to the Emperor.

ON the twentieth of *November* 1720, the Legate was admitted to an Audience, and directed to appear in the same Ecclesiastical Habit he wore in *Italy*; but the Emperor presenting him with his own Robe at the Audience, he put it over his *European* Habit, and after an Entertainment, at which the Emperor gave him a Glass of Wine with his own Hand, he proceeded to ask the Legate several Questions, particularly whom those Pictures represented, which the Missionaries brought from *Europe*? He answered, they might be the Pictures of the Lord *Jesus*, the Blessed Virgin, or of some Saints or Angels; but why, says the Emperor, do you put them on Wings? This is what the *Chinese* can't understand: It is absurd to give Wings to Men. The Emperor then taking up three Pieces of Silk off the Table, one white, the second red, and the third yellow; and addressing himself to the Assembly, said, If any one should maintain that the red was white, or the white yellow, what would any of you think of it? Intimating, that the Missionaries required them to believe Inconsistencies, in their pretended Explanation of the *Chinese* Rites, as well as in the Doctrines they taught: The Legate answered, *Christ* being ascended to Heaven had constituted the Pope and his Successors his Vicars on Earth, to determine Controversies; and that *Clement II.* enlightened by his Spirit could not be deceived. The Emperor replied, Can the Pope judge of the Rites of *China*, which he has never had any personal Knowledge of, any more than I can judge of the Affairs of *Europe*? The Legate answered, He does not pretend to be a Judge of the Affairs of *China*, but of what Customs and Usages the Christians should be allowed to practise, and what ought to be prohibited, as inconsistent with Christianity.

THE Emperor told the Legate that he had tried to unite all the Missionaries of different Nations, *Portuguese*, *French*, *Italians* and *Germans*; but they were always quarrelling among themselves, and even the Jesuits could not agree together; he was surprized at their Disunion, as they all professed to propagate the same Religion. And he wondered the Pope could give any Credit to them, since some affirmed what the other denied: From such contradictory Representations, how can the Pope take upon him,

him, says his Majesty, to judge of the Affairs of *China*? The Legate answered, he was assisted in his Determinations by the Holy Spirit, who never suffered his Holiness to err in religious Matters: His Majesty answered, I love your Religion much, I adore the same God you do, and if there be any Thing you do not understand in our Rites, I will explain it to you; intimating again, that the Pope could be no Judge of them, for want of sufficient Evidence; adding, that the Decrees concerning the *Chinese* Rites, had not been made with a View to Religion, but were levelled purely against the Jesuits. At another Audience, the Emperor said he should not suffer the Pope to determine any Thing concerning the *Chinese* Rites; that belonged to him, his Viceroys and Governors: And when *Messabarba* desired he might remain Superior of the Missions in *China*, he received no Answer to that, and the Emperor confirmed the Decree of the Tribunal of Rites, That no Europeans should for the future be suffered to propagate their Law, which he apprehended might produce fatal Effects: And the Legate was soon after insulted by the Mandarins in a most outrageous Manner, for maintaining the Authority of the Pope's Bulls, and declaring his Determinations infallible; and several of the *Dominican* and *Franciscan* Missions were sent to Prison.

MESSABARBA however obtained the Release of the Prisoners, and then retired to *Macao*, where he resided six Months, and in the Year 1722 returned to *Europe*; about which Time the Emperor *Kanghi* died, and being succeeded by *Yong Ching*, the Missions were banished to *Macao* in the Year 1723, and their Churches destroyed.

SOME *European* Mathematicians, who were useful to the Court (that is, the Jesuits) were still suffered to remain at *Pekin*; but the *Chinese* Converts that refused to apostatise, and return to their antient Superstition, amounting to three Hundred Thousand Souls, as is computed, were used with great Rigour, particularly one of the Princes of the Blood, and his Family, were banished to the Desarts of *Tartary*, amounting to three Hundred of both Sexes. Other Converts were imprisoned, underwent the Bastinado, and other Punishments: But the *Chinese*

nese seemed to have had more Mercy on them, than Christians in this Part of the World have on one another, for few of them were condemned to die for their Religion.

THE Persecution of Cardinal *Tournon*, formerly the Pope's Vicar there, proceeded from the Jesuits themselves, who did not cease to accuse him to the Emperor, till they effected his Ruin; and, however the Jesuits may apologize for their Conduct in this, and other Instances of the like Nature, it appears that the late Pope *Benedict* confirmed the Decrees of his Predecessors against the Worship of *Confucius*, reproached the General of the Jesuits with the Practices of their Order, in *China*, and prohibited his sending any more Missionaries thither without his Leave; from whence, and some other Circumstances, it appears to me that the Jesuits have never been entirely expelled from *China*; but are suffered to make a Kind of half Christians still; that is, such as worship both Popish and *Chinese* Idols; and this has given Birth to that Report, that Christianity is again tolerated in *China*.

THE Popish Missionaries, though they are very ready to indulge their Converts in many Instances, yet insist peremptorily on their parting with all their Women but one; and that the Women should leave the Husband that entertains other Females; which may have checked the Progress of Christianity, as much as their Doctrine of Transubstantiation does; nor is it practicable, for the Laws of the Country will not admit of their putting away their Wives, unless for some very substantial Reason. Her Relations may demand Satisfaction, if he should attempt it; and what must become of the Children of the several Mothers in this Case? I am apt to think, that Christ and his Apostles were so sensible of the Confusion this must create in Families, that they never mentioned their parting with their Wives; though every one knows, that neither *Jews* or *Gentiles* confined themselves to one Woman in that Age: They only recommended the taking but one Woman, therefore, for the future. As to the Wife, she is in such Circumstances in this Country, that there is no Possibility of her parting from her Husband: He might reclaim her if she did, and punish her for eloping from him; he purchased her, and, no doubt, thinks

thinks he has as good a Right to her, as to the rest of his Goods.

THE *Philippine* Islands are situate in the *Chinese* Sea, Part of the *Pacifick* Ocean, between one hundred and fourteen, and one hundred and twenty-seven Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between five and nineteen Degrees of North Latitude, about one hundred Leagues South East of *China*. There are some hundreds of them, and several very large. The chief and the most Northerly of them is *Manila* or *Luconia*, situate between thirteen and nineteen Degrees of North Latitude, being about four hundred Miles long, and one hundred broad in most Places. The Capital of this Island, and of all the rest, is the City of *Manila*, situate on a Bay in the South-West Part of the Island, being two Miles in Circumference, surrounded by a Wall and other Works, a very commodious Harbour, but of difficult Access, on Account of the Rocks and Sands which lie before it; a Castle defends the Entrance.

THE chief Buildings are the Cathedral, Parish Churches and Convents; one of the Religious Houses is appropriated to the Support of Orphans, Daughters of the Inhabitants, who are provided for during their Lives: Or, if they chuse to marry, have a Portion of two or three hundred Crowns given them. Their Churches, Chapels and Altars are richly adorned, and their Processions on Holidays as splendid as in *Spain*. The College of the Jesuits here, as in most other Popish Countries, is more magnificent than any of the rest.

THE Writer of Commodore *Anson's* Voyage gives the following Description of *Manila*, and its Produce and Traffick.

THE Island of *Luconia*, or *Manila*, says, that Gentleman, is esteemed healthful, and the Water in it the best in the World. It produces all the Fruits of warm Climates, and has an excellent Breed of Horses carried thither from *Spain*. It is well situated for the *Indian* and *Chinese* Trade; and the Bay and Port, which lies on the West Side of it, is a large circular Basin of ten Leagues Diameter, entirely Land-locked. The City of *Manila*, which

which stands on the East Side, is large and populous ; and at the Beginning of the late War was an open Place, only defended by a little Fort ; but considerable Additions have lately been made to its Fortifications. The Port peculiar to the City is that of *Cabite*, which lies two Leagues to the Southward, and here the Ships employed in the *Acapulco* Trade are stationed.

THE City is healthfully situated, and well watered, and has a very fruitful Country in its Neighbourhood ; but it is some Disadvantage to its Trade, that it is difficult getting out to Sea to the Eastward, through such a Number of Islands ; here the *Spaniards* waste Abundance of Time, and are often in great Danger.

THE Trade from hence to *China* and *India* consists chiefly in such Commodities as are intended to supply *Mexico* and *Peru*, namely, Spices, *Chinese* Silks, and Manufactures, particular Silk Stockings, of which no less than fifty thousand Pair have been shipped in one Cargo, with vast Quantities of *Indian* Stuffs, Calicoes and Chints, which are much worn in *America*, together with other small Articles, such as Goldsmiths Work, &c. wrought at the City of *Manila* by the *Chinese*, of which Nation there are not less than twenty thousand residing there, as Servants, Manufacturers, or Brokers. All these Articles are transported annually to the Port of *Acapulco* in *Mexico* : This Trade is not open to all the Inhabitants of *Manila*, but is restrained to the Convents of *Manila*, principally to the Jesuits, being a Donation to support the Missions for the Propagation of the Catholick Faith. The Tonnage of each Ship is divided into a certain Number of Bales, all of the same Size ; and the Convents have a Right to embark such a Quantity of Goods on board the *Manila* Ship, as the Tonnage of their Bales amounts to.

THE Trade is limited by royal Edicts to a certain Value ; according to it should not exceed six hundred thousand Dollars, but it is known to amount three Million of Dollars frequently : It has been represented to the Court of *Spain*, that this Traffick is prejudicial to the Mother-Country, especially their Silk Manufacture ; and that the Linen sent from *Cadiz* is much injured in the Sale, since the *Chinese* Silks coming directly to *Acapulco*,

can

can be afforded considerably cheaper there, than any *European* Manufactures; and the Cottons from the Coast of *Coromandel*, make the *European* Linens a Drug in *Mexico*, and this *Manila* Trade renders both *Mexico* and *Peru* less dependent on *Spain*, and exhausts those Countries of Silver which would otherwise be brought to *Europe*, and center in *Spain*. Whereas now the only Advantage arising from the *Manila* Trade, is the enriching the *Jesuits*, and some private Persons in those remote Parts of the World; and Don *Joseph Patinbó*, the *Spanish* Minister, was so far convinced of this, that he had determined to abolish this Trade about the Year 1725, and would have permitted no *Indian* Merchandize to be brought into any of the *Spanish* Ports of *America*, except what were sent thither by the Register Ships from *Europe*; but the *Jesuits* found Means to divert the Court from putting that Project in Execution.

THE Trade between *Manila* and *Acapulco* is carried on by one (or two) annual Ships, which sail from *Manila* in *July*, and arrive at *Acapulco* about *Christmas*; and having landed the Cargo, return again towards *Manila* in *March* following, arriving there in *June*; and though there is often but one Ship freighted, yet there is always one ready for the Sea when the other arrives; therefore the Commerce at *Manila* is provided with three or four stout Ships, that if any Accident happens, the Trade may not be suspended, the largest of these Ships being little less than a first Rate Man of War, and the other are of twelve hundred Ton and upwards, and usually carry from three hundred to six hundred Hands, including Passengers, and have upwards of fifty Guns each, and these being all King's Ships, one of the Captains is stiled the General, and carries the Royal Standard at the Main-Top.

THE Ship sails from the Port of *Cabite*, the Port-Town to *Manila*, about the Middle of *July*, taking the Advantage of the westerly Monsoon, which sets in about that Time, and the Passage through the Channel called the *Bocadero* is so difficult, that it is sometimes the End of *August* before they get through it; when they are got clear of the Islands, they stand to the Northward of the

East; till they arrive in thirty Degrees, where they expect to meet with a westerly Wind to carry them over to *California*, in which Voyage they see no Land; not one Port or Road is yet found out between the *Philippines* and the Coast of *California*. The Ship never lets go her Anchor till she comes thither. This Voyage seldom takes up less than six Months, and as the Ship is deep loaded, and crowded with People, it is difficult to imagine how they can be supplied with a sufficient Stock of fresh Water for so many Months; and first it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* in the Pacifick Ocean do not keep their Water in Casks, but in earthen Jars, and taking in more Water than can be stowed between Decks, they hang the rest of the Jars all round the Outside of the Ship upon the Shrouds and Stays, which make a very odd Figure; but as it is impossible to take in Water for such a Number of People for three Months, much less for six, by any Contrivance whatever, they depend upon the Rains which they constantly meet with between thirty and forty Degrees of North Latitude, and catch enough of it to replenish their Jars, by preparing Troughs; into which the Rain runs from a Slope contrived with Mats for that Purpose; and when the Voyage has proved longer than usual, they have filled their Jars several Times: Nor has this Method ever failed them, and they seldom lose many Men in this tedious Passage, unless they happen to be afflicted with the Scurvy; and I find it is the Opinion of the Writer of Lord *Anson's* Voyage, that if they stood further North, the Voyage might be performed in half the Time the *Spaniards* perform it; and then he proceeds to give a further Account of the *Manila* Ship.

He says, that having stood North until she meets with a westerly Wind, and run about one hundred Degrees of Longitude from *Spirito Santo*, they see a Plant floating on the Sea, called Porra, a Kind of Sea Leek, when they believe themselves near *California*, and then stand to the South, and rely so much on the Certainty of it that all the Ship's Company sing *Te Deum* on the Occasion, imagining all the Difficulties and Dangers of the Passage to be over. They correct their Longitude on the Appearance of this Plant, before they come within Sight of
Land

Land. After this they fail Southward, without endeavouring to approach the Coast, till they draw near the southern Extremity of *California*, in order to arrive at *Cape St. Lucar*, where they get Intelligence whether there are any Enemies upon the Coast, and if not, the Ship proceeds to *Cape Corientes*, and then coasts it along to *Acapulco*, where she arrives about the Middle of *January* usually, sometimes a Month sooner, and at other Times a Month later.

THIS is the safest and most commodious Port on the Coast of *Mexico*, being a spacious Bason, surrounded by Mountains; but the Town is a most unhealthful Place, there being no Passage for the Air, and no fresh Water. It is deserted by the Inhabitants therefore, except at the Mart, when the Galeon is there, and then it is thronged with People, who come to purchase the Merchandize of the East. The Cargo being disposed of, the Silver and other Goods from *Mexico* are taken on board with the Passengers, amounting in all to about six hundred People. The Captain then leaving *Acapulco*, sails in the Latitude of thirteen or fourteen Degrees till he comes in Sight of *Guam*, one of the *Ladrone* Islands; and that he may not miss it in a dark Night, Orders are given for making Fires on the high Land all the Month of *June*; here the Galeon meets with Refreshments, but makes no Stay; the Road of *Guam* being a very dangerous Situation: She continues her Course therefore to *Cape Spiritu Santo* or *Samar*, one of the *Philippine* Islands, where Signals are again made to inform him if there be any Enemy upon the Coast; and if there be none, he sails to Port *Cabite*, the Port to the City of *Manila*, and the Station of the *Acapulco* Ship.

THE Bulk of the People of *Manila* are of *Chinese* or *Maylan* Extraction, and there are some Blacks. The *Spaniards*, tho' least in Number, have the Government in their Hands. The adjacent Country is full of fine Plantations, Farms, and Country-Houses of the principal Inhabitants. Upon the Mountains, in the Middle of the Country, the People live in Tents and Huts, under the spreading Trees. The Plains are overflowed in the rainy Season, the Houses built upon high Pillars, and the People

ple have no Communication but by Boats, during the Rains, which usually fall in *June, July, August* and *September*, and then are terrible Storms of Wind and Thunder. Earthquakes are frequent, the City of *Manila* has suffered several Times by them, and from the Volcano's which abound here, issue Torrents of Fire and melted Minerals. These are the Inconveniences we meet with, but the fair Season is usually exceeding pleasant.

THE Complexions of the several People who inhabit these Islands, are very different. The Blacks are as black as the *Caffres* of *Africa*, but differ from them in their Features and long Hair, and therefore are supposed to have been of *Indian* Extraction; and as they possess the mountainous and inaccessible Parts of the Country, it is conjectured, that they were the original Inhabitants, and driven up thither by succeeding Adventurers.

THE Descendants of the *Malays* (Inhabitants of *Malacca*) are very tawny, the *Chinese* not so dark, and the *Spaniards* are pretty near the Colour of the *Chinese*. There is also a Nation of painted People, called *Pintado's*, who colour their Skins like our Ancestors the *Picts*.

THE Natives are for the most Part of a moderate Stature, and their Features just, the *Spaniards* have taught them to cloath themselves except the Blacks, who only tie a Cloth about their Loins, and another about their Heads, and usually go bare Foot.

RICE and Fish are most eaten by those who live near the Sea-Coasts, and the Mountaineers eat the Flesh they take in Hunting, and the Fruits of the Earth, which grow spontaneously in great Plenty. Their Liquor is Water, which they usually drink warm as the *Chinese* do. They have also Palm Wine, and spirituous Liquors distilled from the Juice of the Sugar-Cane, Rice, &c. They bathe twice a Day in cold Water, either for Health or Diversion, or both: Plays are another Diversion, and they are entertained frequently with Dancing and mock Fights.

THESE Islands are extremely well situated for Trade; all the rich Merchandize of *India* is sent from hence to *America*, and the Treasures of *Mexico* and *Peru* are brought
hither

hither annually, by which Exchange, it is said, they make a Profit of four hundred *per Cent*.

FEW Countries enjoy a more fruitful Soil; the People in many Places live upon what the Earth produces spontaneously, and the Surface of the Ground is exceeding beautiful; the Trees are ever green, and seldom without Fruit.

THEIR neat Cattle run wild in the Mountains, and are hunted as well as Deer, wild Hogs and Goats. Wax is so plentiful, that they make no other Candles, and never burn Lamps. Their Bees are of several Kinds, some of them very large, and make their Combs in the Woods, producing such Quantities of Honey as would almost subsist the Natives.

MEDICINAL and sweet Gums issuing from the Bodies of Trees are Part of the Produce: Serpents of various Kinds are found in these Islands; but the Fathers who relate that some of them are so large, they will swallow a Stag, Horns and all, surely do not expect to be believed any more than when they relate, that the Leaves of Trees are converted into Insects; but the last of these Stories may proceed from a Mistake, for 'tis certain that some Insects deposit their Eggs upon the Leaves of Trees, which are hatched there, as is the Case of the Cochineal Fly; and they might imagine that those Insects proceeded from the Leaf. Among their Birds are Parrots and Cocatoes, Fowls with black Bones, and the Bird Tavan, which lays a Number of Eggs in Trenches in the Sand, and leaves them to hatch there. The Saligan fastens her Nest to some Rock, as a Martin does against a Wall, which dissolving into a Kind of Jelly in warm Water, is esteemed delicious Food.

THEIR Fruits are Mangoes, Plantains, Bananoes, Cocoas, Tamarinds, Cassia, and the Cacao or Chocolate Nut, which has been brought over from *Mexico*, Oranges, Lemons, and all Manner of tropical Fruits. The Cinamon and Nutmeg Tree have been planted here, but degenerate and are good for little.

A GREAT deal of good Timber and dying Woods grow in these Islands; and the Calamba, or Sweet-wood, a Kind of Cane, grows in the Mountains, which, if it

yields a Draught of Water, and is of great Service to the Natives.

FLOWERS and sweet Herbs grow wild here, but they do not cultivate them in their Gardens, and there are Abundance of Medicinal Herbs, as well as poisonous Plants, which frequently infect the Air, when they are in Blossom. The Camandag is so venomous, that with the Juice of it they poison their Darts and Arrows; there are also several Herbs which are Antidotes against Poison.

THE general Language spoke in these Islands is the *Malayan* Tongue, besides which every People have a Language peculiar to them. They write on Cocoa-Nut Leaves, with an Iron Stile; and Arts and Sciences have been introduced by the *Spaniards*, the Natives having nothing of this Kind to boast of before their Arrival.

ALL these Islands, except *Mindanao* and *Paragoa*, are under the Jurisdiction of a *Spanish* Viceroy, who has Governors under him in every other Island and Town of Consequence; and the like Courts are erected for the Trial of civil and criminal Causes, as in *Old Spain*.

THE Archbishop of *Manila*, the Bishops and their Commissaries determine ecclesiastical Causes as in *Europe*; but there lies an Appeal from them to the Pope's Delegate, who resides in one of the Islands. The Inquisition also have a Commissary here.

THE *Chinese* were formerly so numerous here, that they disputed the Authority of the *Spaniards* over them; forty thousand of them, it is computed, resided in and about the City of *Manila*; but the *Spaniards* compelled them to submit, and banished some Thousands of them, the rest were permitted to remain here to carry on their Manufactures; for they are almost the only Artificers. The *Spaniards* tolerate them in their idolatrous Worship, and suffer them to game, on paying to the Government 10,000 Crowns *per Annum*, for none are more addicted to Gaming than the *Chinese*, who will frequently hazard all they have in the World on the Chance of a Die. They are also much given to Sodomy, and did not imagine it to be a Crime, till the *Spaniards* punished them for it. Notwithstanding the *Spaniards* are represented as Sovereigns

reigns of these Islands, this must only be understood of the open Country and the Sea-Coasts, in which there may be three hundred thousand Souls; but these are not a tenth Part of the Inhabitants. The rest look upon themselves as a free People; every Mountain almost is possessed by a different Tribe, and make War upon one another; the *Spaniards* seldom intermeddling in their Quarrels: Their Arms are Bows and Arrows, and Lances or Spears, Broad Swords, and Tubes or Trunks, through which they blow poisoned Arrows, the slightest Wounds whereof are mortal, if immediate Remedies are not applied. They have Cane Shields also covered with a Buffalo's Hide, and a Head-Piece for defensive Arms.

THESE Savages, as the *Spaniards* call them, worship one supreme God, and their Ancestors, as the *Chinese* do, from whom most of them are descended; they worship also the Sun and Moon, and almost every thing they see, whether animate or inanimate, Groves, Rocks, Rivers, and one particular Tree, which they would esteem it Sacrilege to cut down, believing the Souls of some of their Friends may reside in it; and that in cutting the Tree they may wound a near Relation. Instead of Temples they have Caves, wherein they place their Idols, and sacrifice to them: Some beautiful young Virgin first wounds the Victim with a Spear, and then the Priests dispatch the Animal, and having dressed the Meat, it is eaten by the Company. Superstition prevails amongst them, they have their lucky and unlucky Days, and if certain Animals cross the Way when they are going upon any Business, they will return Home, and go out no more that Day.

THE Men purchase their Wives here as in *China*, and the Marriage is performed by a Priestess, who sacrifices some Animal on the Occasion; after which the Bride is led Home, and the Ceremony concludes with an Entertainment as in other Places. They marry in their own Tribe, and with their nearest Relations, except the first Degree; some of them are confined to one Wife, other Tribes allow a Plurality of Women, and Divorces for reasonable Causes on either Side. They bury their Dead as in *China*, and do not burn them.

THE next *Spanish* Island to that of *Manila* is *Samar* or *Philippina*, between which and *Manila* is a narrow Channel, called the Strait of *Manila*, the North-East Point whereof is called *Spirito Sancto*; the Island is near four hundred Miles in Circumference, the chief Town *Catbalagan*, governed by a *Spanish* Alcade. The Island of *Sebu*, which lies in ten Degrees South Latitude, is the Place where *Magellan* first set up the *Spanish* Colours; the chief Town, named *Nombre de Dios*, afterwards made a Bishop's See, has in it a Cathedral and several other Churches and Monasteries. The Island of *Negros* lies West of *Sebu*, and was so named because it is inhabited chiefly by Blacks. *Mindanao* lies the most southerly of any of the *Philippine* Islands, and is the largest of them except *Manila*, being near two hundred Miles in Length, and one hundred and fifty in Breadth. It is possessed by People of different Nations and different Religions; but the Mahometans, who are situate on the Sea-Coasts, are much the most numerous, whose Sovereign is stiled Sultan of *Mindanao*. Those who possess the Middle of the Island are called *Hillanoons*, and another Nation stiled *Solognes*, are situate on the North-West Coast. The Air of this Island is not so hot as might be expected, being refreshed frequently by the Sea Breezes, and the periodical Rains, which lay the Country under Water. The Winds blow from the East, from *October* to *May*, and then turn about and set westerly; next Month the Rains and Storms succeed: At first there are not more than two or three Showers a Day; they afterwards come oftener with violent Hurricanes and loud Thunder, and the Wind continues westerly until *November*, during which Time they have such Storms that Trees are blown up by the Roots, the Rivers are overflowed, and they do not see the Sun or Stars sometimes in a Week: About *August* the Air is very cool, the Rain and Wind are moderate in *September*, and in *October* the Wind blows from the East again, and it continues fair till *April* and sometimes *May*.

MINDANAO, the Capital City, lies on the South Side of the Island, in one hundred twenty-two Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and six Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, near the Mouth of a River, and about two Miles

Miles from the Sea; the Houses being built on Bamboo Pillars, sixteen or eighteen Feet above the Surface of the Ground, on Account of the annual Floods, when they have no Communication with one another but by Boats. The City is about a Mile in Length, built along the winding Bank of the River; the Sultan's Palace is supported by one hundred and eighty Trees, and has twenty Cannon mounted in the Front; and several of the Nobility have great Guns in or before their Houses. Large Ships cannot come up to the Town, there being scarce eleven Feet Water on the Bar, at the Entrance of the River. The Natives are held to be Men of a sprightly Genius, but very lazy and indolent, and will rather thieve than work; but none are more active when they find there is a Necessity for it; and there may be two Reasons for their lazy Disposition, one from the Heat of the Climate, and the other from the Tyranny of the Government, no Man being sure he shall enjoy what he acquires by his Industry. The *Mindanayans* are of a low Stature, and very slender, of dark, tawny Complexions, black Eyes and Hair, flat Faces, short Noses, wide Mouths, and black Teeth, which they take Abundance of Pains to dye of that Colour; and they wear the Nails of their Left Hands almost as long as their Fingers, scraping and dyeing them with Vermilion.

THE Men have a haughty Mien, and yet are said to be very complaisant to Foreigners, unless they are insulted, and then they seldom fail to resent the Affront, and destroy their Enemy by Poison or a Dagger, never hazarding their Persons in a Duel.

THEIR Habit is a linen Frock and Drawers, and a small Piece of linen Cloth tied about their Heads; but they go barefoot: The Complexion and Features of the Women are better than those of the Men; but they too much resemble the other Sex, and cannot be admired for their Beauty; they wear a Frock like the Men, and a Piece of Cloth round their Waists; the Sleeves of the Frock being large, and coming down to their Wrists. Their Hair tied up in a Roll at the hinder Parts of their Heads. As for the Men their Heads are shaved all but a Lock that is left in the Middle of the Crown, like other Mahometans;

Mahometans; the Mens Beards are very thin, being pulled up by the Roots with Tweezers. People of Figure are cloathed in Silk or fine Calico, the Women go bare-foot as well as the Men; Bracelets and Rings adorn their Arms and Fingers. The Women are not restrained from conversing with their Countrymen or Foreigners.

THE Food of People of Condition is Flesh, Fish and Fowl of all Kinds, except Hog's Fleſh, which the Mahometans never touch. The poorer Sort content themselves with Rice and Sago. Rice is the principal Part of the Meal with all of them: this they take up with their Hands, using neither Knives or Spoons; and the Meat, whatever it be, is boiled to Rags, that it may very easily be pulled to Pieces with their Fingers. They usually drink Water; but make a pretty strong Liquor with Plantains; they wash before and after every Meal, and bathe several Times a Day. Swimming is one of the chief Diversions of the Women, as well as the Men, to which they are used from their Infancy.

UPON joyful Occasions the Dancing Girls, as they are called, are sent for to divert the Company; but this Dancing consists only in skrewing themselves into lascivious Postures, and addressing their great Men with flattering Speeches. They have Plays and mock Fights also acted before them, and Hunting of wild Beasts is their principal rural Sport, in which their Women partake; but their Hunting is only driving the Deer and other Game into an Inclosure, from whence they cannot escape, and then shooting at them.

MINDANAO is a fruitful Soil, well watered with Rivers, and their Mountains afford excellent Timber. Of the Libby, or Sago Tree there are large Groves; the Sago is the Pith of a Tree, which the Natives eat instead of Bread, and is frequently brought over to *Europe*, being so grained, that it is sometimes taken for a Seed. They have no Corn but Rice. Plantains, Guava's, Mangoes, and all tropical Fruits abound here; Cloves and Nutmegs have been transplanted hither, and appear fair to the Eye, but degenerate, and the Fruit is good for nothing, 'tis said; but if these Plants were cultivated, possibly they might equal those of the Spice Islands, which

which it would be worth the while of our *East-India* Merchants to make a Trial of, as they are under a Necessity of purchasing these Spices of the *Dutch* at extravagant Rates.

HERE are no Beasts of Prey in this Island, but almost every other useful Animal, such as Horses, Cows, Buffaloes and Hogs, with Bunches over their Eyes; here are also Snakes, Scorpions, and other venomous Insects; and the feathered Kind are the same as in *Manila*. The *Malayan* Language is generally spoken here, and the Mahometans have the Alcoran and Books of Devotion in the *Arabick* Language. The liberal Arts do not flourish here, they are forced to employ the *Chinese* to keep their Accounts for them; nor have they so much as a Clock or a Watch in the Country, but beat upon Drums every three Hours, that People may know the Time of Day. The only working Trades almost are the Goldsmiths, Carpenters and Blacksmiths, who perform their Work very well with the Tools they have, for the Smiths have neither Vice or Anvil, nor the Carpenters any Saws; but when they have split their Planks plane them with the Axe or Adze. Their Diseases are Fluxes, Fevers, and the Small-pox; and some are afflicted with a Kind of Leprosy, or dry Scurf, which covers the Body, and itches intolerably.

THE Religion of the Sultan, and those who inhabit the Sea-Coasts is Mahometanism; and the Religion of the Inland People is Paganism, differing from that of the *Chinese*. It is sufficient to observe also, that in allowing a Plurality of Wives and Concubines, the Mahometans of this Island imitate those of *Turkey*, only they allow their Women greater Liberties; suffering them to converse freely with their Acquaintance or Strangers: but 'tis said they are so prejudiced against Swine's Flesh, that one of their great Men refused to wear a Pair of Shoes made him by a *European*, when he was informed that the Threads with which they were sewed were pointed with Hog's Bristles. They look upon themselves to be defiled, if they touch any Thing which belongs to a Hog; they durst not kill them, lest they should be defiled by the Touch of the Weapon they make use of, which occasions these Animals to multiply so fast, that the Island is over-run with them.

They

They are very glad to see the *Europeans* kill them; but must undergo several Ablutions or Washings, if they should happen to touch a Man that had eaten its Flesh.

THE Sultan of *Mindanao* is an absolute Prince, and his Throne hereditary; both the Persons and Purfes of his Subjects are in his Power, and if he knows any of them abound in Wealth, he borrows it of them. He has one great Minister, in whom he lodges the Administration of the Government, both civil and military, to whom both Natives and Foreigners must apply themselves for Liberty to Trade. Their Wars are chiefly with the Mountaineers, who inhabit the Middle of the Island, with whom they are very cautious of coming to a general Engagement; but when the Armies are pretty near, they begin to intrench and cannonade each other, and will remain in the same Camp some Months, sending out Parties to make Incursions into the Enemy's Country, and surprize defenceless Places. Their Arms are a Crice or short Dagger, and a Broad Sword, a Spear, and Bows and Arrows.

THE most considerable of the *Philippines* that have not been mentioned, are *Mindora*, South West of *Manila*; *Panay* and *Leyte*, which lie North of *Mindanao*, and the Island of *Paragoa*, which lies very near the North Part of *Borneo*, and is subject to one of the Princes of that Island.

THE *Ladrone* Islands, which *Magellan* touched at a little before he arrived at the *Philippines*, remain still to be described. *Magellan*, a Marine-Officer, who had served under *Albuquerque*, the great *Portuguese* General in the *East-Indies*, at the Reduction of the Cities of *Goa* and *Masacca*, being refused the trifling Addition to his Pay of, a Ducat a Month, or rather seeing himself slighted by his Superiors, deserted the Service of *Portugal* his native Country, and applied himself to the Court of *Spain*, representing to them, that there was a Probability of sailing to the *East-Indies* by the West, which would entitle the *Spaniards* to a Share in the fine Spices, if such a Way could be traced out. The Emperor *Charles V.* who was then upon the Throne of *Spain*, apprehending such a Voyage practicable, ordered five Ships to be equipt and mann'd with three hundred Men, of which he made *Magellan* Admiral, and the Fleet sailed from *Seville* on the 10th of *August*, 1519. He stood over to the Coast of *Brazil*,

Brazil in *South America*, and continued his Voyage to fifty-two Degrees of South Latitude, where he discovered a Strait which led from the Atlantick to the Pacifick Ocean, being about one hundred Leagues in Length, and in some Places scarce half a League broad, which he pass'd through, and arrived in the South-Sea or Pacifick Ocean on the 28th of *November*, 1520, which Straits have ever since been called by the Name of this Adventurer, the *Magellanick Straits*. From these Straits he sail'd three Months to the North-West, without Sight of Land, but the Wind generally fair, and on the 6th of *March* 1521, discovered the *Ladrone* Islands, to which he gave that Name on Account of the thievish Disposition of its Inhabitants; they are also denominated the *Marian* Islands. Here he landed, and took in some Refreshments, and setting Sail from thence, he arrived at *Sebu*, one of the *Philippine* Islands, where he set up the King of *Spain's* Standard; and being come thus far in Search of the Spice Islands, he had the Misfortune to be killed in a Skirmish with the Natives of the *Philippines*, before he arrived at the *Moluccas*, or Clove Islands. Thus much it was thought proper to premise upon entering on a Description of the *Ladrone* Islands.

THESE Islands are situate in the Pacifick Ocean, in one hundred and forty Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between twelve and twenty-eight Degrees of North Latitude. *Guam* or *Ignana*, the largest, is situate in thirteen Degrees twenty-one Minutes, North Latitude, seven thousand three hundred Miles West of *Cape Corientes* in *Mexico*, according to *Dampier*. The other Islands are, 2. *Sarpanta*. 3. *Bonavista* or *Tinian*. 4. *Sespara*. 5. *Anatan*. 6. *Sariganan*. 7. *Guagam*. 8. *Alamaguan*. 9. *Pagon*. 10. The Burning Mountain of *Griga*. 11. *Magna*. 12. *Patas*. 13. *Disconocida*; and, 14. *Malabrigo*. *Guam* is about twelve Leagues long, and four broad, lying North and South. It is pretty high champain Land, sloping down towards the Coast. The East Side, which is the highest, is fenced with steep Rocks, on which the Waves constantly beat, driven by the Trade Wind. The West Side is low Land, in which are several little sandy Bays divided by Rocks.

THE Natives are of a good Stature, have large Limbs, a tawny Complexion, black long Hair, small Eyes, and think

thick Lips, and are long visaged. They are sometimes afflicted with a Kind of Leprosy, otherwise the Country is healthful, especially in the dry Season. The Rains begin in *June*, and last till *October*, but are not violent.

THE Island produces Rice and most tropical Fruits, and one Sort, which *Dampier* has named *Bread Fruit*, grows upon a Tree like Apples, and at its full Bigness is as large as an ordinary Foot-ball; it has a hard thick Rind, and within a soft yellow Pulp, of a sweetest Taste; the Natives eat it instead of Bread, having first baked or roasted it in the Embers: It is in Season eight Months of the Year, and grows only in these Islands.

DAMPIER relates, that when he was there (about the Year 1700) there were not above one hundred *Indians* upon the Island, though he was informed there had been three or four hundred some Time before; and the Reason there was no more at that Time was, that most of them had burnt their Plantations, and fled to other Islands on their being used ill by the *Spaniards*.

THEIR swift sailing Sloops, or flying Proas, are the Admiration of all that see them; the Bottom of the Vessel, or the Keel, is of one Piece, made like a Canoe, twenty-eight Feet in Length, built sharp at both Ends, one Side of the Sloop flat, and the other rounding with a pretty large Belly; being four or five Feet broad, with a Mast in the Middle. They turn the flat Side to the Wind, and having a Head at each End, sail with either of them foremost, and have never any Occasion to tack. *Dampier* computed they would sail twenty-four Miles an Hour. The Tide never rises above two or three Feet at this Island.

THE Writer of Commodore *Anson's* Voyage relates, that they arrived at the Island of *Timian* or *Bonavista*, one of the *Ladron* Islands, which lies North of *Guam*, on the 27th of *August*, 1742, being situate in fifteen Degrees eight Minutes North Latitude, and one hundred and fourteen Degrees, fifty West of *Acapulco* in *America*. This Island is twelve Miles in Length, and six in Breadth, extending from the S. S. W. to N. N. E. The Soil is dry and sandy, and the Air healthful; the Land rises in gentle Slopes from the Shore to the Middle of the Island, interrupted

interrupted by Vallies of an easy Descent. The Vallies and gradual Swellings of the Ground, are beautifully diversified by the Encroachments of Woods and Lawns; and the Woods consisted of tall spreading Trees, *celebrated for their Aspet or their Fruit*; the Turf of the Lawns clean and uniform, composed of fine Trefoil, intermixed with a Variety of Flowers; the Woods, in many Places, open, free from Bushes, and Underwood, affording most elegant and entertaining Prospects.

THE Cattle on this Island were computed to amount to ten thousand (I suppose he means Horned Cattle) all perfectly white except their Ears; besides which there were Hogs and Poultry without Number. The Cattle and Fowls were so fat that the Men could run them down, and were under no Necessity of shooting them. The Flesh of both is exceeding good and easy of Digestion; as well as that of the wild Hogs, which they took with the Dogs, a Party of *Spaniards* had brought into the Island just before they arrived.

THE Fruits produced here are Cocoa Nuts, Guavaes, Limes, sweet and sour Oranges, and Cabbages growing at the Tops of Trees; here were also Water Melons, Dandalion, creeping Porcelain, Mint, Scurvy Grass and Sorrel, all which contributed to cure their Men of the Scurvy in a short Time, though they buried ten in a Day at their first Coming thither. They had Fish in great Plenty also; but some of their Men being surfeited with them, they did not eat much Fish. They met with great Plenty of wild Fowl here, which resorted to two little Lakes or Pieces of Water in the Middle of the Island; but it seems, there is not one Rivulet or running Stream in it, though they have excellent Well Water, which lies near the Surface: There are no People residing constantly on the Island of *Tinian*. It is a Plantation that serves to supply *Guam* (where the *Spaniards* have a Town and Fort) with all Manner of Provisions.

THE Writer of the Voyage above mentioned, observes that there are above twenty of these Islands, if we count all the little Rocks above Water, and that on the Island of *Guam*. The *Spaniards* have two Castles on the Sea Shore, viz. *St. Angelo*, lying near the Road, where the
Manila

Manila Ship usually anchors, which is but a trifling Fortrefs, mounting only five Guns, and the Castle of *St. Lewis*, standing four Leagues North-East of *St. Angelo*, designed to protect the Road where a small Vessel anchors that arrives here every other Year. Besides these Forts, there is a Battery of five Cannon on an Eminence near the Shore. The *Spaniards* have three Companies of Soldiers in the Island of *Guam*, about fifty Men in each; and the Natives are about four thousand Men: Sixty Years ago there were above fifty thousand of them upon the three Islands of *Guam*, *Rota*, and *Tinian*, and the rest were peopled in Proportion, but were destroyed by a Kind of Plague about Sixty Years ago. Those that were left after this Misfortune in the other Islands, were all removed to *Guam*, which made Malecontents of many of them; and the *Spaniards* are so apprehensive of a Revolt, that they won't suffer the Natives to have any Arms.

THE same Writer in speaking of the *Ladrone* Sloops, or flying Proas, says, they will sail twenty Miles an Hour; and that there is usually six or seven Men in one of them, two of them sitting in the Head and Stern, who steer alternately, and the others are employed in trimming the Sail.

It is difficult to reconcile these two Accounts. *Dampier* relates, that there were one hundred *Indians* upon the Island of *Guam*, and thirty or forty Soldiers; and that there never had been more than three or four hundred *Indians* there; while the Writer of *Commodore Anson's* Voyage assures us there were one hundred and fifty *Spanish* Soldiers, and four thousand *Indians* upon the Island of *Guam*, when he was at *Tinian*; and that there had been fifty thousand on the three Islands of *Guam*, *Rota* and *Tinian* sixty Years before, which was but a little before *Dampier* was there. The Description of the Island of *Tinian* also has so much the Air of a Romance, that it is enough to make a Man suspend his Belief of some other Parts of the Relation. I am apt to think that the *Spanish* Serjeant, who was made Prisoner by *Commodore Anson*, was the Person who gave the Writer that Account of the Numbers of *Indians* and Soldiers in the Island of *Guam*, to deter the *Commodore* from making a Descent there.

C H A P.

CHAP. II.

Contains a Description of the Spice Islands, viz. the Moluccas, Banda, Amboyna, and Ceylon, with those that cover them.

THE Islands of the *Moluccas* are situated in one hundred twenty-five Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between one Degree South, and two Degrees North Latitude; having the Island of *Gilolo* (near which Coast they lie) on the East, and the Island of *Celebes* or *Macassar* on the West, and the *Phillippine* Islands on the North, and are five in Number, viz. 1. *Bachian*. 2. *Machian*. 3. *Motyr*. 4. *Ternate*; and, 5. *Tydore*. *Bachian* is situate a very little South of the Equator, in which is a good Harbour, defended by a Fort, to which the *Dutch* have given the Name of *Barnevelt*; here is Plenty of Sago, and the tropical Fruits, and it formerly had Plantations of Cloves. *Machian* lies almost under the Equinoctial; the Land is very high, and of a pyramidal Form. It was once very fruitful in Cloves, and yielded the *Dutch* a greater Quantity than any of the other Islands; they have three Forts upon it, situate on inaccessible Rocks. *Motyr* resembles *Machian* in its mountainous Appearance, but is not so large, and lies about half a Degree North of the Equator. This Island also formerly produced a great Quantity of Cloves, and is defended by a Fort on the North. *Tydore* lies a little North of *Motyr*, and is something more than thirty Miles in Circumference. Here is a pretty good Harbour, but the Entrance of it hazardous, on Account of a Chain of Rocks which lies before it. The chief Town is *Tydore*, strongly situated, and well fortified by the *Dutch* after the Modern Way; but the chief of all the *Moluccas* is *Ternate*, which lies in one Degree of North Latitude, and is about twenty-four Miles in Circumference, the chief Towns being *Gamolamo*, *Malayo*, *Tallaco* and *Tycone*. The Fort of *Tallaco* is the first the *Dutch* built here, and that the strong Castle of *Orange*.

THE Inhabitants of the *Moluccas* live chiefly upon Sago (the Pith of a Tree) made into Cakes; there is neither Corn or Rice, and scarce any Meat but Goats Flesh in these Islands. Their Liquor is Water, and the Milk of the Cocoa Nut, or Toddy, drawn from the Body of that Tree: Besides the Cocoa and Sago, here are Almonds, Oranges, Lemons, and other tropical Fruits; but their greatest Riches were their Cloves, which they bartered with other Nations for every Thing else they wanted. This Tree is like the Bay Tree, the Cloves grow in Clusters at the End of the Branches, where they hang like Bunches of Grapes: They are first white, then green, afterwards red, and when full ripe they turn brown. After they are gathered and dried in the Sun, they are almost black; nothing will grow under the Branches of these Trees, and a Heap of Cloves laid in a Room, 'tis said, will suck up a Pail of Water, and thereby increase their Weight.

THE *Banda*, or Nutmeg Islands, are situate in the *Indian Ocean*, having the great Island of *Ceram* on the North, and are five in Number, *viz.*

1. *POOLOWAY* is a most delightful Country, the Nutmeg and other Fruit Trees being cut into pleasant Walks thro' the Island, and form one beautiful Garden; but here are neither Springs or Rivulets; it is the rainy Season, which lasts some Months every Year, that supplies them with Water, that is preserved in Cisterns. The *Dutch* have a Fort on the East Side of the Island, called the *Revenge*, being one of the strongest Fortresses in *India*.

2. *ROSINGEN* is one of the smallest of these Islands, and I do not find there are any Fortifications upon it.

3. *GENAPI* has the Castle of *Nero* for its Security, by which Name the Island is frequently called. This Fort stands on a Plain, close to the Water-side; but being commanded by a rising Ground, about a Musket-Shot Distance from it, the *Dutch* have built another strong Fort on that Eminence, and on the East of them have a numerous Garison.

4. *POLERON* has not much Spice upon it, but is fortified to prevent other People settling so near the Islands that have Fruit.

5. *BANDA*,

5. *BANDA*, or *Lantor*, is the biggest and most fruitful of all the Nutmeg Islands. The chief Town of *Lantor* is situate on the Top of an inaccessible Rock; and the *Dutch* have improved the Strength of the Situation, by the Fortifications they have erected about it. *Banda* is about sixty Miles round; none of the rest are near so much: Several of them are Vulcano's, which occasion frequent Earthquakes, and Eruptions of Fire, and melted Minerals that run down like Torrents, and do a great Deal of Mischief to the Plantations as well as the Buildings.

AMBOYNA is not one of the *Molucca* Islands; but is now the only Country that produces Cloves, the *Dutch* having rooted them up in the *Molucca* Islands, and planted them here, where they can best defend their Possession of that Fruit. This Island is situate in one hundred twenty-six Degrees of Eastern Longitude; and in three Degrees forty Minutes South Latitude; one hundred Miles North-West of the *Banda* Islands, and a little South of the Island of *Ceram*. Besides Cloves, it has plenty of most tropical Fruits and Fish, nor do they want good Water; but Flesh is very scarce here. Here is a quadrangular Fort, and other Works, in which the *Dutch* have a Garison of seven or eight hundred Men to defend the Approaches to this Island, which is esteemed the most profitable Government the *Hollanders* have in *India*, next to that of *Batavia*. They encourage no Plantations here but Cloves; on the contrary, they endeavour to render this, and the other Spice Islands as barren as possible, that they may depend entirely on their Masters; and that no Nation may find a Subsistence if they should invade them.

THE next Spice Island, and the only one where the true Cinnamon grows, is that of *Ceylon*, which I shall describe next, though it lies at a great Distance from the Spice Islands already mentioned, because it seems proper to give an Account of all the fine Spices together, and they are all subject to the *Dutch*.

CEYLON is situate between seventy-eight and eighty-two Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between six and ten Degrees of North Latitude, lying about forty Miles South-East of the Peninsula of the Hither *India*;

and is two hundred and fifty Miles long, and two hundred broad.

It is for the most Part a mountainous Country, covered with Wood; but there are several fruitful Plains and Vallies, well watered by Rivulets. The most remarkable Mountain, which stands on the South Side of *Conduda*, the Name of the Northern Division, is by the Natives called *Hamalet*, and by the *Europeans*, *Adam's Peak*, being of a piramidal Form, only on the Top is a little rocky Plain, with a Print of a Man's Foot on it, near two Foot long, to which the Natives come in Pilgrimage once a year to worship the Impression, having a Tradition that their God *Buddon* ascended to Heaven from hence, leaving this Print of his Foot, which the *Portuguese*, when they possessed this Island, called *Adam's Foot*, and the Mountain *Pico de Adam*. In this Mountain rise the principal Rivers, which run into the Sea in different Directions. The largest of these is the *Marvillagonga*, which runs North-East of the Cities of *Candy* and *Alatneur*, discharging itself into the Ocean at *Trincomale*. These Rivers run with such Rapidity, and are so full of Rocks, that none of them are navigable: The Rains, which happen when the Sun is vertical, encrease their Waters, and create Abundance of Torrents, which are not visible in the dry Season. The Air is for the most Part healthful, except near the Sea, and the North Part of the Island, where they have no Springs or Rivers; and if the Rain fails them, they are sure to be afflicted with Famine and Sicknefs. Their chief Towns are,

1. *CANDY*, the Capital of the Island, is an open Town, without Fortifications, and yet almost inaccessible, being surrounded by Rocks, and thick Woods, that are impassable, except through some Lanes, which are fenced with Gates of strong Thorns; and yet it appears, that the *Portuguese* made themselves Masters of *Candy*, and almost demolished it, obliging the King to retire to *Diglyneur*, five Miles South-East of *Candy*.

2. *COLUMBO*, Capital of the *Dutch* Settlements, is a great Port Town, has a good Harbour, defended by a Castle, and several Batteries of Guns. In this Castle resides the Governor, Merchants, Officers, and Soldiers belonging

belonging to the *East-India* Company; and four thousand Slaves have their Huts between the Castle and the Sea. The *Dutch* have two Hospitals here; one for the Sick and Wounded, and another for the Orphans: As the Boys grow up, they are entered into the Sea and Land Service; and the Girls are married at twelve or thirteen Years of Age, and they have a *Malabarian* School for teaching the *Indian* Language.

3. *NEGUMBO*, another Port Town, is situate about twenty-five Miles North of *Columbo*.

4. *CHILAO*, one of the best Harbours on the Coast, lies twenty Miles North of *Negumbo*.

5. *JAFFNAPATAN*, the Capital of the Province or *Jaffnapatan*, the Northern Division of this Island, is regularly fortified; for though there is no Cinnamon in this Part of the Island, the *Dutch* have fortified it all round, to prevent any other Nation sending Colonies hither.

6. *TRINCOMALE* is situate on the East Side of the Island, about eighty Miles South of *Punta Pedra*, the most Northerly Promontory on the Island:

7. *BATTACALAO* is another Fortrefs, fifty Miles South of the former.

THE Country Villages of the Natives are not divided into Streets, but every one encloses a Piece of Ground for himself, which he fences in, and twenty or thirty such Enclosures, lying pretty near together, are called a Town. The Houses consist but of two or three Rooms on the Ground Floor, built with clay Walls, and thatched; they are not so much as white-washed, unless they can obtain a Royal Licence for it. People of Figure have a large Square in the Middle of the House, and a Bank or Sopha about it, on which they sit cross-legged at their Meals, and when they receive Visits. A Mat, two or three Stools, some China-Ware, and Brazen Pots and Bowls, are the principal Part of their Furniture. The Master of the House only has a Bedstead covered with Mats to lie on, without a Feather-Bed, Tester, or Curtains: As for the Women and Children they lie on Mats, about a Fire, which burns all Night; their Covering is only the Cloths they wear about them in the Day-Time.

Their Fuel is Wood, which is so plentiful, that every body is at Liberty to cut what he pleases.

SOME of their Pagoda's, or Temples, are built with Stone, adorned with Images both on the Inside and Out; but are wretched dark Rooms, having no Windows in them, but lighted Lamps, which, with the Heat of the Country, renders these Places excessive hot and stifling: They sacrifice, and perform their Devotions therefore, in a Portico in the Front of the Temple: Besides the publick Pagoda's, every Man almost has a little Chapel in his Yard, not above two or three Foot square, in which he places the Idol he has most Veneration for, lighting Lamps, and strewing Flowers before it; and here he performs his Morning Devotions.

THE original Inhabitants, of whom the Body of the People consist at present, are called *Cinglases*; besides whom there are a great many *Moors*, *Malabars*, *Portuguese* and *Dutch* in the Island.

THE Natives are esteemed Men of good Parts and a pretty Address, grave, and of an even Temper, eat and sleep moderately, but lazy and indolent, which is the Case in most hot Countries. They are not given to Thieving, 'tis said, though addicted to Lying, which, to me, seems a Paradox; for a Man that will lie and deceive me, would not make much Scruple to cheat me. They are far from being jealous, or restraining their Women from taking innocent Freedoms.

THE Men are of a moderate Stature, and well proportioned, wear long Beards, and have good Features; they have long black Hair and black Eyes, dark Complexion, but not much as the Natives upon the neighbouring Continent of *India* are. They sit on Mats and Carpets on the Floor, but have a Stool or two for Strangers of Distinction; the Vulgar are prohibited to sit on Stools.

Young Men of Figure wear their Hair long and combed back, but in a more advanced Age, Caps in the Form of a Mitre are worn. Their Dress is a Waistcoat of Calico, and a Piece of the same wrapped about their Waists, in which they put their Knife and Trinkets, and have a Hanger by their Side, in a Silver Scabbard; besides which they walk with a Cane or Tuck, and a Boy carries

carries a Box with their Betel and Arek Nut after them, which they continually chew, as many do Tobacco amongst us.

THE Women wear their Hair long without any Covering, and make it shine with Cocoa-Nut Oil, though this Oil has a very strong Smell with it, perhaps the Natives esteem it a Perfume, for Custom will bring People to like any Thing almost. The Women are dressed in a Calico Waistcoat, which discovers their Shape, and they wrap a Piece of Calico about them, which falls below their Knees, and does the Service of a Petticoat, and these are longer or shorter, according to the Quality of the Person that wears it; they bore Holes in their Ears, in which they hang such a Weight of Jewels, or something that resembles them, that you may put a Half-Crown through the Hole of their Ears; they load their Necks also with weighty Necklaces, which fall upon their Breasts, containing a great many Strings or Rounds of Beads, &c. Bracelets adorn their Arms, a great Number of Rings their Fingers and Toes, and a Girdle of Silver Wire and Plate surrounds their Waists; when they go abroad they throw a Piece of striped Silk over their Heads, which resembles a Hood.

THE usual Salute here, is the *Salam*, that is, the carrying one or both Hands to their Heads according to the Quality of the Person they salute. The nearest Relations and Friends do not talk much when they visit, but sit silent great Part of the Time. Talkative People are in no Esteem.

THIS Island produces Rice, the common Food of the Inhabitants in all hot Countries: Of this they have several Kinds; one of them will be seven Months before it comes to Maturity, some six, and others five between the Seed-Time and Harvest; that which grows in Water yields most, but the other is better tasted. Of this the Natives sow but little, but are at great Expence in levelling their Rice Grounds, and banking them about that they may hold Water. If they can find Water on the Top of a Hill, they convey it down into the Squares they have made from the Bottom to the Top, which looks like Stairs at a Distance. In those Parts of the Island where they have

neither Springs or Rivers, as is the Case in the North, they preserve the Rain Water in vast Reservoirs, in the Time of the Monfons, and convey it gradually by Rills to their Fields and Gardens, until the Rice is almost ripe; and soon after, the Sun having exhaled the Water, and left the Fields dry, they begin the Harveft, treading out the Corn with Oxen and Buffaloes in the Field where it grew; they prepare a circular Piece of Ground of about twenty-five Foot Diameter, digging it a Foot and half deep, and the Women bringing in the Bundles or Sheaves of Rice on their Heads, the Cattle are driven round the Pit, till they have trampled it out of the Straw, and then a new Floor of Sheaves is laid; half a Dozen Oxen will tread out fifty Bushels of Rice in a Day. When they enter upon Buſineſs of this Nature, they always pay their Devotions to ſome Idol, and beg a Bleſſing on their Labours.

THERE are ſeveral other Kinds of Grain, which they make Bread of the latter End of the Year, when Rice is ſcarce, particularly the Coracan, which is a very ſmall Seed; this grows on a dry Soil, and will ripen in three or four Months. The Grain Tanna does not differ much from this, of which alſo they make Bread; but it is a very dry inſipid Food. Of the Seed Tolla they make an Oil, with which they anoint their Bodies; and here I can't but obſerve, that in every hot Country almoſt, the Natives anoint their Bodies either with Oil or Fat.

THE Fruits this Country yields are the Betel Nut, of which they uſe to export great Quantities to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, making a conſiderable Profit of it, till the *Dutch* ſhut up all their Ports, and reduced them to a State of Servitude.

THE Fruit Jack, of which they will ſometimes make a Meal, is of a round Form, and as big as a Peck Loaf, covered with a green, prickly Rind, in which are enſealed Kernels, as big as Cheſnuts, and in Colour and Taſte not unlike them; they gather this Fruit before it is ripe, and being boiled it eats like Cabbage; they eat them raw alſo, when they come to Maturity. Another Fruit called Jambo taſtes like an Apple, and is exceeding beautiful upon the Tree. They have Fruits alſo that reſemble the

European

European Plums and Cherries, and abound in Mangoes, Cocoa's, Pine Apples, Oranges, Citrons, and all Manner of tropical Fruits.

THEIR Kitchen Gardens are well stored with Roots, Plants, and Herbs, and the *Portuguese* and *Dutch* have introduced almost all Manner of *European* Plants that grow in our Kitchen Gardens. They abound also in Medicinal Herbs, which they know very well how to apply, and perform many notable Cures.

FLOWERS also of various Colours, and a delicious Scent, are found here, which grow spontaneously, but are never cultivated; however, the young People of both Sexes adorn their Hair with them. Among other Flowers, they have white and red Roses, as sweet and as beautiful as those of *Europe*, and a white Flower resembling *Jasmine*, which the King reserves for his own Use, no Subject being allowed to wear it. There is another Flower, which is observed to open about Four every Evening, and close again about Four in the Morning.

AMONG their Trees, the Tallipot is much taken Notice of, which grows very tall and strait, a Leaf of which will cover fifteen or twenty Men, and will fold up like a Fan; they wear a Piece of it on their Heads on a Journey, to screen them from the Sun: These Leaves are so tough, that they make their Way with them through the Bushes and Thickets without tearing them; they serve the Soldiers for Tents to lie under in the Field.

THERE is a Tree called *Reffule*, a Kind of Palm, as high as a Cocoa Tree, from whence they draw a pleasant Liquor, but not strong; an ordinary Tree yielding three or four Gallons a Day, and when boiled, makes a kind of brown Sugar, called *Jaggory*; the Wood of this Tree is black, hard and very heavy.

THE Tree of most inestimable Value to the *Dutch*, as it was formerly to the *Arabs* and the *Portuguese*, is the Cinnamon, which is found in no other Country, but grows commonly in the Woods, on the South-West Part of the Island. This Tree is of a middle Size, and has a Leaf of the Form of a Laurel Leaf. When the Leaves first appear, they are as red as Scarlet, and rubbed between the Fingers, smell like Cloves. It bears a Fruit like an Acorn,

Acorn, which neither smells nor tastes like the Bark; but if boiled in Water, an Oil swims on the Top, which smells sweetly, and is used as Ointment in several Distempers; but as they have great Plenty of it, they frequently burn it in their Lamps. The Tree having two Barks, they strip off the outside Bark, which is good for little, and then cut the inner Bark round the Tree with a Pruning-Knife; after which they cut it long-ways in little Slips, and after they have stripped these Pieces off, lay them in the Sun to dry, and they roll up in the Manner we see them brought over. The Body of the Tree is white, and serves for Building and other Uses, but has not the Smell or Taste the Bark has. When the Wind sets off the Island, the Cinnamon Groves perfume the Air for many Miles out at Sea, of which we have incontestable Evidence; probably, it is at that Time of Year, when the Cinnamon Trees are in Blossom.

THIS Island abounds in Elephants of a very large Size; they have also Oxen and Buffaloes, Deer, Hogs and Goats, and some wild Beasts, with Monkies in Abundance; but they had neither Horses, Asses, or Sheep, till they were imported by the *Europeans*, nor have they any Lions, or Wolves; and here is an Animal in all Respects like a Deer, but not bigger than a Hare: The wild Elephants feed upon the tender Twigs of Trees, Corn and Grass, as it is growing, and do the Husbandmen a great deal of Mischief, by trampling down his Corn, as well as eating it, and breaking and spoiling his Trees. The Monkies have black Faces, and white Beards, very much resembling old Men. Alligators, or Crocodiles, abound here, and Serpents of a monstrous Size; but the Story of the Snake that swallowed a Stag with the Horns, does not deserve much Credit, especially, as Mr. *Know*, who relates it, had it by Hearsay, and never met with one above the common Size, though he resided in the Island twenty Years.

THEY are almost over-run with Vermin and Insects, particularly with Ants, which eat every Thing they come at, except Iron and other Minerals as hard. Their Houses are pestered with them; if a Dish of Meat is set down, it is immediately full of Ants: In the Fields they raise

raise Hills six Feet high, of a pure white Clay, so hard, that a Pick-Ax will hardly demolish them; and of this Clay it is that the Priests frequently form their Idols: These Insects are not long-lived; when they are full grown they have Wings, and fly up in such Clouds, that they intercept the Light of the Sun; soon after which they fall down dead, and are eaten by Fowls, who devour them also at other Times, or there would be no living at Quiet for them.

THE common Sort of Bees build in hollow Trees or in Holes of the Rocks; but there are much larger Bees, of a more lively Colour, which form their Combs upon the high Boughs of Trees, and at the Season for taking them, the Country People go out in the Woods and take their Honey.

WHEN the Rains begin to fall, they are troubled with little red Leeches, which are not at first much bigger than a Hair: These run up Peoples Legs as they travel, for they all go bare-legged, and fixing themselves there, are not easily removed till the Blood runs about their Heels: The best Remedy against them, is to rub their Legs with Lemon and Salt. The Bite of these Creatures is so far from being attended with any ill Consequences, that this Bleeding is esteemed very wholesome.

THEIR Fowls are Geese, Ducks, Turkeys, Hens, Woodcocks, Partridges, Pigeons, Snipes, wild Peacocks, and Parakeets, and a beautiful Sparrow as white as Snow, all but his Head, which is black, and a Plume of Feathers standing upright upon it; the Tail is a Foot long.

THE Natives make savoury Soups of Flesh or Fish, which they eat with their Rice; People of Condition will have several Dishes at their Tables, but they consist chiefly of Rice, Soups, Herbs and Garden-Stuff; they eat but little Flesh or Fish: Their Meat is cut into little square Pieces, and two or three Ounces of it laid on the Side of their Dish by their Rice, and being seasoned very high, gives a Relish to the insipid Rice. They use neither Knives or Forks, but have Ladles and Spoons, made of the Cocoa-Nut Shell; their Plates are of Brass or China Ware: The poor People have a broad Leaf instead of a Plate, and sometimes several Leaves sewed together with Bents,

Bents, where broad ones are not to be had. It is amazing to see what vast Quantities of Rice an *Indian* will eat at a Meal, and it is no doubt much wholesomer Food than Meat in hot Countries. Water is their usual Drink, which they pour out of a Cruise or Bottle, holding it more than a Foot above their Head: Some of them will swallow near a Quart of Water in this Manner without gulping once. There is neither Wine or Beer made in this Country; but Arrack or Spirits they draw from Rice, and several other Ingredients.

NEITHER the People in high or low Life eat with their Wives. The Man sits down by himself and his Women wait upon him, and when he has done the Women and Children are allowed to eat. I should have taken Notice that they never eat Beef, the Bull and Cow being Objects of Adoration here.

THERE are no Wheel Carriages in this mountainous and woody Country, unless what belong to the *Dutch*, near the Sea-Coast. The Baggage is usually carried upon the Backs of their Slaves.

THE chief Manufacture here is the Calico, or Cotton Cloths, which they spin and weave; they make also Bras, Copper, and Earthen Vessels, Swords, Knives, and working Tools used by Smiths, Carpenters, and Husbandmen; Goldsmiths Work, Painting and Carving also is performed tolerably well, and they now make pretty good Fire-Arms.

THEIR foreign Trade may be traced up to the earliest Ages. They supplied *Persia*, *Arabia*, *Egypt* and *Ethiopia*, with their Spices before *Jacob* went down into *Egypt*, which is above three thousand Years since, as appears by the History of *Joseph's* being sold to the *Ishmaelite* Merchants, who were travelling with a Caravan cross *Arabia* to *Egypt*, with the Spices of *India*, of which the Cinnamon of *Ceylon*, that lies near the Coast of *Hither India*, was, no doubt, the chief: So profitable was this Branch of Trade, that all the Nations above-mentioned sent Colonies hither, whose Descendants were planted here when the *Portuguese* first visited these Coasts, as will appear when the History of the Spice Islands is further considered.

THE *Portuguese* Language is spoken upon the Coast; the Natives, however, have a Language of their own, which comes nearest to that spoken on the *Malabar* Coast; and there is a dead Language only spoke by their Bramins or Priests, in which the Books relating to their Religion are written.

THEY write upon the Leaves of the Talipot cut into Pieces of three Fingers broad and two Foot long, with a Steel Stile or Bodkin. They have long studied Astronomy, which they learnt from the *Arabian* Colonies, which settled on the Coasts, and foretel Eclipses pretty exactly. They are great Pretenders also to Astrology, and by the Planets calculate Nativities, foretel future Events, and direct People, when will be the most lucky Days to enter upon any Affair of Moment, or to begin a Journey; and they find Men weak enough to be imposed upon, if they have been never so often disappointed. Their Year is divided into three hundred sixty-five Days, and every Day into thirty Pays or Parts, and their Night into as many; and they have a little Copper Dish, with a Hole at the Bottom of it, which being put empty into a Tub of Water, is filled during one of their Pays, when it sinks, and it is put into the Water again to measure another Pay; for they have neither Sun-Dials nor Clocks.

As to Physick, every one almost understands the common Remedies, applying Herbs or Roots, according to the Nature of the Complaint, and they have an Herb which cures the Bite of a Snake; but there are neither Physicians or Surgeons amongst them, who make a Profession of this Science. As they abound in poisonous Herbs and Plants, so they have others that are Antidotes against them. Their Diseases are chiefly Fevers, Fluxes, and the Small-Pox.

THE Natives worship God, but make no Image of him; however they have Idols, which are Representatives of some great Men that formerly lived upon Earth, and are now, they imagine, Mediators for them to the supreme God in Heaven. The Chief of these Demi-Gods is *Buddou*, who, according to their Tradition, originally came from Heaven to procure the Happiness of Men, and ascended thither again from *Adam's Mountain* already mentioned,

signed, leaving the Impression of his Foot on the Rock: They worship also the Sun and Moon, and other Planets: Every Town has its tutelary Demon, and every Family their household God besides, to whom they build Chapels in their Courts, sacrifice and pay their Devotions every Morning; but to the supreme God they erect no Temples or Altars. There are three Classes of Idols, and as many Orders of Priests, who have their several Temples, and to which Estates in Lands are appropriated. The God *Buddou*, already mentioned, is the chief of these subordinate Deities, and his Priests in the greatest Esteem, being all of the highest Class or Tribe in the Nation. They wear a yellow Velt and Mantle, their Heads shaved, and their Beards grow to a great Length. Their Disciples fall down on their Faces before them; and they have a Stool to sit on wherever they visit, which is an Honour only shewn to their Princes and Magistrates.

THESE Priests have no Commerce with Women, drink no strong Liquor, and eat only one Meal a Day, but are debarred from no Flesh except Beef. They are styled Sons of the God *Buddou*, and can't be called to Account by the Temporal Power, whatever Crimes they commit.

THERE is a second Order of Priests that officiate in the Temples of other Idols; these are allowed to profess any secular Employment, and are not distinguished from the Laity by their Habit, but have, however, a certain Revenue. Every Morning and Evening they attend the Service of their Temples, and when the People sacrifice Rice and Fruits, the Priest presents them before the Idol, and then delivers them to the Singing-Men and Women, and other Servants that belong to the Temple, and to the Poor that come to perform their Devotions, who eat the Provision: No Flesh is ever sacrificed to the Idols of this Class.

THE third Order of Priests have no Revenues, but build Temples for themselves, without any Election or Consecration, and beg Money to maintain them. *Wednesdays* and *Saturdays* are the Times they resort to the Temples; and at the New and Full Moon they offer Sacrifices to the God *Buddou*, and on New-Year's Day, in the Month of

March,

March, they offer a solemn Sacrifice to him on a high Mountain, or under a spreading Tree, which is esteemed sacred. This Tree, according to Tradition, like the Chapel of *Loretto*, has travelled through several Countries, and passing the Sea, at length planted itself in this Island, under whose Branches the God *Buddou* used to repose himself; for the Truth whereof I will not answer, but certain it is, near this Place are the Remains of Temples hewn out of the Rocks, of such Magnitude and Workmanship, that the Natives believe they must have been erected by a certain Race of Giants they annually commemorate.

THE Figures of many of their Idols represent Creatures that never had a Being, partly human, and partly Fish, or some Quadruped; but those in the *Buddou's* Temples, are only the Images of Men sitting cross-legged in yellow Vests, resembling the Habits of their Priests. Before the Eyes of the Image are made it is not accounted sacred, but thrown about like a common Block; but when the Eyes are finished, it is esteemed complete, and becomes the Object of Adoration.

AT the New Moon in *July*, annually, begins a solemn Festival, which lasts till the Full Moon, when forty or fifty Elephants, magnificently accoutered, march through the principal Streets of their Cities, followed by People resembling Giants, in Memory of that Race of Giants above-mentioned, who once inhabited the Earth, according to their Traditions; and after these come the Musick and Dancing Girls, dedicated to their Temples. Then follows one of the Priests of the God *Buddou*, mounted on an Elephant of an extraordinary Size, and covered with white Cloth, and the richest Trappings, adorned with Colours, Streamers and Flowers. The Priest representing the *Allout neur Dio*, or the supreme God, another Priest holding an Umbrello over his Head, and on the Right and Left are two Priests of the inferior Deities, mounted upon Elephants. These are followed by Hundreds of Ladies of the first Quality with lighted Lamps; and the Generals at the Head of their Troops, with the Courtiers and Officers of State, close the Procession, making the Tour of the City once in the Day-Time, and once in the Night; and this is repeated every twenty-four Hours, from the
New

New Moon to the Full, the Intervals being spent in Feasting, Singing, and Dancing, none following their Trades or Business during the Solemnity.

THERE are great Numbers of *Portuguese* Christians in the Island, descended from the Profelytes made by the Popish Missionaries, while the *Portuguese* possessed the Island; there are also some Churches, which the *Portuguese* built near the Sea-Coasts, but none in the upland Country.

WHEN a Contract has been made by the Parents of the young Couple designed to be married, the intended Bridegroom sends his Spouse a Piece of Callico and a flowered Linen Waitcoat, and a Time is appointed for the Wedding, or rather the Husband's bringing Home his Wife, and he goes the Evening before with his Friends to her Father's, where he entertains the Bride with Sweetmeats, and the best Provision he can get.

AFTER Supper they sleep in the same Room, and having dined at his Wife's Father's, the next Day a grand Procession begins to the Bridegroom's House; but nothing is said of the Priest's repeating the Words of the Contract, or even blessing the Marriage; one Reason whereof may be, that it is but a temporal Agreement. The Parties, after they have tried one another, are at Liberty to part, and take another Spouse; and this they will do several Times before they fix upon one they think proper to spend their Lives with; but as the Father gives a Portion with his Daughter, either in Money, Cattle, or Slaves, these, or an Equivalent must be returned with the Woman, and though a Man is allowed but one Wife at a Time, a Women frequently marries or cohabits with two Men, and these sometimes Brothers, and keep House together, which I take to be no more than some frugal Gentlemen do in *Europe*, i. e. keep one Mistress between them: It is said also, that Parents seldom refuse to let a young Fellow lie with their Daughter, in Hopes of his marrying her, if it is likely to prove an advantageous Match.

WHERE a Man of Quality visits his Inferior, it is frequent for the Man of the House, after Supper, to compliment his Guest, with his Wife or his Daughter to sleep with him, though it would be esteemed a Crime

offer either to one that is his Inferior; and the taking a Man's Wife against his Consent, is so great an Offence, that the injured Husband is justified if he kills them both, when he takes them together.

THE Women here make no Use of Midwives, and think it no Crime to procure Abortion; when a Child is born, a pretended Astrologer is sent for and consulted, whether it is like to prove fortunate, and if he is of Opinion it will not, after he has consulted the Stars, they expose the Child or drown it, or else give it to some Neighbour; for though it would be unhappy with the Parents, it may prove lucky to another, they pretend. When the Children grow up, they are called by the Name of the Family, or the Place where they reside. During their Minority the Parents call them by what Name they please, which they lose when they are grown up.

WHEN a Person dies, the Corpse is burnt; it is carried on an open Bier to the Top of some neighbouring Hill, and laid upon the Wood about three Foot from the Ground, then more Wood is heaped upon the Body to a considerable Height; and if it be a Person of Distinction, an Arch is erected over the Pile, adorned with Flags and Streamers, and the Whole consumed in the Flames; the Ashes being afterwards swept together, and surrounded by a Wall, some Days after, a Priest is sent for to the House of the Deceased, and a melancholy Dirge is sung, the Women of the Family letting loose their Hair, crying and bewailing their Loss, which is repeated every Morning and Evening for several Days, the Male Relations standing by sighing and groaning, as if they would break their Hearts; but it is no strange Thing, however, to see the Wife married again in a very little Time, the Laws not requiring the Woman to be burnt with her Husband, as on the neighbouring Continent of *India*. On the contrary, 'tis said, that the Government of *Ceylon* exempts Widows from all Manner of Taxes.

THE Islands of *Celebes* or *Macassar*, *Gilolo*, *Ceram*, *Bowro*, and *Bouton*, lie near the *Molucca* and *Bonda* Islands, and though they produce none of the fine Spices, are of great Consequence to the *Dutch*, who have subdued and fortified

fied them in order to defend their Possession of the Spice Islands.

CELEBES, or *Macassar*, lies under the Equinoctial, and on both Sides of it, being situate between one hundred sixteen and one hundred twenty-four Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between two Degrees North, and six Degrees South Latitude, and is five-hundred Miles long, and for the most Part two hundred Miles broad. The Air is hot and moist, the rainy Season lasting the greatest Part of the Year; but then the Mornings usually are fair. During the Rains there are innumerable Torrents tumbling from the Hills. At other Times there is but one navigable River, running from North to South, and discharging itself into the Bay of *Macassar*, running under the Walls of that City.

MACASSAR is a large Port Town, the Capital of the Island, situate on the South-West Part of it, consisting of spacious Streets, planted with Ever-greens. The Palaces and Mosques are built with Stone, the rest of Wood. It contained upwards of one hundred thousand Men, able to bear Arms, formerly; but since the *Dutch* have subdued the Island, and monopolized the Trade, there are not half that Number here; the *Dutch* have a strong Fort garisoned with seven or eight hundred Men.

JAMPADAN is another Port Town, about fifteen Miles South of *Macassar*, one of the best Harbours in *India*, and the first Town the *Dutch* took from the Natives; here they sunk or seized all the *Portuguese* Fleet when they were in full Peace with that Nation. The rest of the Towns and Villages lying in the flat Country near the Sea or the Mouths of Rivers, are for the most Part built with Wood or Cane, and stand upon high Pillars on account of the annual Flood, when they have a Communication with one another only by Boats.

THE Natives are of a middle Stature, and of a deep Copper Colour, their Features not very engaging, having very high Cheek Bones, flat Noses, and black Teeth, which are not natural, but a great deal of Pains is taken to make them so; and they anoint themselves with Oil from their Infancy. Their shining black Hair they tie up in a Roll,
and

stead of the Reins of a Bridle, and a Piece of Wood for a Bit. They ride also upon Oxen and Buffaloes.

BAMBOUS of a great Length and Thickness, and other Canes grow here; also Cotton Trees, Ebony, Calambac, Sanders, and other dying Woods and Timber, proper for building Houses, Ships, and Boats. The Pepper Plant also abounds here, as well as Rice, Sugar, Oranges, and the tropical Fruits; but of all their Plants, those that afford Opium are most cultivated; for of this they eat great Quantities, and no Country abounds more with poisonous Plants and Herbs, which afford a Liqueur, into which they dip their Darts and Daggers.

THE Natives don't scruple eating any Flesh but Pork, this no Mahometan will touch; but their Food is chiefly Rice, Fish, Herbs, Fruits and Roots; Flesh they eat but little of. Their chief Meal is in the Evening, they chew Betel and Arek, or smoak Tobacco mixed with Opium most Part of the Day. Their Liqueur is Tea, Coffee, Sherbet, or Chocolate, and they have Palm Wine, Arrack, or Spirits, which they sometimes indulge in, though 'tis prohibited by their Religion. They loil upon Carpets at their Meals, and eat off of Dishes made of China, Wood, Silver or Copper, which are set before them on little low lacquered Tables; and take up the Rice with their Hands instead of Spoons, which they seem not to know the Use of.

Young Gentlemen here are taught to ride, to shoot, and handle the Crice and Scymetar; and particularly they are instructed how to blow their little poisoned Darts through a Tube, or hollow Cane, about six Foot in Length; with these they engage their Enemies, and if they make the least Wound with these Darts, it is said to be mortal. Though these Weapons would not be much dreaded among People that are well cloathed; yet as the Natives engage naked, their Skins are easily penetrated, and the Poison operates so speedily, that it is difficult curing them. It is related of an *Englishman* who had killed one of the Natives, and was delivered up to the Officers of Justice to execute, that the King shot such a poisoned Dart as has been mentioned, and wounded one of his Toes, having agreed, that if the *Europeans* could save him

him afterwards, he should live; and though two Surgeons stood by and immediately cut off the Toe of the Criminal, he expired immediately after.

THE King of *Macassar* was an absolute Prince before the *Dutch* subdued him, and usurped his Throne. These Monarchs were succeeded by their next Brothers, and not by their Sons: The Forces of this Kingdom were a well regulated Militia; never chargeable to the Government, but when they were called out to actual Service. The Soldier carries a light Shield made of Cane, and covered with a Buffaloe's Hide, and he has a Sword, Dagger, and Sampit (the Tube above mentioned) which serves instead of a Spear, being armed with a Dagger like a Bayonet at the End of it, so that when he has used it as a missive Weapon, and discharged the poison'd Dart thro' it, he stands firm, as a Pike-Man, ready to defend himself, or advance towards the Enemy.

There are no written Laws in this Country, but what are to be met with in the Alcoran. The Judges, or Cadis, who are Mahometan Priests, interpret them, and every Man pleads his own Cause; there are no Lawyers amongst them, and in several Cases, private Men are allowed to do themselves Justice; as in Adultery, Robbery and Murder of a Relation, where the Offender is taken in the Fact, they don't wait for the Judge's Sentence.

COTTON Linen is their principal Manufacture. The Women are taught to spin and weave, and make their own and their Husbands Cloaths, as well as their Childrens. The Men make their Arms, Utensils, and Instruments of Husbandry; there are no particular Trades that work for others, but every Family provide themselves with what they want, and they will imitate any thing they see very exactly.

MACASSAR had formerly a very great foreign Trade, supplying the *Molucca's* and *Banda* with Rice and other Provisions, and taking their Nutmegs and Cloves in Return, which they conveyed to *India*, *Persia*, *Arabia* and *Egypt*, and were by them distributed among the western Nations of *Europe* and *Africa*, before the Navigation round the *Cape of Good Hope* was discovered.

Their common Language is the *Malayan* Tongue, but the *Alcoran* and religious Books are written in *Arabic*; for the Religion of this People is Mahometanism.

The Island of *Gilolo* is situate between one hundred and twenty-five and one hundred and twenty-eight Degrees of East Longitude, and between three North and two South Latitude; the Islands of *Molucca's* lying very near the West Coast of this Island, for which Reason it has been strongly fortified by the *Dutch*, to prevent any other Nation approaching them, though there are no Spices growing here. The chief Town is *Batochina*, the Name by which the Island is frequently called, situate on a Bay of the Sea, on the South-West Part of the Island. The Climate, Soil, Produce, and Inhabitants differing very little from those of *Celebes*, need no particular Description here.

CERAM is situate between one hundred and twenty-six and one hundred and twenty-nine Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and in a Manner covers the Islands of *Amboyna* and *Banda*, where Cloves and Nutmegs are produced; which was the Reason the *Dutch* fortified this as well as *Gilolo*. The first Adventurers that visited this Island and those in the Neighbourhood of it, give out that they were Canibals, though the only Reason given for it was, that they retaliated the Cruelties that had been exercised on them by the *Portuguese* and *Dutch*, who came to take their Country away and enslave them, and particularly that they roasted some of the Prisoners, that fell into their Hands, alive. There does not appear to have been any Witness that ever saw them devouring human Flesh; but this was given out by those Invaders, for the same Reason the *Spaniards* accused the *Americans* of the same Crime, namely, to excuse their own Cruelty and Injustice.

BOURO and *Bouton* are two Islands that lie between *Macassar* and *Ceram*, which the *Dutch* also have fortified, in order to defend the Avenues to the Spice Islands.

It is now between three thousand and four thousand Years since this Part of the World hath been acquainted with the Spices of *India*, and perhaps longer. The first Time we read of Spices being brought from thence was, when *Joseph* was sold to the *Ismaelites*, who were travelling

ling with a Caravan of Camels cross *Arabia* to *Egypt* with Spices, among other Merchandize of the East. This was one thousand seven hundred and five Years before the Birth of Christ, to which if we add one thousand seven hundred and fifty-four Years since the Beginning of the Christian *Æra*, the whole makes three thousand four hundred and fifty-nine Years, since *Joseph* was carried into *Egypt*; and though this be the first Time we read of this Traffick between *India* and *Egypt*, it is very probable the Trade was begun several Years before, it not being mentioned as a Trade then newly begun: And yet the Islands where the fine Spices grow were never visited, or even known to the *Europeans*, until the *Portuguese* discovered the Way to *India* by the *Cape of Good Hope*, about two hundred and fifty Years ago.

THE Necessaries of Life were common to all the World from the Beginning, but the fine Spices are only to be had in some small Islands in the *Indian Seas*; and tho' Spices may be reckoned among the Number of Superfluities, nothing has been more sought after on Account of their giving an agreeable Relish to our Food. The searching after them first promoted Commerce and Navigation, and brought one Part of the World acquainted with the other. This Traffick seems first to have been carried on, for the most Part, by Land, though it was necessary to pass some Straits and Arms of the Sea, before this Merchandize could be loaded on the Backs of Camels. The Ancients must have had some Boats and Vessels in order to go over and people these Islands; and in the like Vessels they, no doubt, carried their Produce to the adjacent Continent, and trafficked with their Mother-Country, in which Voyages they were seldom out of Sight of Land, and if they were at any Time, the Sun and the northern Stars were a Direction for them; they seldom went to Sea but in the fair Season, when the Heavens were clear, and when the Monsoons or periodical Winds sat right for them, as they always do six Months in the Year, in the Latitude of the Spice Islands.

THE Cloves and Nutmegs of the *Molucca's* and *Banda* were probably transported also by the Natives to the Island of *Celebes*, or *Macassar*, which lies near them,

from whence they were transported to *Borneo*; and the Inhabitants of *Borneo* might carry them to *Malacca* on the Continent of *India*, which was but a little Distance from thence, and the greatest Mart for Spices in that Part of the World; from *Malacca* they might coast it along to *Bengal*, from whence the Caravans of Camels might take this Merchandize, and carry it cross the *Hither India*, *Persia* and *Arabia*, which is contiguous to *Egypt*, and it might be transported over the narrow Strait of *Babelmandel* into *Abyssinia*, or the *Upper Ethiopia*; for we find the Queen of *Sheba*, the Sovereign of *Ethiopia*, made a Present of the fine Spices to King *Solomon*, which she might have also of the *Phœnician* Merchants, who must sail close to her Coasts, in their Voyages to and from *India*: Or she might have Colonies in *India* herself, as I am most inclined to believe she had, because the Natives of *Ethiopia*, and those of *India* are alike both in their Features and Complexion; and this *Ethiopia* lies more convenient for trading with *India* than the Country of the *Phœnicians*. It is nearer to *India* also by the whole Length of the *Red-Sea*, which is not less than one thousand two hundred Miles, and the most difficult Part of the Navigation to *India*.

As Cinnamon grows only in the Island of *Ceylon* very near the *Hither India*, there was no Difficulty in carrying that over to the Continent in the smallest Vessels, and then there are no Seas to cross between that and *Egypt*; and here it seems very evident that *India* and the remotest Islands in those Seas were planted very early, for it was not much above five hundred Years after the Flood, before we hear of the fine Spices being brought through *Arabia* from these Islands.

THE *Phœnicians*, the first great maritime Power, who were seated in *Palestine*, on the Shores of the *Levant*, and were Masters also of some Ports on the *Red-Sea*; observing what a Demand there was for these Spices in the West, ventured to send their Fleets as far as *India*, and brought the Spices and other rich Merchandize from thence all the Way by Water-Carriage; but it is probable they went no farther for them than *Malacca*, which was very early, the great Mart for those Goods: And indeed, this might well take up three Years, as they were forced to coast it
along,

along, and they could only fail fix Months in the Year, when the Monſon was favourable for them. It is evident, that the *Phanicians* had uſed this Voyage before *Solomon's* Time; for it is ſaid, that *Solomon* deſired the King of *Tyre* (the Capital of *Phanicia*) to ſend his Mariners to aſſiſt his People in the Voyage to *India*, *becauſe they had Knowledge of that Sea.*

THE Navigation to *India* being better known ſome Time after to all the Nations bordering on the *Red-Sea*, viz. the *Egyptians*, *Ethiopians* and *Arabians*, they ſent Colonies to the Continent of *India* and the Iſlands, whoſe Poſterity remained there, and continued to traffick with the Countries from whence their Anceſtors came, even to our Time. The *Portugueſe* found them poſſeſſed of moſt of the Coaſts both of the Continent and Iſlands of *India*, when they arrived there; which brings me to give an Abſtract of the moſt remarkable Voyages and Expeditions to the Spice Iſlands, during the two laſt Centuries.

C H A P. III.

The firſt Voyage of the Portugueſe to India, in the Year One thouſand four hundred and ninety-eight.

IN the Reign of Don *Emanuel*, King of *Portugal*, *Vaſco de Gama*, his Admiral paſſed the *Cape of Good Hope*, and arrived at *Calicut* in *India*, on the 19th of *May*, 1498, where he was oppoſed by the *Moors* or *Arabians* and *Egyptians*, who at that Time monopolized the Trade of that Coaſt; however, upon his Return to *Europe*, the *Portugueſe* equipped a more conſiderable Fleet, and made themſelves Maſters of ſeveral Places on the Continent of *India*. And in one thouſand five hundred and eleven, *Albuquerque*, the *Portugueſe* General, took the Cities of *Goa* and *Malacca*, after which he ſent *Antonius Ambreus* in Search of the Spice Iſlands, who coming to the *Molucca's*, found the two Kings of *Ternate* and *Tydore* engaged in a War; moſt of the adjacent Iſlands being in an Alliance with the one or the other of them, and both of them courting the Friendſhip of the *Portugueſe*, ſuffered them to build
Forts

Ports in their Territories, and establish themselves there, as they did soon after at the *Banda* Islands, monopolizing the Trade both of Cloves and Nutmegs, the Produce of those Countries. They enjoyed the sole Traffick to the *Molucca's* and *Banda*, until the Year 1520, when *Magellan*, being employed by the *Spaniards* to discover a Way to *India*, by the West, passed the Straits in *South America*, which go by his Name, and arrived at the *Philippines*, where happening to be killed, *John Sebastian del Cano* took the Command upon him, and settled a Factory at the Clove Island of *Tydore*, and left one of his Ships there, while he returned in another to *Spain*, by the Way of the *Cape of Good Hope*, being the first Commander that ever surrounded the Globe; and as by Agreement between the two Nations, confirmed by the Pope, all the Discoveries Westward were allotted to *Spain*, as all the Eastern Discoveries were to *Portugal*, the *Spaniards* looked upon themselves now to be entitled to a Share in the Spice Trade; however, the *Portuguese* demolished the *Spanish* Factory upon the Island of *Tydore*, and made Prize of the Ship that was left there; which occasioning a Quarrel between the two Nations, the *Portuguese* at length agreed to lend the *Spaniards*, or rather *Charles V.* 450,000 Ducats to relinquish their Pretensions, which Sum was never repaid, and the *Portuguese* had the sole Trade to the Spice Islands afterwards, until *Sir Francis Drake* passed the Straits of *Magellan*, and arrived at the Island of *Ternate* on the 14th of *November*, 1579, when the King of *Ternate*, weary of the Tyranny of the *Portuguese*, desired his Protection, and acknowledged the Queen of *England* his Sovereign, and as a Testimony thereof, sent her Majesty his Signet; and the Admiral having promised to return again with a greater Force, and taken in a Loading of Cloves, set Sail for *England*, by the Way of the *Cape of Good Hope*, and arrived in *England* on the 3d of *November*, 1580, being the second Commander that surrounded the Globe.

THE Court of *England* neglected the *Indian* Trade, however, until the Year 1591, when the Captains *Lancaster*, *Kendal* and *Raymond*, were, in the latter End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, sent on a trading Voyage thither.

thither. Captain *Lancaster*, in one of the Ships, arrived in the Straits of *Malacca*, but lost his Ship in his Return Home, and the other two never reached *India*.

THREE other Ships were sent to *China*, commanded by Captain *Wood*, in the Year 1596, who carried a Letter from Queen *Elizabeth* to the Emperor of *China*; but they all died in the Voyage thither except four, who were cast away on a little Island near *Hispaniola*, and were murdered by the People of the Island.

THESE Misfortunes did not discourage the Merchants of *London* from making another Effort to begin a Traffick with the *Indies*; they formed themselves therefore into a Company, and were incorporated by Queen *Elizabeth*, by a Charter dated the 30th of *December*, 43 *Eliz.* 1600, Mr. *Thomas Smith*, Alderman of *London*, being their first Governor.

FOUR Ships were thereupon equipped, having four hundred and eighty Men on board, and the Command of them given to Captain *Lancaster*, was constituted their Admiral, or General, as he was called; the three other Ships were commanded by Captain *John Middleton*, Captain *Brand*, and Captain *Hayward*.

THEY set sail from *Dartmouth*, April 22, 1601, and arrived at *Achin*, in the Island of *Sumatra*, June 5, 1602, where they took in as much Cinnamon, Cloves, and Pepper as they could meet with at that Port; and having delivered the Queen's Letter and Presents to the King of *Achin*, the Admiral settled Articles of Trade with that Prince, from whence he went to *Priaman*, on the West Coast of *Sumatra*, and took in more Cloves and Pepper. Then he proceeded to *Bantam*, in the Island of *Java*, and settled a Factory there; and having ordered a Vessel with Factors on Board to sail to the *Molucca's* and *Ban-la* Islands, and begin a Trade there, he returned to *England*, where he arrived, September 11, 1603. In the mean Time the *Dutch* began to trade with *India*, the City of *Amsterdam* fitting out four Ships in the Year 1595, which arrived at *Bantam*, in the Isle of *Java*, in June, 1596. Here the *Portuguese* inciting the Government of *Bantam*, to make some of the *Dutchmen* Prisoners that were on Shore; the *Dutch* made Prize of several *Portuguese* Vessels in the Harbour,

bour, and fired upon the Town, after which they sailed to *Jacatra*, now *Batevia*, a little to the Eastward of *Bantam*; and here having taken in a Cargo of Spice and other Merchandize, they returned to *Holland* in *August*, 1597, without seeing the Spice Islands in this Voyage.

THE first Time the *Dutch* traded directly to the Spice Islands, was in the Year 1599; for having fitted out eight Ships, and given the Command of them to Admiral *Neccius*, in the Year 1598, he arrived at *Bantam* the Year following, where he loaded four of his Ships with Pepper, and the other four he sent to trade with the *Molucca's*, *Amboyna* and *Banda*, where they settled Factories, and took in their Loading of Cloves, Nutmegs and Mace, and returned to *Holland* in the Year 1600. These Ships succeeded so well, several other Companies were erected in *Holland*, besides that of *Amsterdam*, and great Numbers of Ships were daily dispatched to *India*; whereupon the States foreseeing of what Advantage it would be to their Country, if they could monopolize the Spice Trade, formed them all into one Body, that they might be the better able to contend with such *European* Powers as should attempt to rival them in this Commerce. This was their grand Concern at that Time, and this we shall find they effected by most iniquitous Practices, and the most unaccountable Indolence and Folly in the Powers that were concerned to prevent it.

THEY proceeded therefore to raise a Stock of six Millions of Florins (six hundred thousand Pounds Sterling) fitted out strong Fleets for *India*, attacked the *Portuguese* Settlements there, and took their Ships wherever they met them, the Kingdoms of *Spain* and *Portugal* being at that Time united under one Prince, and consequently the *Portuguese* involved in that War the *Spaniards* were engaged in with the *Dutch*.

THE Command of another Fleet bound to *India* was given to Admiral *Neccius*, in the Year 1602, who attacked the *Portuguese* in the *Molucca's* the following Year; but the *Portuguese* maintained their Ground at that Time. This did not discourage the *Hollanders*, who sent another Fleet to the Spice Islands, commanded by Admiral *Van Hagen*, in the Year 1605, who defeated the *Portuguese*, and reduced the Castle of *Amboyna*. They afterwards attacked the Fort belong-

ing

15280

ing to the *Portuguese* in the Island of *Tydore*, and the Magazine of Powder blowing up, and destroying great Part of the Wall, the Besieged were under a Necessity of surrendering it; but the *Spaniards* in the *Philippines* fitting out a Fleet, soon after recovered the Forts the *Dutch* had taken in the *Molucca's* again, and the War continued between *Spaniards* and the *Dutch* some Years afterwards.

In the mean Time the *Dutch* sent a Fleet of Men of War, with Land Forces on board, to the *Banda* Islands, requiring the *Orancayas*, or States of those Islands, to permit them to build a Fort on the Island of *Nero*; which the *Bandanese* refusing, the *Dutch* landed a Body of Troops, and massacred great Numbers of the Natives, who finding it impossible to defend themselves against so formidable a Power, submitting to the erecting a Fort; but the *Dutch* insisting that they should exclude all other Nations from trafficking with them, the *Bandanese*, under Pretence of a Treaty, drew the *Dutch* Admiral *Varboof*, and several of his Officers into an Ambuscade, where they fell upon them, and cut them off, sacrificing the *Dutch* to the Manes of their Countrymen, whom they had massacred without any Provocation a little before.

AND now the *Bandanese* and the *Dutch* being at open War, the *English*, who trading thither at that Time, and were one of the Nations the *Dutch* insisted should be excluded from the Traffick of those Islands, were called into the Assistance of the Natives against those Usurpers, and the *Orancayas*, or Governors of those Islands, made a formal Surrender of their Country to *James I.* then King of *Great-Britain*; and consequently the *English* having the most unexceptionable Title to those Spice Islands, that it is possible for any Power to have, the *Dutch* must ever be looked upon as Usurpers by us.

THE *Hollanders*, not long before, had hindered Captain *Middleton* from taking in a Cargo of Cloves at *Ambony*, and prohibited the Natives to traffick with any *English* Ships: By the same Authority they would have excluded us from *Banda*, that is, by Force, without any Colour of Right. Whereupon Captain *Middleton* sailed to *Ternate*, where the King seeming inclined to trade with him, the *Dutch* threatned his *Ternatian* Majesty that they
would

would join his Enemy, the King of *Tydore*, if he did; affirming, *That the English were Pirates and Robbers, and that the King of Holland was more powerful at Sea than all the Princes of Europe.* To which the Captain answered, that the *Dutch* had been entirely ruined, and treated as Traitors and Slaves by the King of *Spain*, their Sovereign, if the Queen of *England* had not taken Pity of them, and screened them from his Fury.

THE Captain, notwithstanding the Opposition of the *Dutch*, having loaded his Ship with Cloves, returned to *England*, where he arrived the 6th of *May*, 1606, bringing Letters from the Kings of *Ternate* and *Tydore* to King *James I.* of which the following are Extracts.

THE King of *Ternate*, in his Letter dated 1605, observes, That Captain *Drake* visited that Island about thirty Years before, in the Reign of his Father, and that his Father sent a Ring to the Queen of *England*, in Token of his Friendship, and that he lived many Years in Expectation of Captain *Drake's* Return, as he himself had done since. In the mean Time, several other Nations had arrived there, who represented that his Majesty's Subjects came thither with a Design to usurp his Throne; though he was very sensible to the contrary, and was exceedingly rejoiced on the Arrival of Captain *Middleton*: He acknowledged, however, that after waiting many Years for the Forces Captain *Drake* had promised him, and being out of Hopes of Relief from the *English*, he had been compelled to desire the Assistance of the *Dutch*, against his ancient Enemies of *Portugal*, and that they had assisted him to drive them out of his Country, on his promising not to trade with any other Nation: That he readily consented to Captain *Middleton's* leaving an *English* Factory there; but the *Hollanders* would not admit of it: That, notwithstanding the chief Captain of the *Hollanders* insisting that he should have no Friendship with the *English*, nor have any Regard to his Majesty's Letters, if he pleased to send thither again, his Subjects should be welcome, and as a Mark of his Friendship he had sent him a Bahar of Cloves.

THE King of *Tydore*, in his Letter to King *James I.* informs him, That the King of *Holland's* Forces had joined those

those of his antient Enemy, the King of *Ternate*, and that they had over-run, and plundered his Country, and were determined to destroy him and his Subjects. He desired his Majesty, therefore, to take Pity on them, that they might not be destroyed by the Kings of *Holland* and *Ternate*, to whom he had done no Wrong; and as great Kings were ordained by God to releave the Oppressed, he applied to his Majesty to preserve him from Destruction, and that he would send over Captain *Henry Middleton*, or his Brother, with whom he was well acquainted, with a Reinforcement of Troops; praying that God would enlarge his Majesty's Kingdoms, and bleſs his Councils.

CAPTAIN *Keelyng*, or board the *Hector*, arriving at the Island of *Banda*, February the 8th, 1608, with the Leave of the *Orancayas*, erected a House for the Use of the Company's Factors, and agreed upon Articles of Trade with them. He did the like with the *Orancayas* of the Island of *Pooloway*, and received of them two hundred and twenty-five Cattees of Mace, and one thousand three hundred and seven Pounds of Nutmeg. The *Dutch* Admiral, *Varchoof*, coming into *Banda* Road, soon after acquainted the *Bandanese*, that he was impowered by Count *Nassau* and the States-General, to treat with them, and required that he might build a Fort on the Island; which the *Bandanese* refusing, the *Dutch* landed one thousand two hundred Men, and killed many of the *Bandanese*; whereupon the People of the Island drew the Admiral and several of his Officers into an Ambuscade, as mentioned above, and destroyed them. The *Dutch* Vice-Admiral having landed more Men, laid Siege to the Town of *Sabatacu*, and took it, and burnt several *Bandanese* Vessels he found there, and commanded Captain *Keelyng* to quit the Island; having made a Conquest of it, he said, and erected the Fort of *Nassau* for its Defence: Captain *Keelyng*, however, staid at *Banda* till he had taken in his Loading of Spice, after which he sailed to *Bantam*, and having settled a Factory there, he returned to *England*, where he arrived on the 10th of May, 1610.

CAPTAIN *Middleton* afterwards coming to the Island of *Nero*, the *Dutch* did not only oppose his dealing with the Natives of *Nero* and *Lator*, but were contriving to destroy
his

his Ship, which induced him to leave *Nero*, and sail to *Pooleway*, where he loaded his Ship with Nutmegs and Mace.

CAPTAIN *Saris*, who commanded a Ship belonging to the *English East-India* Company, coming to the *Molucca's* in the Year 1612, found the *Dutch* building Forts there, in order to exclude all other Nations from trafficking with them.

THE Natives, however, came on board the Captain, and agreed to sell him a Quantity of Cloves, and sent their Boats loaded with Cloves, to the Ship: Of which the *Dutch* took some, and threatened the Natives to cut them in Pieces if they brought any more. The *Dutch*, also, sent two Ships to lie close to the *English* Ship, to prevent any Cloves being brought on board of her, pretending, the People of the Island had agreed to sell them all they had for defending them against the *Spaniards*, and they looked upon the Natives as their Subjects, by Right of Conquest, and would not suffer any other People to deal with them. The Captain answered, he should continue to trade with the Natives as long as they would deal with him, and did not regard those idles Stories of Conquest and Compact, which were inconsistent, and continued still to take Cloves on board.

THE Kings of *Ternate* and *Tydore* being still at War, the Prince of *Tydore* sailed by Captain *Saris*, with the Heads of one hundred *Ternatians*, among which was the Head of the Prince of *Ternate*, his younger Brother; and in the same Action, where these *Ternatians* were cut off, the King of *Gilolo*, his Confederate, was killed. This Prince of *Tydore* had a little before taken a Dutch Man of War, and sent a Compliment to Captain *Saris*, to let him know he designed him a Visit; but he appeared so enterprising a Prince, that the Captain was jealous of his Design, and to avoid him, set sail for *Japan*.

THE *Orancayas* of *Pooleway*, one of the *Banda* Islands, dreading the Tyranny and Cruelty of the *Dutch*, sent a Deputation to the *English* Factory at *Bantam*, in the Year 1615, desiring their Protection, to which the *English* Factors answered, that they durst not oppose the *Dutch*, without Orders from *England*: So exceeding cautious were our Merchants in *India* of quarrelling with the usurping *Hollanders*.

ANO-

ANOTHER Instance of the Goodness of our *East-India* Merchants towards the *Dutch*, we have from *Macassar*, where Captain *Courthope* arriving in the Year 1616, a *Dutch* Ship sent her Boat on Shore with eight Men, who had been cut to Pieces by the Natives, if the *English* had not interposed and saved their Lives, the *Hollanders* having committed great Outrages near *Macassar*, on the Island of *Celebes*, and taken several of the Natives Prisoners, among whom was one of their *Sebandras* or Governors. The next Day the *Dutch* Ship being in great Distress for Provision, was sending another Boat on Shore for Rice, at which the King of *Macassar* was so exasperated, that he commanded his Gallies to board the Boat, and they killed every *Dutchman* in it before they reached the Shore, which the *English* could not prevent, but the *Dutch* Ship being in a starving Condition, the *English* Commodore, *Courthope*, was so exceeding obliging as to supply them with as much Rice as they wanted; how these Kindnesses were returned, will be seen hereafter.

CAPTAIN *Courthope* departing from *Macassar* with two *English* Ships, viz. the *Swan* and the *Defence*, and arriving at the *Banda* Islands, December 13, 1616, the *Orancayas* of *Pooloway* and *Pooleron* entered into a Treaty with him, wherein it was agreed, That in Consideration of their being protected against the *Hollanders*, and annually supplied with Rice, Cloathing, and other Necessaries by the *English*, they should acknowledge themselves Subjects of the King of *Great-Britain*; but before the Treaty was signed, the Captain demanded, if they had ever entered into any Contract with the *Dutch*, or made a Surrender of their Country to the *Hollanders*; to which they answered, they never had, nor never would; They knew the *Dutch* to be the greatest Enemies they had, adding, that before the *Hollanders* came into the Road of *Pooloway*, the *Orancayas* of *Pooleron* and *Pooloway* had made a voluntary Surrender of those Islands, into the Hands of Captain *Richard Hunt*, to the Use of his Majesty King *James*, and that the *Orancayas* of *Pooloway* had set up the *English* Colours on the Fort which the *Dutch* shot down several Times, and were guilty of such reproachful Language towards that Prince and his Subjects, as none but *Dutchmen* would uster against a

crowned Head, and a Nation to whom they understood they were infinitely obliged: That the *Orancayas* of *Pooloway* had defended that Island as long as they were able for the King of *England*; and when they could keep it no longer, they fled to *Pooleron*, and the adjacent Islands; but never submitted to the *Hollanders*. The Articles for transferring those Islands to the *British* Crown, were signed on the 14th of *December*, 1616, in which they agreed to sell the Produce of their Country, namely, Mace and Nutmegs, only to the King of *England* and his Subjects. On the other Hand, it was stipulated, that the Natives should not be disturbed in their Religion, which was Mahometanism, or any Things practised that might reflect upon it; that their Women should not be meddled with; that no Swine should be kept in their Country; that their Goods should not be taken from them, or any one misused, nor any Thing done contrary to their Laws.

THAT if an *Englishman* chose to profess their Religion, it should be allowed; and if any of the Natives chose to profess Christianity, it should be permitted, so as it was done upon mature Advice and Consideration at a Council of both Nations: And at the Signing thereof, a Turf of Earth was delivered to the Commodore of the *English* Ships, as an Evidence of their Cession of their Country to the King of *England*.

THE like Cession of the Islands of *Rosking* and *Wayre* was made to the Crown of *England* by their *Orancayas*.

SOME few Days after this Transaction, several *Dutch* Ships approached the Island of *Pooleron*, and taking down their Colours, hoisted a bloody Flag, as if they designed to attack the *English* Ships. The *English* thereupon landed several Pieces of Cannon, and erected a Battery which commanded the Road. Five or six Days after, three other large *Dutch* Ships arriving, the *English* shewed them the Cessions of the Islands above-mentioned to the Crown of *England*, and demanded that *Pooloway* might be delivered up to them. The *Dutch* were then so far from pretending to have a prior Grant of those Islands, that they acknowledged they had none. The *Hollanders* had, however, attacked the *English* Ships, if they had not discovered the Batteries on Shoar. They deferred discovering their hostile

stile Intentions, therefore, at that Time; but Captain *Davis*, who commanded the *Swan*, going over to the Island of *Wayre*, which was not then in the Power of the *Dutch*, two Ships of *Holland* poured in their Broad-Sides upon him, and took him after some little Resistance, though they were then at Peace with *England*.

COMMODORE *Courthope*, after the Loss of the *Swan*, finding it impracticable to defend himself against the *Dutch* at Sea, landed the rest of his Guns, and erected a Fort on the Shore, believing he should be able to defend himself against the *Dutch*, till re-inforced from *England* or *Bantam*; but the few Men he had left on board his Ship thought fit to desert, and carry the Ship over to the *Dutch*; who plundered both Ships of every Thing that was valuable, throwing the rest over-board. Then they loaded the Men with Irons, imprisoning them in stinking Dungeons, and in Contempt of the *English* Nation, dunged upon their Heads; and here many of them perished in the Stench, while others were put in Cages, and shewn to the Natives, to whom the *Hollanders* declared, *That the English were their Vassals and Slaves in Europe, where they frequently used them as they did these Prisoners*, telling the Natives, that this was but a Trifle to the Punishments they intended to inflict for the future, on all that durst oppose them; and, indeed, nothing could be more barbarous than the Usage the *English* met with from the *Dutch*, who were obliged to this Nation, by all the Ties that Gratitude or Religion could lay upon them; such as none but the *English* would have tamely borne, or rather that mercenary Ministry that was then at the Head of Affairs, and whom the *Dutch* had the Forehead to declare, they had in their Pockets. Surely, the greatest Misfortune that can befall this, or any other Nation, is a selfish mercenary Ministry, that has no Regard to the public Welfare.

In this unhappy Situation, Captain *Courthope* dispatched Mr. *Spurway*, Factor to the *East-India* Company, to *Bantam*, with several of the *Orancayas* of the *Banda* Islands to represent the State of his Affairs to the Factory there; but they were not in a Condition to relieve him, whereupon Mr. *Spurway* wrote to the Company in *England*, entreating and conjuring them that they would have some Compa-

sion on their Servants, whom the *Hollanders* had imprisoned: That the Outrages they had committed might be so resented in *Europe*, that the *Dutch* might be afraid to commit the like Villanies again; representing, that if a Reinforcement was not speedily sent to *Poelaron*, the *English* Name must undergo the greatest Disgrace in that Part of the World, and the Nation must suffer such a Loss, by being deprived of their Spice Islands, as could never be retrieved.

BESIDES this Representation of Mr. *Spurway*, and the *Bantam* Factors, it may be proper to recite some Passages, in Relation to these Transactions, from Commodore *Courthope's* Journal: He relates, that the *Hollanders* offering to restore his Ships, on Condition he would abandon the Island of *Poelaron*, he answered, he could not give away the King and the Nation's Rights, and desert the Islanders, his Majesty's Subjects, without incurring the Guilt of High-Treason, and drawing the Blood of that People on his Head, who had thrown themselves on his Majesty's Protection; but if the *Dutch* would restore the Ships, with the Crews and Merchandize, and give Security that no Attempt should be made on the Islands, till the Right to them was fairly decided, he would leave the Islands. To which the *Dutch* replied, that they would force him out.

IN *March* following, two *English* Ships came within Sight of the Fort of *Poelaron*, but were attacked by four great *Dutch* Ships before they arrived there, and after a smart Fight, which lasted seven Hours, were taken; but had not one of them been so laden with Rice for the *Bandaese*, that she could not make use of her lower Fire, it might have been otherwise, especially, if a third *English* Ship, which came out with them, had not parted from them a little before.

It is usual with the *Dutch* to deny that their Officers had any Authority from the Government to commit such Outrages. In answer to which, it appears, that their Generals and Admirals declared, they were commissioned by the States to take all Ships that approached the *Banda* Islands: And what makes it further evident, is, that their Officers were never called to Account by their Superiors for

for what they had done, and that the *Hollanders* retain the Possession of these invaluable Islands, which they robbed the *English* of, to this Day.

IN the late Engagement, there were several of the *Bandanese* on board the *English* Ships, who fought bravely, and several Times cleared the Decks of the *Dutchmen*; and many of them, as well as of the *English*, were massacred in cold Blood after the Engagement.

NORWITHSTANDING these Misfortunes, the Natives still continued faithful to the *English*. The *Oranceyas* of *Lantor* came over to Captain *Courthope*, and assured him they would endeavour to hold out another Year, in Hopes that some Ships from *England* would arrive to their Relief in that Time, though the Captain had now but thirty-eight *Englishmen* left in the Fort, and no other Provision but Rice, and such Fish as they could take on the Coast.

THE Commodore takes Notice in his Journal, that the *Dutch* Officers boasted they had Copies of all *English* Commissions before the Company's Ships set sail from *England*, and they told the *Bandanese*, that they must never expect to enjoy any Peace, until they submitted to the *Hollanders*, for there was no Nation in the World able to contend with them; but still that brave People chose to hazard every Thing, and suffer the most pinching Wants and Hardships, rather than submit to the *Dutch*: On the contrary, the Town of *Lantor*, which was still in Possession of the Natives, being assaulted by the *Hollanders*, they were beaten off and forced to retire.

IN another Part of Commodore *Courthope's* Journal, he says, he had not only the *Dutch* Forces and many Hardships to contend with, but the Importunities of the *English* Sailors, who were perishing in the *Dutch* Prisons, and begging him to make Peace with their Tormentors on any Terms. That he sent a Flag of Truce thereupon to the *Dutch*, to represent the cruel and inhuman Treatment their Prisoners suffered, and sent them some Rice, Oranges, and such little Refreshments as he could spare, assuring them, that if any Thing less than the betraying the Interests of his King and Country had been required of him, he would not have failed to comply with them; but that he himself was ready to suffer, and to hazard every Thing,

rather

rather than abandon a People, who had put themselves under the Protection of the Crown of *England*, and to whom he had engaged himself in the solemnest Manner.

IN the midst of this Distress, *viz.* on the 27th of *January*, 1618, the Captain received an Express from Sir *Thomas Dale*, Commander of a strong Fleet of *English* Ships, informing him, that he was arrived at *Bantam*, and had defeated the *Dutch* Fleet, and compelled them to quit the Coast of *Java*; that he would speedily be with him at *Banda*, and oblige the *Dutch* to do the *English* Justice.

THE Commodore, however, waited another full Year in Expectation of Succours, but received neither Intelligence or Supplies from *Bantam* or *England*. In this melancholy Situation, however, the *Orancayas* of *Lantor*, or *Banda Proper*, repeated their Cession of that Island to the Crown of *England*; for the *Dutch* pretended they had made an entire Conquest of it. The Natives, however, often attacked them with Success. The *Hollanders* had not the peaceable Possession of any one of the *Banda* Islands while the brave *Courthope* lived, and encouraged the *Bandane*se to defend their Country against those Invaders; but what a Shock must it have been to the Commodore and his little Garrison, after they had defended the Fort under all these Disadvantages for two Years, on which depended the whole Trade to *Banda*, to hear, on the 20th of *March* 1619, that Sir *Thomas Dale*, who commanded the *English* Fleet, was dead, and that the rest of the Captains, not agreeing amongst themselves afterwards, had dispersed to several Parts of *India*, and that by this unaccountable Conduct, seven of their Ships had been taken by the Enemy, and consequently the Fort of *Pooleron* had very little Expectation of being relieved? Mr. *Courthope* himself now began to look upon his Affairs as desperate, as appears by his Letter to the *English* President at *Bantam*, where he informs him, that he must long ago have surrendered for Want of Food, if a *Portuguese* Ship had not accidentally touched there, and furnished him with Rice; he pressed him therefore to send him Supplies immediately, adding, *God grant me well out of this Country, for the People have spent their Gold and Estates, and many of them lost their Lives or Liberties, in Expectation of English Succours.* Can every
other

other Nation come into these Seas, and are the English only afraid to venture hither? You bid me rub on another Year, we have rubbed off the Skin already, I pray look to it. However, the Commodore resolved to maintain his Post to the last Extremity, and procured some Country Vessels to fetch him Rice from *Macassar*; he also repaired and improved his Fortifications, and set so good a Face upon the Matter, that the *Dutch* never durst attack him in his Fort: But, unfortunately for *England*, Mr. *Courtbope* going over to one of the neighbouring Islands to regulate some Affairs, was met by two *Dutch* Vessels on the 26th of *October*, 1619, and having fought them bravely, was shot in the Breast, and after a little Pause, threw himself into the Sea, that he might not fall into the Hands of the *Hollanders* alive, as is conjectured, or possibly, he might hope to reach the Shore, as some of the *Bandanese* did, by Swimming, and escaped; but he was never heard of more: The Relation of this tragical Event may possibly draw Tears from many of his Countrymen; but surely, they ought rather to rejoice. that *Britain* has produced a Man of such consummate Virtue, whose Courage, Conduct, Fidelity and Patience were put to the severest Trial in his Country's Service, and that he never could be conquered while he lived: That he exposed himself to the greatest Difficulties and Dangers in the remotest Parts of the Globe, to stem the Encroachments of the ungrateful *Hollanders*, who, like a Torrent, were breaking in upon our Commerce. Surely, the Name of *Courtbope* will ever be gratefully remembered by the *English*, and his illustrious Example induce others to imitate him, whom neither private Interest, or an elegant Retirement, to which his Friends invited him, could ever prevail on him to give up his Country's Cause, or abandon a People who confided in the Promises of *British* Aid. This he was sensible was the Crisis, when, if the *English* had exerted themselves in Defence of their Traffick, and their Empire at Sea, the *Hollanders* had never been able to have insulted our Coasts, as they did some Time afterwards. The Spices are the Basis of their Trade, as they might have been of ours. The Silver Mines of *Peru* are not so valuable to the *Spaniards*; for the Spices produce Treasure, without the Trouble of searching

ing the Bowels of the Earth for it, and with these the *Dutch* purchase most of the valuable Merchandize of *Asia* and *Europe*, setting what Price they please upon them, as they have monopolized the whole.

In aggrandizing the *Dutch*, indeed, it is said, we promoted our own Security; they are become a Barrier between us and some Popish Powers on the Continent: But had we been Masters of the fine Spices, we had needed no such Barrier. Power is usually an Attendant on Wealth, and if the Produce of the Spice Islands has rendered that little Bog, the *Hollanders* Country, so considerable, what a Figure might *Great-Britain* have made, if she had been Mistress of the same rich Produce? Besides, it may be demonstrated in many other Instances, that our Alliances with the *Dutch* have generally done us more Hurt than Good; how did they throw the Burthen of the War upon us in the Reigns of King *William* and Queen *Anne*? And how did they stand by, and see the *British* Troops cut to Pieces in the late War? If we had not depended upon them, we had never suffered so much Disgrace.

But further, the *Dutch* are pleased to tell us, that the Spice Islands have been great Gainers, by coming under their mild Government: The Tranquillity to be met with there, is not to be paralleled; we hear of no Rebellions or Insurrections in those Islands: But this Tranquillity seems to resemble what we meet with in the Prisons of the Inquisition, where none durst speak or stir, for fear of awaking their merciless Persecutors to inflict new Tortures on them; for the Sufferings of the *Bandaese*, as well as the *Englisch*, in that Part of the World, from our good Allies, have made such Impressions on that wretched People, as can never be defaced; some they have massacred, others they have enslaved, and have extirpated more than twenty Nations in the *Indian* Seas, to aggrandize their petty State: Nor do we find, that the Natives are so pacifick and insensible of their Wrongs in every Place, as has been represented. How many Conspiracies do they themselves relate that the *Chinese* and *Javanese*, in the Neighbourhood of *Batavia*, have exercised them with? How many of these poor People have they tortured and broke alive upon the Wheel, for Offences, as they call them,

them, Treason against those High and Mighty States, who have usurped the Dominion of their Country. If every Thing was called by its right Name, possibly it will be found, that the *Hollanders* are the real Traitors and Usurpers, who being admitted to trade with those distant People, constantly enslaved them.

To return to the Garrison, in the Fort of *Pooleron*. The brave *Courthope* having lost his Life in the Manner above related, Mr. *Hayes*, with the Consent both of the *English* and *Bandanese*, took upon him the Command, and two or three Days after intercepted a *Dutch* Packet, whereby it appeared, that a Treaty of Peace had been concluded between *England* and *Holland*, in relation to the Spice Trade, which Packet he sent to the *Dutch* Governor at *Nero*, that he might have no Pretence for committing any Acts of Hostility for the future; but the Governor laughed at it, and required the *Bandanese* to acknowledge themselves subject to their State, which when the Natives refused, the *Dutch* hoisted a red Flag, and attacked the Town of *Lantor*, where they were a second Time repulsed, and pursued by the *Bandanese*, who cut many of them in Pieces.

IN *February*, 1620, arrived a *Dutch* Fleet, with Land Forces on board, in order to make an entire Conquest of the Spice Islands. Mr. *Hayes* thereupon communicated the Treaties the *Bandanese* had made with *England*, ceding their Islands to the *British* Crown, to which the *Dutch* Admiral made no other Answer to the Messenger, than that he should be gone instantly, at his Peril; and upon the *Orancaya's* refusing to surrender the Town of *Lantor* to him, he stormed the Place, took it, and having plundered and massacred many of the Natives, laid it in Ashes. The *English* Factors, who were in the Place, he stripped naked, beat and abused them; and having tied them Hand and Foot, carried them on board his Ships, where they were laid in Irons. He then proceeded to seize the Effects of the *English*, consisting of twenty-three thousand Weight of Mace, and one hundred and twenty thousand Weight of Nutmegs, besides their Money, Cloth, and other Merchandize.

THE *Dutch* then proceeded to attack *Pooleron*, threatening the Natives, if they did not immediately surrender, they would have no more Mercy on them, than they had on the Inhabitants of *Lantor*. They answered, they were Subjects of the King of *England*; and as there was Peace between the two Nations, they hoped the *Hollanders* would not now commit any Acts of Hostility; but if the *English* neglected to defend them, they must submit; whereupon the *Dutch* took Possession of the Island, and made the Natives demolish the Fort and other Works in the Island, the *English* never offering to interrupt them, under Pretence that they durst not act in a hostile Manner, now the Peace was made. In the mean Time, the *Hollanders* compelled all the rest of the Islands to submit to their Tyranny, which when they had effected, they commanded the Natives to sell the *English* no more Spice, and such of the *Orancayas*, or Magistrates of these Islands, as had shewn the greatest Affection to the *English*, they cut to Pieces in cold Blood, under Pretence they were in a Conspiracy against these High and Mighty *Hollanders*. Thus an unlucky Peace was concluded with the *Dutch*, as Mr. *Herbert* observes, that was more destructive both to the *English* and *Bandanese*, than the most unsuccessful War could ever have proved; but this Treaty, by which the *Dutch* would have been great Gainers, if they had observed it, they broke through immediately after it was made: Such a Treaty as never would have been made but by a mercenary, corrupt Ministry; and it was not at last a Treaty between the two Nations, for they were not at War at that Time; but a Treaty between the *English* and *Dutch East-India* Companies, ratified by the Sovereign of each Nation, the *English* Ministry compelling the *English* Company to accept such Terms as they were pleased to dictate.

By this Treaty the *English* were to have but a third Share of the Trade to the *Molucca's* and *Banda*, but were to be at half the Expence, in defending that Commerce. It was agreed also, that each Party should remain in Possession of the Towns and Forts they respectively possessed; but how this was performed, has been shewn already. The Treaty was signed the 7th, and ratified at *London* on the

16th of July, 1619. The *English East-India Company*, observing what an advantageous Bargain the *Dutch* had made for themselves, did not doubt their Design to perform their Part of the Contract; and therefore, as the Treaty empowered them, settled Factories in the *Moluccas*, *Amboyna* and *Banda*, to carry it on in the Proportion of Trade agreed on.

BUT the *Dutch* from the Beginning never intended to keep one Article of the Treaty, as is evident from the Outrages they committed at *Amboyna*, before three Years were expired, where they pretended that the *English* and *Japonefe* were in a Conspiracy to seize one of their Forts at *Amboyna*, and tortured a *Japonefe* and *Portuguese* in the *English* Service till they made them say what their Tormentors dictated to them, and then sending for Mr. *Towerson*, the Chief of the *English* Factory, charged him and the rest of the *English* Factors with a Conspiracy to seize their Fort; some of them they imprisoned, and others they loaded with Irons, and sent on board their Ships; they seized also all the *English* Merchandize, with their Books and Writings, as if the *English* had really been their Vassals and Slaves, as they had represented them to the *Indians*.

AFTER this, they proceeded to torture the *English* Factors, both by Water and Fire, compelling them to swallow Water (or drown) till one Body was swelled as big as two, and the Water gushed out at their Ears and Nostrils, and their Eyes were ready to start out of their Heads. Then taking them down from the Boards they had fastened them to, and having made them bring up the Water again, if they did not say what was dictated to them, they repeated the Torture.

OTHERS they burnt by Inches from the Foot upwards, to make them confess the pretended Plot; some had the Nails of the Fingers and Toes torn off, and in some they made Holes in their Breasts, ramming in Wild-Fire, and then set Fire to it; but were so merciful at last as to put them to Death. Mr. *Clark* and Mr. *Thomson* were so mangled that they were forced to be carried to their Execution, after they had lain five or six Days in a Dungeon, in that miserable Condition, where they would not suffer
a Surgeon

a Surgeon to come near them, their Flesh putrified and bras all oozes, and their Wounds stunk to that Degree, that they were loathsome to themselves, and all that came near to them.

Such a Story might have been told to be heard, delivered in the most solemn manner, that they knew nothing of a y Plot, but were easily persuaded of what the *Dutch* had charged them with.

The *Dutch*, however, suffered some of the *English* to come to *England* (who made Oath of the Truth of these barbarous Proceedings) for which I can assign no other Reason than that the World might know how they had treated the *English*, their Allies, and might be deterred from visiting those Seas where the Spice Islands lie. It is observed, that the Governor of *Ambryne*, as *Jezabel* did formerly, proclaimed a Fast when he perpetrated this Villainy, and so far exceeded *Jezabel*, that he pretended to do all this *in the Name of the Lord*.

To the Narrative which was printed of this inhuman Proceeding, the *English East-India Company* annexed many convincing Reasons to shew the Improbability that their Factors should be engaged in any such Conspiracy.

As first, that the *Dutch* had a Garrison of three hundred Men in the Fort, besides the Burghers in the Town, and several other Forts and Garrisons in the Island, whereas the *English* and their Servants did not amount to twenty Men, and had no great Guns, small Arms, or Ammunition to effect such a Design as they were charged with; nor was there one *English Vessel* in the Harbour, whereas the *Dutch* had eight Ships riding near the Town: Then to what End should the Factors attempt to surprize this Fort, since if they had taken it, they could never have maintained it with so small a Party, against such Numbers of the *Dutch*, so well provided with Cannon, Arms and Ammunition of all Kinds? Nor could the Factors expect to be countenanced by their Principals in *England*, who had accepted of the Terms specified in the late Treaty, and there was not found one Paper or Letter when the *Dutch* broke open the Desks and Trunks of the Factors, which had any Relation to the pretended Conspiracy; from whence they concluded it was all a *Dutch Plot*, to expel

expel the *English* from the Spice Islands, and monopolize that Trade; as was abundantly manifest, from their seizing the *English* Factories in the rest of the Islands immediately afterwards.

On the like Pretence of a Plot, they did, about the same Time, put to the Torture one hundred and sixty-two of the Natives of *Pooleron*, at once, some of them dying under the Torture, and all the rest were executed by their Hangman, their Wives and Children being made Slaves of; and one of their Priests presuming to declare their Innocence, they ordered to be cut asunder in the Middle. If it be demanded again, to what Purpose should the *Dutch* be guilty of this Barbarity? Could they not have seized on the *English* Company's Effects, and expelled their Factors, or put them to Death, without torturing them, when they had such a Number of Castles and Garrisons in the Islands, and the *English* had not a Fort or Military Man amongst them, but lived in ordinary, defenceless Houses, dispersed over all the Island? The true and only Reason that can be imagined, as I have hinted already, must have been to deter the *English* and all other Nations from venturing into those Seas.

CHAP. IV.

Contains a Description of the Sunda Islands, with Captain Beckman's Opinion concerning the Management of the Trade to Borneo.

THE Chief of the *Sunda* Islands are those of *Borneo*, *Sumatra*, and *Java*, so denominated from lying near the Straits of *Sunda*. I shall enter first upon the Description of *Borneo*.

THE Island of *Borneo*, the largest in the known World, is situate in the *Indian* Ocean, between one hundred and seven and one hundred and seventeen Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between seven Degrees North, and four Degrees South Latitude, having the Island of *Celebes* or *Mataffer* on the East, and the Island of *Sumatra* on the West, being about seven hundred Miles long, and near

as much in Breadth; and as it lies under the Equinoctial, or near it, the Days are about twelve Hours long all the Year round, and never twelve and a half long in any Part of it. The Air must be hot, as the Sun is over their Heads great Part of the Year; but the Heats are rendered tolerable by the Rains, which continue more than half the Year, laying the flat Country under Water, and the Sea Breezes, which blow from the Sea most Part of the Day, contribute to make it cool. The Sea Coasts being annually flooded for several hundred Miles, on the retiring of the Waters, the Surface is nothing but Mud, or a soft Ouze, which the Sun shining upon with perpendicular Rays, occasions thick Fogs that are not dispersed till Nine in the Morning, and the Frogs and other Vermin and Insects the Waters leave behind, being killed with the Heat, cause an intolerable Stink, and corrupt the Air. The cold chilling Winds also that succeed the hottest Days, contribute to render the Air unhealthful.

FROM *September* to *April* the Winds are Westerly here, and this is their rainy Season, when they have terrible Storms of Thunder, and scarce two Hours fair Weather in the four and twenty. The rest of the Year is their dry Season, but even then they have a Shower almost every Day when the Sea Breeze comes in.

THIS is a mountainous woody Country in the Middle, but the Coast is flat and level almost all round the Island, and overflowed in the Time of the Rains; and even in this Part are very extensive Woods of excellent Timber.

THEIR chief Rivers are, 1. *Banjar*. 2. *Tatas*. 3. *Java*. 4. *Succadanea*.; and, 5. *Borneo*.

THE River *Banjar* is a fine River, rising in the Mountains in the Middle of the Island, and running South, discharges itself into a Bay on the South-East Part of the Island, being navigable for several hundred Miles; the Banks planted with tall Trees ever green. The River *Tatas* falls into the Mouth of *Banjar* River, and is frequently called the *China* River, because the *China* Junks lie in the Mouth of it. The Rivers *Java* and *Succadanea* run from the North-East to the South-West, and fall into the Bay of *Succadanea* in the South-West Part of the Island.

THE River *Borneo* falls into the Bay of *Borneo*, in the North-West Part of the Island. The Tides in the River *Banjar* flow but once in twenty four Hours, and that in the Day-time; they never rise more than half a Foot in the Night (unless in a very dry Season) which is occasioned by the rapid Torrents, and the Land Winds blowing very strong in the Night-Time. There lie three Islands within the Entrance of the River, the first of which is covered with tall Trees, that may be seen at Sea, and are a good Mark for sailing over the Bar. If a Ship be aground, the Ebb is so very strong, occasioned by the Land Floods, that she will run the Hazard of being broke to Pieces; and the Trees continually driving down the River, render the Navigation still more dangerous. The best Anchoring Place is a Mile or two within the River; it is best to sail up with the Flood, the Tide of Ebb runs so strong. There are a great many fine Bays and Harbours on the Coast, but that most resorted to is at the Mouth of the River *Banjar*.

THE Natives of *Borneo* consist of two different People; that are of different Religions; those upon the Sea Coast are usually called *Banjareens*, from the Town of *Banjar*, to which most Nations resort, to trade with them. The *Banjareens* are of a low Stature, very swarthy, their Features bad, resembling most the Negroes of *Guinea*, though their Complexions are not so dark; they are well proportioned, their Hair is black, and shines with the Oil with which they perpetually grease it. The Women are of a low Stature and small Limbs, as the Men are, but their Features and Complexion much better, and they move with a good Grace.

THE common People go almost naked; they have only a little Bit of a Cloth before, and a Piece of Linen tied about their Heads. Their Betters, when they are dressed on Days of Ceremony, were a Vest of red or blue Silk, and a loose Piece of Silk or fine Linen tied about their Loins, and thrown over their Left Shoulder. A Pair of Drawers they wear, but no Shirt, and their Legs and Feet are bare; their Hair is bound up in a Roll, and a Piece of Muslin or Calico tied over it; a Crice or Dagger in their Sash they always carry when they go abroad.

THE *Byayes* or Mountaineers are much taller and larger bodied Men than the *Banjarees*, and a braver People, which their Situation and Manner of Life may account for, being inured to Labour, and to follow the Chace for their daily Food; whereas the *Banjareens* use very little Exercise, travelling chiefly by Water.

THE *Byayes* go almost naked, but not admiring their tawny Skins, paint their Bodies blue, and like all other People that live in hot Climates, anoint themselves with Oil, which smells very strong; and 'tis said, every Man of Figure amongst them, almost, pulls out his Teeth to place a Set of Gold Teeth in their Room; but this I cannot believe, and think it wants Confirmation.

THE *Banjareens* are an hospitable, friendly People, where they are not abused, or apprehend Foreigners have a Design upon their Liberties; they seem to be Men of good Sense, but, not being acquainted with the World, are frequently imposed upon in their Traffick with the crafty *Chinese*.

Rice is the chief Part of their Food here, as it is in other hot Countries, but with it they eat Venison, Fish, or Fowl, and all Kind of Meat almost, except Hogs Flesh; and Men of Figure are served in Gold or Silver Plate; the common People are content with Brass or Earthen Dishes, and all sit cross-legged upon Mats or Carpets at their Meals, and indeed almost all Day long, chewing Betel and Arek, or smoaking Tobacco, which both Sexes are very fond of when it is mixed with Opium. The whole Company usually smoak out of one Pipe; the Master of the Feast having smoaked first, passes it round the Company, and they will sometimes sit smoaking so long, that they grow stupid. At other Times they divert themselves with Comedies, and the *Chinese* have taught them to game; their rural Sports are Hunting, Shooting, and Fishing. They have such Plenty of Fish, that they may take as many as will serve them a Day at one Cast, from their Houses, which are built upon Floats in their Rivers.

THEIR usual Salute is the Salam, lifting their Hands to their Heads and bowing their Bodies a little; and before their Princes they throw themselves prostrate on the Ground: No one presumes to speak to a great Man, till he is first spoke to, and required to tell his Business: They usually

usually travel in covered Boats upon their Rivers; but the great Men who live in the inland Country ride on Elephants or Horses.

THE Produce of this Country, besides Rice, already mentioned, is Cocoa Nuts, Oranges, Citrons, Plantains, Melons, Bananas, Pine-Apples, Mangoes, and all Manner of tropical Fruits; Cotton, Canes, Rattans, and Plenty of very fine Timber; Gold, precious Stones, Camphire, Bezoar, and Pepper. There are three Sorts of black Pepper; the first and best is the *Molucca*, or Lout Pepper; the second is called *Caytongee* Pepper, and the worst Sort is the *Negaree* Pepper; of which there is the greatest Plenty. This is small, hollow and light, and commonly full of Dust, and the Buyer will be imposed on if he buys it by Measure, and does not weigh it. He must take Care also, that the Pepper be not mixed with little black Stones, which are not easily seen. The white Pepper grows on the same Tree that black Pepper does, and yet bears twice the Price: It is conjectured to be the best of the Fruit which drops of itself, and is gathered up by the poor People in small Quantities, before it turns black, and that it is the Scarcity of it which occasions it to be so dear; but I think we want a more satisfactory Account of this Matter.

THERE are the same Animals here as on the Continent of *India*, viz. Elephants, Buffaloes, Deer, &c. but the most remarkable Animal, and which is almost peculiar to this Island, is that monstrous Monkey called the *Oran-Ootan*, or Man of the Woods, near six Foot high, and walks upon his hinder Legs. He has a Face like a Man, and not so ugly as some of the human Species, no Tail, or any Hair on his Body, but where a Man has Hair. Mr. *Beckman*, Captain of an *Indiaman*, purchased one of them, who would drink Punch, and open his Case of Brandy to get a Dram, if he was left alone with it, drink a Quantity, and then return the Bottle to the Case. He would lay himself down to sleep as a Man does: If the Captain appeared angry with him, he would whine and sigh till he was reconciled. He would wrestle with the Seamen, and was stronger than any of them, though he was not a Year old when he died; for the Captain lost him as soon as

he came into cold Weather, having been bred in the hottest Climate.

Among their Minerals is Gold, which the Mount'ners get out of the Sands of their Rivulets in the dry Season, and dispose of it to the *Banjareens*, from whom the *Europeans* receive it: There are also Iron Mines, and the Load-Stone may be had here.

THE Merchandize the *Europeans* chiefly import from *Borneo* is Pepper, Gold, Diamonds, Champhire, Bezoar, Aloes, Mastick and other Gums; and the Goods proper to be carried thither, besides Bullion and Treasure, are small Cannon, from one hundred to two hundred Weight, Lead, Calimancoes, Cutlery Wares, Iron Bars, small Steel Bars, Hangers, the smallest Sort of Spike Nails, Twenty-Penny Nails, Grapplings of forty Pound Weight, red Leather Boots, Spectacles, Clock-Work, small Arms with Brass Mountings, Horse Pistols, Blunderbusses, Gunpowder and Looking-Glasses. The purchasing Gold is a profitable Article, and Diamonds may be had reasonably, tho' they are generally small ones: They purchase Gold usually with Dollars, giving a certain Number of Silver Dollars for the Weight of one Dollar in Gold.

SOME are of Opinion, that the Trade to *Borneo* might be made as advantageous as that to any other Country of *India*; for here lies the *China* Fleet great Part of the Year, which will supply the Merchants with the Goods of *China*, upon as easy Terms almost as at *Canton*; and if it be considered how much longer the Voyage to *China* is, the Customs, Port Charges, the Extortions of the *Hippo's* or Custom-House Officers, we may deal with the *Chinese* to greater Advantages, perhaps, at *Borneo* than at *China*. Here the *Europeans* also meet with the *Macassar* Praws, which, notwithstanding all the Care the *Dutch* can take, still bring thither Cloves, Nutmegs, Mace, Gumbage, Cassia, Lignum Aloes, and many other Sorts of rich Merchandize.

CAPTAIN *Beckman* has given us the following Directions for the Management of this Trade to *Borneo*, and observes, in the first Place, that if Ships arrive there in the Beginning of *August*, it is Time enough to contract for the Purchase of the Pepper of the last Year's Crop, which is better than

than the new Crop, because the Natives have had full Time to cure it, and it will not waste and lose so much in the Weight; he advises the Ships to anchor at *Poolo Cocket*, an Island at the Mouth of the River *Banjar*, and from thence send by a Country Boat to the Sultan of *Cay-tongee*, to acquaint him with their Arrival; for the Country would be alarmed by sending up the Pinnace before they had Notice of their Coming; and when the Natives come on board, it will not be prudent to shew any Fear or Distrust of them, by arming the Sailors; for if they suspect the Ship to be a Man of War or a Pirate, they will not trade, being a timorous Sort of People, that dread the least Appearance of Danger.

THERE will be always some of the Natives, who under Pretence of doing you Service in your Trade, will expect a Present, nor must they be neglected; but it will be adviseable to feed them with small Sums, from Time to Time, and keep them always in Expectation, and not give them too much at once. The greatest of their Officers or Noblemen are not ashamed to accept four or five Dollars wrapped up in a Piece of Paper.

WHATEVER Contracts are made, let them be drawn up so clear as to leave no Room for Misunderstandings; and among other Things, the Merchant will do well to contract for a House in the Town of *Tatas*, to make a Warehouse of, for which they will make extravagant Demands, if the Price is not agreed on at first: And though a peaceable, quiet Behaviour be recommended, yet a Merchant cannot be too much upon his Guard; it will be better to send two small Ships thither for that Reason, than one large one, they will be in a much better Condition to defend themselves, if any Difference should happen with the Natives, and two small Ships will be much sooner loaded than a large one; for one might lie at a Distance while the other goes up to *Tatas* to take in her Lading, it not being adviseable to trust your whole Force in their Power; and the sending down every Parcel of Pepper in the Country Boats, will take up a great deal more Time than the taking it on board at the Town.

CARE ought to be taken, that the Sailors are not too free with the *Banjareen* Women that bring Provision; and

though the House will be often crowded with People that come thither, under Pretence of Trade, this must be borne with, rather than affront them; but they must be watched very narrowly, for the Natives are a thievish Generation.

THE *Chinese* will carry it very civilly towards you, tho' they are Rivals in the Trade, and you ought in outward Appearance to be as civil to them; for you may purchase several Sorts of Goods of them to Advantage, which are not to be had in that Country.

THE *Banjareens* don't know the Value of *European* Goods so well as the *Chinese*, and it will be proper to ask twice as much as you design to take, for they will not bid a fourth Part of what you ask; and on the other hand they will frequently ask ten times as much for their Goods as they design to take, and there is no relying upon their Samples or Weights. They have learnt of the *Chinese* to be as great Sharpers as themselves, and, like them, think it no Disgrace to be detested in their Knavery.

THE Guin Dragent or Dragons Blood, which this Country produces, is in great Esteem; that which appears of the brightest Colour, after it is rubbed on Paper, is the best, and is sold at about forty Dollars the Pecul.

CANES are another Article the *Europeans* purchase here, and are fine small Joints, usually called Jambee Canes, an Hundred of which may be bought for four Dollars or Crowns. When the Natives come to sell Gold Bars, they must be cut through and touched, or you must expect a Mixture of other Metals with it. The Gold here, as in other Places, being taken out of the Sands or Rivulets, is sometimes mixed with Iron Dust, and is cleared of it by rubbing a Load Stone amongst the Dust in a Dish, the Iron Particles adhering to the Load-Stone. The highest coloured Gold is the best, when it has no Alloy.

THE Bezoar Stone, called Monkey Bezoar, is sold for five Times the Weight in Silver; they weigh from a Penny-weight to an Ounce, and the best are of a greenish Hue; the largest are supposed to be Goat Bezoar. The Natives have a Composition, which resembles the right Bezoar. The Way to discover the Fraud, is to rub White Lead, Lime, or Chalk on a white Paper, and then rubbing the
Bezoar,

Bezoar, upon it, it will change the White Lead or Chalk to a greenish Colour, if it be right. The best Camphire also is produced here. The delicious Birds-Nests also are to be had at *Borneo*, where they are sold for one hundred Dollars the Pecul. Pepper is usually sold for four or five Dollars the Pecul.

THE *Chinese* keep Shops at *Tatas*, and are the only People that sell Goods by Retail here, particularly Silks, Chints, Calicoes, Beteles, and other Mullins; Tea, Drugs, China, and Japan Goods.

THE chief Town in *Borneo* was *Banjar Mosséen*, which oncelay about twelve Miles up the River *Banjar*, and was built on Floats, or Rafts, in the River, but is now removed to *Tatas*, six Miles higher up the River; these floating Towns being removed with very little Trouble, the Reason of which Removal seems to have been for Security against the Insults of Foreigners.

THIS floating Town forms one long Street, no House having more than one Floor, divided into Rooms, according to the Number of the Family; their Walls and Partitions made of split Cane, and their Roofs covered with Palm Branches, the Eaves reaching within five Feet of the Bottom, to shelter them from the scorching Sun. These Houses lie at an Anchor, and are fastened together with Hooks and Rings; but as they are subject to Fire, they are easily unloosed and set a drift, which saves the rest of the Street. The Tide of Ebb is so strong at *Tatas*, that sometimes the Houses on these Floats break loose from their Moorings, and are driven out to Sea; but besides this floating Town before *Tatas*, there is another built of more substantial Materials on Shore, and others that stand upon Pillars, several Feet above the Surface, and having no Communication but by Boats during the rainy Season.

THE Town of *Caytongee*, the Residence of the greatest Prince in the Island, may now be deemed the Capital; it lies above two hundred Miles up the River *Banjar*, of which I meet with no Description; but before the Palace is a large Room fifty Yards long and thirty broad, built upon Pillars, open on all Sides, but covered with a Roof, in the Middle whereof is the Sultan's Throne, being a

wooden Chair gilded, and over it a large Canopy of Gold and Silver Brocade, and about the Room are seven or eight great Guns upon broken Carriages.

About eighteen Miles below *Caytongee* are two Wooden Castles, on which are twelve great Guns pointed down the River, the Works so out of Repair, that no Danger is to be apprehended from them.

The Town of *Matapora* is situate in a Part of the Country to which the Floods never reach, being about ten Miles from *Caytongee*, where the Prince of *Negaree* resides, who has a good Magazine of Fire-Arms, and some great Guns mounted before the Gates of his Palace.

The City of *Borneo* was formerly the Capital, being the Residence of the Sultan, then the most powerful Prince in the Island. It is situate on a fine Bay of the Sea, in the North-West Part of the Island, in four Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude. This Town has not much Trade at present.

SUCCADANEA is situate on a commodious Bay in the South-West Part of the Island, in one Degree of South Latitude, and was formerly more resorted to by the *Europeans* than any Port. The Island of *Borneo* is divided into a great many Governments, which have each of them their Sultan or Sovereign, the most powerful whereof is at present the Emperor of *Caytongee*, who is probably the richest; most of the Pepper Plantations being within his Territories, which brings a Multitude of foreign Merchants thither. The Mouth of the River *Benjar*, or rather *Tatas*, is now one of the greatest Marts in the *Indian Seas*, where most of the Produce of *Asia* and *Europe* may be met with. As to the Sultan's Forces by Land, they appear to be very indifferent Militia; I don't find he has any Standing-Army, and the Fortifications of his Towns and Castles are very mean. Here are no Ships of War, nor many Merchant-Ships belonging to the Country; but they have swift-sailing Vessels, like those in the *Ladrone Islands*, which will sail above twenty Miles an Hour.

This Island, no doubt, was first peopled from the neighbouring Continent of *India* and *China*. The *Arabians* and *Egyptians*, 'tis probable, succeeded the first Inhabitants, as the *Portuguese* found them Masters of this Coast and of
the

the Coasts of the adjacent Islands; when they arrived here, and had driven the first Possessors up the Mountains, where they still remain, being divided into numerous Tribes, under their respective Chiefs, and not subject to the *Banjareens* on the Coast. The Arms of the *Bycys*, or Mountaineers, are their Crice or Dagger, and the Sampit, which is a Trunk or Tube about six Foot long, through which they blow the little poisoned Darts, mentioned in the Island of *Celebes*; and at the End of the Sampit is fixed a Kind of Bayonet, which serves them instead of a Spear, and is sometimes thrown as a Lance.

THE new *English East-India Company*, in the Year 1700, sent Captain *Coatsworth*, in the *Julian*, to settle a Factory at *Banjer Masseen*, appointing Mr. *Landan* President, and four other Merchants to be of his Council, if the Design should succeed.

AT their Arrival they made some considerable Presents to the Sultan of *Caytongee*, and received his Chop or Great Seal, for a Licence to trade, and to erect such Houses at *Banjar* as should be necessary to lay their Goods in; and soon after provided themselves with three Lantings or floating Houses, and another erected on Pillars or the Bodies of Trees, several Feet above the muddy Shore, which was usually flooded at High-Water.

AT this Time there were three hundred such floating Houses, ranged on each Side the River, inhabited by *Chinese*, *Malays*, *Macassars*, and native *Banjareens*; but the Natives removed higher up the River to *Tatas* on the Arrival of the *English*; the rest remained at *Banjar*, to the Number of two hundred Families; and of this floating Town Mr. *Landan*, the *English* President, was looked upon as Governor. The *English* Factors traded with the *Banjareens* for three Years, without any Disturbance; but then the Natives having about twenty thousand Dollars of the Company's Money in their Hands, upon a Promise to deliver their Factors the Value in Pepper; the *Banjareens* sold the Pepper, they had agreed to deliver the *English* to the *Chinese*, and when the Injustice of this Practice was represented to them, the Natives pretended they had lost their Crop, and were not in a Capacity to deliver the Pepper; and as the shortest Way to wipe off the

Score, secretly plotted to destroy the *English* Settlement, of which their Factors being informed, did not give much Credit to the Report, till they saw one Morning great Numbers of Boats and *Guntings*, Vessels of about forty Tuns Burthen, full of armed Men, prepared for an Engagement; and though the *Banjareens* did not think fit to attack the *English* at that Time, they came to an Anchor a little Distance from them.

THE Ship *Borneo*, Captain *Barre* Commander, being in the River of *Banjar* at this Time, the President consulted with him upon the Occasion, and they agreed, for their mutual Safety, to hire as many of the *Macassar* Soldiers out of their Prows as they could (for there were not above sixty *Englishmen* in the Ship and Factory.) Having manned a *Gunting*, therefore, and mounted two great Guns upon her, and waited two or three Days in Expectation the *Banjareens* would have attacked them; they advanced towards the Enemy, but were soon stopped by a Boom, or Chain, which the Natives had laid cross the River, a little under Water, and fastened to the Trees on the Sides; however, the *Macassar* Soldiers soon unfastened it, and the little Fleet moved forwards, whereupon the *Banjareens* discharged several great Guns at them; but being ill Marks-men did them no Mischief. The *English* advancing still, fired some Shot, and the *Banjareens* fled before them; but two of their largest Vessels, not being able to keep up with the rest, fell into the Hands of the *English*, and the Men on board jumped into the River, and escaped to Shore. Two Days after the *English* arrived at *Tanas*, ten Miles up the *China* River, which they found deserted by the Natives, and every Thing of Value carried off, except some Pepper, which Captain *Barre* brought on board; and then setting Fire to the Town, the *English* returned to *Banjar*.

No Enemy appearing, Captain *Barre*, about ten Days afterwards, sailed up the great River *Banjar*, with some large armed Vessels, attended by forty Prows, or *Macassar* Boats, and arrived within ten Miles of the Town of *Negaree*, which lies between two and three hundred Miles up that River, he discovered the Enemy had built a Kind of floating Castle upon the Water, one hundred Foot long,

long, and forty broad, with two Decks, having four Iron and two Brass Guns mounted on the lower Deck, and sixty Patereroes on the upper Deck; the Sides of this Castle being near a Yard thick, walled with Ratans, like Basket-Work, which covered their Men both from great and small Shot, the *Banjareens* began to fire at a great Distance, and seemed resolved to dispute the Passage of the River: Captain *Barre* advanced, however, without firing, till he came very near their floating Castle, when he was so fortunate as to fire into their Port-Holes, dismount one of their Guns, and killed several of their Men, which so frightened the *Banjareens*, that they fled out of the Machine, through the opposite Port-Holes, unperceived, and hid themselves in the Woods. The Captain observing their Fire ceased, advanced close to the Machine with some Caution; and hearing no Noise, he ventured to board the floating Castle, and became Master of it; but not thinking it prudent to advance further, returned to *Banjar* with the Prize, which was so unwieldy, that they spent a Fortnight in bringing it down the River. The President, who remained with the Ship *Borneo* at *Banjar*, to secure the Factory from any Surprise, presented the Captain with the two Brass Guns he had taken, and the Captain brought them to *England* on his Return thither.

THE *English* Factors now reflecting, that notwithstanding their Success, it could never be the Interest of their Masters to remain in a State of War with the Natives, as they must expect no further Trade with them while it continued, and beginning to be in great Distress for Provisions, having received none out of the Country since this Rupture, they sent a Letter, by some of the Prisoners they had taken, to the *Banjareens*, to demand the Reason of their treating them in that Manner they had done, when they had given them no Provocation. On the contrary, they had advanced them great Sums of Money for Goods, which they had not yet received; with their Letter they sent a considerable Present to the Sultan of *Caytongee*, desiring he would send a Boat with a white Flag to the Factory, if he thought fit to treat with them; but having waited some Time, and received no Answer, the President deter-

determined to try again what Force would do, and sailed up the River again, almost as far as *Cayonges*, when they discovered a Float, like the Wall of a Town, extended cross the River, with several great Guns upon it; but as they were advancing to it, a Prow came off, with a white Flag on board, wherein was an Officer, who acquainted the President, that the Sultan would send some of his Ministers to treat with him, if he would promise that they should return in Safety. The President promising to protect them, Commissioners arrived, among whom was the Sultan's Son, without so much as requiring Hostages; and entering upon a Treaty, it was agreed, that the *Banjareens* should pay the Charges of the War, and deliver Pepper in lieu of the Money the *English* had advanced, without requiring any Duties or Customs for the future, according to the former Grant for a free Trade; the whole Demand amounting to forty thousand Dollars: Which Treaty was ratified by the Sultan and the Musti, or chief Priest.

THIS Agreement was ill observed on the Part of the *Banjareens*; for, pretending the Season had been very bad for Pepper, they never delivered more than fifteen Coyang, worth about one thousand Dollars; and the Factors seeing no Probability of getting more, they embarked for *Batavia*, from whence the President went to *Bengal*, and Captain *Barre* to *England* in the *Borneo*.

STILL the *East-India* Company were of Opinion, that *Banjar* was the most advantageous Situation in *India* to settle a Factory at, because there they met the Ships of the *Chinese*, from whom they might have the Merchandize of their Country on easier Terms than at *Canton*; and they did not doubt but they would settle there, rather than at *Batavia*, if the Company was in a Condition to protect them; and as to the Trade of *Borneo*, Gold, Bezoar, Camphire, Pepper and Precious Stones were the Produce of the Country, and the People of *Macassar* would sometimes bring over Cloves and Nutmegs clandestinely, without the Knowledge of the *Dutch*, and *Banjar* might become as considerable a Mart for the *English*, as *Batavia* was for the *Hollanders*.

IN the Year 1704, therefore, several Ships were equipped

ped for *Borneo*; and *Rojet*, who was one of the Council in the former Voyage, was sent President of the intended Factory in this, and was very acceptable to the *Banjareens*, especially as he made no Demand of the old Arrear. The Natives, therefore, continued to trade with the Factory a considerable Time; but the Company understanding, that if a Fort could be erected on the firm Land, and they had a Strength there sufficient to protect the *Chinese* and other Nations, this Settlement might be vastly improved; they sent over Captain *Barre* again, who was well acquainted with the Country, and a good Engineer, with Directions to build a Fort at *Banjar*; and the Captain, in Pursuance of his Orders, carried over what was necessary to fortify the Place; and *Rojet* dying, was succeeded by Captain *Barre*, as President.

THE Captain hereupon imported great Quantity of Earth and Stone, and drove down some Thousands of Piles or great Trees, to make a Foundation for the designed Fort, the Place being a perfect Morass, and without raising the Ground, he could not secure his Works from the Flood. He also employed some of the *Chinese* to make Bricks at *Tomborneo*, which is situate eighty Miles East of the River *Banjar*, where the Company had a House, and at the same Time agreed with a *Dutchman* on the North Coast of *Java*, to supply him with Timber, which the *Dutchman*, to prevent being discovered, desired might be sent for by the *China* Junks, that the Government of *Batavia* might not suspect for what it was designed. It is no inconsiderable Advantage to the *English* Company, that the *Dutch* Officers and Governors in *India* have more Regard to their private Interests, than to that of their Masters. There are not many of them, provided they can be concealed, but will deal with our People for a small Profit, otherwise the Traffick of the *English* to *India* would be much worse than it is.

WHILE the Fort was building at *Banjar*, a *Chinese* Junk coming thither with Timber, happened to be cast away at *Bendava*, a little West of *Banjar* River, which the Vice-roy of that Province understanding was designed for *Banjar* Fort, seized the Ship, and caused all the *Chinese* he found on board to be murdered in his Presence; only one of them

them escaped to *Banjar*, and gave this tragical Account of their Voyage.

The President hereupon complained to the Sultan of this barbarous Insult, but he denied he knew any Thing of it, declaring it was not done by his Order; and that if *Gooftee Canton*, the Governor of *Mendow*, could be brought to Justice, he should be punished for it; but that he was a desperate Man, and it would be difficult to apprehend him. Not long after *Gooftee* went to the Court of *Caytorgee*, and the Factors applied themselves to the Sultan again to do them Justice; he answered, that *Gooftee* brought such Numbers of armed Men with him, that he could not be apprehended. The President therefore receiving Intelligence, that *Gooftee* was to go by Water from *Tatas* to *Banjar* River, he armed his Pinnace, and several of the *Macassar* Praws, and lay in a convenient Part of the River to intercept him, and soon after discovering *Gooftee* and several Vessels belonging to the Sultaneffs, which came leisurely down the Stream, as if they apprehended no Danger, he waited till they came near him; but then they plied their Oars so well that they soon got out of his Reach, neither the Pinnace or *Macassar* Praws could come near them; the Captain thereupon firing a Piece or two after them, a Ball happened to enter the Prow the Sultaneffs was in, on board of which *Gooftee* had put himself, as believing the *English* would not have attacked the Sultaneffs, and it is pretended indeed that they did not know the Sultaneffs was upon the River; however, this Outrage, as the *Banjareens* termed it, the Sultan would never forgive, and from this Day 'tis said the *Bandaneffs* determined to extirpate the *English* the first Opportunity that presented itself, though they did not shew their Repentment till afterwards. The President proceeding in fortifying *Banjar*, had made firm Ground to build the Fort upon, erected fine Barracks for the Soldiers, and over them handsome Apartments for the Factors; the Bastions for the Fort also were marked out (being designed for a Pentagon,) and as the Place was surrounded with Water, the whole Power of the *Banjareens* could not have taken it, if the brave Captain *Barre* had lived; but unfortunately for the *English* Company, he died before he had enjoyed the Presidentship a Year, the Com-
mand

mand devolving on the second in Council, who took upon him the Command, and pursued the Steps of his Predecessor about four Months, when the unfortunate *Cunningham* arrived, who had just escaped from the Massacre of *Poole Condore*, having been appointed by the Company President of *Banjar*, and entered on this Command in the Year 1706, which he had not enjoyed six Months, before he received Advice, that all the *Banjareens* were in Arms, with a Design to drive the *English* from their Coasts.

Two *East-India* Ships lay at this Time in the River of *Banjar*, viz. the *Blenheim* and the *Carlton*. *Cunningham*, the President, not thinking himself safe in the half-built Fort, constantly lay on board the *Blenheim*. He seemed to have nothing else in his View but to save one; he neither took the *Macassar* Soldiers into his Pay, or hired any Vessels to defend the Factory, but left the Care of it to the third in Council, who being attacked by the *Banjareens*, bravely repulsed them. The *Carlton* being boarded at the same Time, the Seamen shut themselves up in close Quarters, and cleared the Decks of the *Banjareens*, with their small Arms. Captain *Philips* only, who upon a Point of Honour, would not quit the Quarter-Deck, was killed, and the *Banjareens*, who had done nothing more than fired the Town, and murdered the unarmed Inhabitants, would probably have abandoned the Enterprize, if the Ships had kept their Stations; *Cunningham* imagining it was in vain to make any further Resistance, ordered the *English* to set Fire to the Factory, and come on board, and then commanded the Ships to cut their Cables and fall down the River, which they did with such Precipitation, that they left their Top-Masts, great Part of their Rigging, and Provisions behind them, abandoning also fifty poor unarmed Slaves, that served the Workmen in the Fort, to be cut in Pieces. The *Chinese* and most of the other Inhabitants, that imagined they were safe under the Protection of the *English*, also were murdered in cold Blood. Thus the *East-India* Company lost this important Post, by making Choice of one to command in it, who was no Military Man, and by Profession an Apothecary.

THE second in Council, who had been for some Time at *Tomborneo* for the Recovery of his Health, found the

them escaped to *Banjar*, and gave this tragical Account of their Voyage.

THE President hereupon complained to the Sultan of this barbarous Insult, but he denied he knew any Thing of it, declaring it was not done by his Order; and that if *Gooftee Ganton*, the Governor of *Mendavy*, could be brought to Justice, he should be punished for it; but that he was a desperate Man, and it would be difficult to apprehend him. Not long after *Gooftee* went to the Court of *Caytongee*, and the Factors applied themselves to the Sultan again to do them Justice; he answered, that *Gooftee* brought such Numbers of armed Men with him, that he could not be apprehended. The President therefore receiving Intelligence, that *Gooftee* was to go by Water from *Tatas* to *Banjar* River, he armed his Pinnace, and several of the *Macassar* Praws, and lay in a convenient Part of the River to intercept him, and soon after discovering *Gooftee* and several Vessels belonging to the Sultaneffs, which came leisurely down the Stream, as if they apprehended no Danger, he waited till they came near him; but then they plied their Oars so well that they soon got out of his Reach, neither the Pinnace or *Macassar* Praws could come near them; the Captain thereupon firing a Piece or two after them, a Ball happened to enter the Prow the Sultaneffs was in, on board of which *Gooftee* had put himself, as believing the *English* would not have attacked the Sultaneffs, and it is pretended indeed that they did not know the Sultaneffs was upon the River; however, this Outrage, as the *Banjareens* termed it, the Sultan would never forgive, and from this Day 'tis said the *Bandanese* determined to extirpate the *English* the first Opportunity that presented itself, though they did not shew their Resentment till afterwards. The President proceeding in fortifying *Banjar*, had made firm Ground to build the Fort upon, erected fine Barracks for the Soldiers, and over them handsome Apartments for the Factors; the Bastions for the Fort also were marked out (being designed for a Pentagon,) and as the Place was surrounded with Water, the whole Power of the *Banjareens* could not have taken it, if the brave Captain *Barre* had lived; but unfortunately for the *English* Company, he died before he had enjoyed the Presidentship a Year, the Com-
mand

mand devolving on the second in Council, who took upon him the Command, and pursued the Steps of his Predecessor about four Months, when the unfortunate *Cunningham* arrived, who had just escaped from the Massacre of *Pools Condore*, having been appointed by the Company President of *Banjar*, and entered on this Command in the Year 1706, which he had not enjoyed six Months, before he received Advice, that all the *Banjareens* were in Arms, with a Design to drive the *English* from their Coasts.

Two *East-India* Ships lay at this Time in the River of *Banjar*, viz. the *Blenheim* and the *Carlton*. *Cunningham*, the President, not thinking himself safe in the half-built Fort, constantly lay on board the *Blenheim*. He seemed to have nothing else in his View but to save one; he neither took the *Macassar* Soldiers into his Pay, or hired any Vessels to defend the Factory, but left the Care of it to the third in Council, who being attacked by the *Banjareens*, bravely repulsed them. The *Carlton* being boarded at the same Time, the Seamen shut themselves up in close Quarters, and cleared the Decks of the *Banjareens*, with their small Arms. Captain *Philips* only, who upon a Point of Honour, would not quit the Quarter-Deck, was killed, and the *Banjareens*, who had done nothing more than fired the Town, and murdered the unarmed Inhabitants, would probably have abandoned the Enterprize, if the Ships had kept their Stations; *Cunningham* imagining it was in vain to make any further Resistance, ordered the *English* to set Fire to the Factory, and come on board, and then commanded the Ships to cut their Cables and fall down the River, which they did with such Precipitation, that they left their Top-Masts, great Part of their Rigging, and Provisions behind them, abandoning also fifty poor unarmed Slaves, that served the Workmen in the Fort, to be cut in Pieces. The *Chinese* and most of the other Inhabitants, that imagined they were safe under the Protection of the *English*, also were murdered in cold Blood. Thus the *East-India* Company lost this important Post, by making Choice of one to command in it, who was no Military Man, and by Profession an Apothecary.

THE second in Council, who had been for some Time at *Tomborneo* for the Recovery of his Health, found the

two Ships lying at the Mouth of the River like Wrecks, and one of them aground, and was informed that *Banjar* was lost, which had been so long fortifying with infinite Labour, and a vast Expence, by the President's Order, before the Factory was in any Danger, and not twenty *Englishmen* lost in the whole Action.

THE *Banjareens* being elated with Success, grew bold, and falling down the River attacked the *Blenheim*, but of three hundred Men that boarded her, very few escaped; however, as there was now no Hopes of resettling the Factory, without being reinforced from *England*, *Cunningham*, the President, sailed to *Batavia*, and from thence to *Bengal*, where he embarked on board the *Anne Indiaman* for *England*, which Ship foundered, or was otherwise lost in her Passage, *Cunningham* sharing the Fate of the rest of the Crew; and I should have remembered, that all the *Chinese*, who were making Bricks at *Tamborneo*, with two *English* Soldiers who remained there with them, were cut in Pieces soon after the *Banjar* Factory was destroyed.

ABOUT seventeen or eighteen Years after this Misfortune, two *Indiamen*, one of them commanded by Captain *Beckford*, arrived at *Borneo*, and the Captain was so fortunate as to procure an Audience of the Sultan of *Caytongee*, being introduced by the Prince of *Negaree*. When he came to his Audience, he was directed to sit down upon a Carpet, about ten Foot before the Throne, and soon after the Sultan came in, dressed in a Vest and Breeches, not unlike a Rope-Dancer's, with scarlet Stockings and Slippers, an Atlice Gown wrought with Gold and Silver, and a rich Crice, or Dagger, set with Diamonds, in his Sash. On the Sultan's Coming into the Hall of Audience, the Captain and the rest of the *English* Gentlemen rose up very unluckily; for this was the greatest Affront they could have been guilty of. The Sultan's great Officers fell down on their Faces as they sat. They always approach their Prince on their Knees, bowing to the Ground when they come near him, and when they retire they creep back as they advanced.

THE Sultan having viewed the *English* Gentlemen, after some Pause bid them welcome, and thanked them for their Present, and enquired if those were Company's Ships
they

they came in, which they flatly denied, apprehending they should have been used ill if they had been known. The Sultan proceeded to shew his Resentment against the Company's Factors, who came thither, he said, under Pretence of trafficking with his People, and instead of building a Warehouse, erected a Castle, mounted Cannon upon it, and insulted his Subjects, which he had borne a great while; but their Insolence was such, that he was at length compelled to demolish their Castle and expel them his Country. The Audience being over, the Gentlemen were entertained in the Sultan's Palace, the Dinner served up in Gold and Silver Dishes, and set on the Carpet, without any Linnen. It consisted of Pilau (Rice and Fowls) coloured with Turmeric, Curree, or strong Soup, made of Fish or Flesh, broiled Fowls, Beef and Venison; but they have no other Liquor than Water, the Mahometans drinking no strong Liquors. The King's Musick playing during the Entertainment, and the *English* Trumpets in the Intervals, with which the Sultan was extremely pleased. After Dinner, little Boards were brought in with the Betel Leaf and Arek Nut, which they chew great Part of the Day; and some of the Sultan's Dancing Girls being sent for, four beautiful Virgins, about seventeen Years of Age, made their Appearance; they were cloathed in silk Vests, with gilded Coronets round their Temples, their Hair falling gracefully on their Shoulders; their naked Arms and Legs were painted yellow, and they had Bracelets of Gold on their Arms and Legs. These advanced towards the Throne, prostrated themselves on their Faces before the Emperor three Times, and then began what was called a Dance, throwing themselves into various Postures, some of them wanton enough, but scarce ever lifted their Feet, from the Ground. After the Company had been entertained thus about an Hour, the Girls prostrated themselves again three Times before the Throne, and then retired, and the *English* were soon after dismissed.

THE *East-India* Ships that have been sent over since, are forced to conceal that they have any Relation to the Company, 'tis said; but I am rather inclined to believe, that the Natives don't care to be too inquisitive about the Matter, receiving for the most Part Silver for the Produce.

of

of their Country. They chuse therefore to wink at what they can't well be ignorant of, as so many other Nations trade thither who are our Rivals, and would not fail to let them into the Secret: It is evident to me, that the *Banjareens* would be glad to traffick with any *Europeans* where their Liberties are not endangered by it. The *Portuguese* formerly, and the *Dutch* after them, began to erect Forts in their Country, but the Natives would not bear it. They have seen the *Dutch* enslave the adjacent Islands of *Celebes*, *Java*, &c. and they cannot but apprehend Danger therefore, when they see Foreigners attempting to fortify their Settlements.

A TRAVELLER who resided some Years in *Borneo*, is of Opinion, that the *Byayo's*, or Mountaineers of that Island, are as savage a People as they are usually represented to be. Their very Countenances, he thinks, shews it, and they will never have any Friendship, or even Conversation with Foreigners, though they come down to *Banjar* often, and sell them Hogs, Fowls, and other Provision; and if they meet with a poor Fisherman, or any defenceless People upon the River, they seldom fail to take their Heads; those that have killed most Men, being in the greatest Esteem in their Country; but as I understand him, he means those of another Religion or Nation: There are none but *Europeans* and Christians that look upon the taking away the Life of a Friend or Acquaintance in a Duel, to be an heroick Action.

THE *English*, I perceive, affect to be very much afraid of the *Byayo's*, though they usually run away from them when they meet in the River, and get into the Woods, where they will maintain a Tree-Fight sometimes; that is, they skulk behind great Trees, and shoot Darts at their Enemies, and then run away; but will seldom meet an Enemy in a fair Field, any more than any other *Indians*, unless they have a very great Superiority.

THE *Byayo's* are all Pagans, whose Rites differ but little from those of the Pagans on the neighbouring Continent; and the Inhabitants of the Sea-Coasts are for the most Part Mahometans; they have both of them a great deal of Superstition, pretending to charm away Diseases, and to foretel future Events, and the like.

BOTH

BOTH Pagans and Mahometans allow of a Plurality of Wives and Concubines in this Country; but as to their Ceremonies of Marriage, and the Solemnity of their Funerals, both of the Mahometans and Pagans, these have been described in Part already.

C H A P. IV.

Contains a Description of the Islands of Sumatra and Java.

SUMATRA is one of the *Sunda* Islands, situate in the *Indian* Ocean, between ninety-three and one hundred and four Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between five Degrees and a half North Latitude, and five Degrees and a half South Latitude, the Equinoctial Line running crosses the Middle of it; having *Malacca* on the North, *Borneo* on the East, *Java* on the South-East, and the *Indian* Ocean on the West, and is nine hundred Miles long, and about one hundred and fifty broad. The Air is generally unhealthful near the Coast, the Country being very hot, and very moist, and changing suddenly from sultry Heat in the Day-Time, to cold chilling Winds in the Night.

THERE are no Physicians in *Sumatra*, but they rely upon the Skill and Experience of some good old Women, who are acquainted with the Nature of their Simples. The Flux is the Distemper that usually carries off Foreigners, against which the Fruit Guava and the Pomgranate are certain Remedies, if taken before the Distemper becomes violent; but most other Fruits promote the Disease. Bathing in the cold Water is esteemed another Remedy for the Flux. Their Water, unboiled, as well as Sherbet, is very unwholesome; full Meals of Flesh ought to be avoided, occasioning a Distemper called the *Mori Dublin*, which is attended with a violent Vomiting and Purging, and usually carries off the Patient in twenty-four Hours. Those Gentlemen that drink strong Liquors to Excess, usually avoid the Flux, but are carried off by Fevers. The Cholic and Small-Pox are often fatal to the Natives, as well

as Foreigners; but they are seldom troubled with Dropfies, Gout, or Stone.

PEOPLE that are careful of their Health, eat and drink moderately, and boil their Water; nor do they avoid Wine or Arrack Punch altogether, for these drank moderately in this moist Air preserve, rather than destroy Health.

A CHAIN of Mountains runs the whole Length of the Island, from the North-Weft to the South-Eaft, and here the Air is something better than on the Coaft; but the *European* Factories are generally fituated at the Mouths of Rivers near the Sea, for the Conveniency of Trade, and here three Years may be reckoned a long Life, the falt stinking Ouse fends up fuch an unwholefome Vapour, that it perfectly poifons Foreigners that are fent thither.

THE Monfons, or periodical Winds, fhift here at the Equinoxes, as they do in other Parts of the *Indian* Seas, blowing fix Months in one Direction, and fix Months in the oppofite Direction; and near the Coaft there are other periodical Winds, which blow the greateft Part of the Day from the Sea, and in the Night-Time and Part of the Morning from the Land; but these fcarce extend feven Miles from the Coaft.

THERE is a Mountain called *Singledemond*, about forty Miles South-Eaft of *Bencoolen*, which is a Mile in Height perpendicular; those near the Weft Coaft are generally barren Rocks, producing little befides Shrubs; but towards the Bottom of them grows fome good Timber. The Country has a great many fmall Rivers, but none of them navigable much beyond their Mouths, falling from high Mountains, and difcharging themselves precipitately into the Sea, either on the Eaft or Weft, after a very fhort Courfe; the Rains continuing here, as they do in moft Places near the Equinoctial, fix Months every Year and upwards, and no where with more Violence. The Waters of the River *Indapocra*, during Rains, look red for two Miles beyond the Mouth out at Sea, occafioned, 'tis faid, by the great Number of Oaks that grow in their boggy Grounds, and are almoft covered when the Floods are higheft. The Waters of all their Rivers, which overflow the Low-Countries, are very unwholefome, foul, and
not

not fit to be drank till they are settled, nor indeed till they have been boiled, and Tea or some other wholesome Herbs infused in them; and this, no doubt, is one Reason of the Unwholesomness of the Air, it being a very just Observation, that wherever the Water is bad, the Air is so too.

SUMATRA was antiently divided into a great many Kingdoms and States, as it is at present, of which *Achen* was the most considerable, and had some Influence over the rest; and the King of *Achen* is still the most powerful Prince in the Island, and the North Part of it is in a Manner subject to him.

ACHEN City is also still the Capital of this Kingdom, and of the whole Island, being situate in ninety three Degrees thirty Minutes East Longitude, and five Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude, about one thousand Miles South-East of *Fort St. George* in the *Hither India*. The City stands in a Plain, surrounded by Woods and Bogs, something more than a Mile distant from the Sea; it is an open Town, and the King's Palace stands in the Middle of it. Great Banks of Earth, instead of a Wall, are cast up round about the Palace, and planted with Canes and Reeds, that grow to such a Height that they cover the Palace, and render it inaccessible: It is about a Mile and a half in Circumference; a Rivulet runs through it, lined with Stone, in which they usually bathe. Though *Achen* has no Wall for its Defence, the Country round about it is so surrounded by Marshes and thick Woods of Cane and Bamboo, which are not easily cut, and little Forts erected at proper Distances, that an Enemy would find a great deal of Difficulty to come at it. The King has a great Number of standing Forces, but his Elephants are what he most depends on; these are taught to trample upon Fire, and not to dread the Noise of Cannon.

THE City contains seven thousand Houses and upwards, which are not contiguous, each House being surrounded by a Palisadoe, which stands some Distance from it, except some Streets where the Markets are kept, and where Foreigners inhabit, who chuse to live near one another, to defend themselves from Thieves, Robberies being very common here. Most of their Houses are erected upon Pillars ten Foot high, the Waters overflowing the Streets

in the Time of the Rains. The Houses are built of split Cane or Bamboo, and floored with the same, and every one has a Stone Vault to secure his Treasure and most valuable Effects; their Houses being built of such combustible Materials, that it is almost impossible to put a Stop to a Fire, if there happens to be any Wind. Their Mosques, or Mahometan Temples, are built of Stone, and very numerous, but small Buildings. Factors both from the *European* and *Afhalick* Countries reside here, but the *Chinese* are more numerous than any of the rest.

PEDIR is situate about thirty Miles East of *Achen*, *Pecim* and *Dely* farther to the South-East, once Capitals of Kingdoms, but not very considerable at present. *Jamby* is situate on a River on the East-Side of the Island, about fifty Miles from the Sea, in two Degrees South Latitude, and is the Capital of all the *Dutch* Settlements on this Coast. *Palamban*, another considerable Town on this Coast, is situate in four Degrees South Latitude.

Upon the West Coast of *Sumatra*, the first *English* Settlement, coming from the South, is *Sillebar*, which stands at the Mouth of a River on a fine Bay, in four Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

BENCOOLEN, the principal *English* Settlement on this Coast, is situate in one hundred and one Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and four Degrees South Latitude. The Seamen know it by a high Mountain, of a pyramidal Form, about twenty Miles within the Land, called the Sugar-Loaf. The Town is two Miles in Circumference, inhabited chiefly by the Natives, who build their Houses on Pillars, on account of the annual Floods. The *English*, *Chinese*, and *Portuguese* have each their several Quarters, and all build with Wood, as the Place is subject to Earthquakes. This is a most unhealthful Place, Multitudes of *English* have perished here; Deaths are so frequent and so much expected, that they cease to be terrible. The Soldiers would sit singing over a Bowl of Punch, inciting one another to drink upon that Consideration, that Tomorrow, or in a very short Time, they must die; and in other Parts of *India*, where the Writer of these Sheets has been, he has seen People taking Leave of their Friends at the Approach of Death, with as little Concern as if they were

were setting out of a Journey. An Officer, who was sent from *Fort St. George* with a Company of eighty Men to *Bencoolen*, in the Prime of their Age, assured me, at his Return between two or three Years after, that there was not one of the Men he carried over left alive; and these frequent Scenes of Mortality, I presume, induced the *East-India* Company to erect another Fort in a more healthful Place, which was named *Fort Marlbro*, being built about the Time of that General's Successes in *Flanders*, in the Reign of Queen *Anne*.

FORT Marlbro stands on a dry elevated Situation, about three Miles South-East of *Bencoolen*, and is so much more healthful, that one of their Governors assured me, that for the Space of a Year they did not bury one Man.

THERE are several other Port-Towns on the West Coast of *Samatra*, North of *Bencoolen*, particularly *Bantall*, another *English* Settlement; *Indrapour* and *Padang*, *Dutch* Settlements; *Tecon* and *Passaman*, almost under the Equinoctial. The King of *Achen* seems to have the Dominion of all the Towns North of the Equinoctial, particularly of *Bataban*, *Barros* and *Daga*.

THE Natives are of a moderate Stature, swarthy Complexions, seldom corpulent, and have black Hair and black Eyes, flat Faces, and high Cheek Bones, and take a great deal of Pains to dye their Teeth black, and rub themselves all over with Oil that smells very strong, and, like their Neighbours, let some of the Nails of their Left Hand grow as long as their Fingers, scraping them till they are transparent, and dying them with Vermillion. About their Heads they usually tie a Piece of blue or white Linen, or wear a Cap not much unlike the Crown of a Hat. The better Sort wear Drawers or Breeches, and a Piece of Calico or Silk wrapped about their Loins, and thrown over the Left Shoulder: They wear Sandals on their Feet in Towns, but usually travel bare-foot.

THE Genius of this People is not much admired; they are said to be a proud, heavy and indolent Generation, who neither endeavour to improve themselves in Arts and Sciences, or in Husbandry, letting great Part of the Country lie uncultivated, and their Manufactures neglected.

THE Produce of *Sumatra* is Pepper, Rice, Sugar, Camphire, Gold-Dust, Bezoar, Canes and Cotton. The Soil is a deep fruitful Mould, well watered with Rivulets; but near the Sea are Abundance of Bogs and Marishes, which produce only Reeds and Bamboo Canes.

THEIR Fruits are Cocoa Nuts, Limes, Oranges, Mangoes, Plantains, Guava's, Jacks, Durions, Pine-apples, Mangosteens, and other tropical Fruits; they have also Melons, Peas, Beans, Potatoes, Yams, Radishes, Pot-herbs, Sallads, and Plenty of all Manner of Garden-Stuff. Bang also grows here, which is a Plant much like Hemp, and being infused in Liquor, makes People very merry, and often mad. Their Military Men take it often, when they are about to engage an Enemy, and throw away their Lives very foolishly, when they have intoxicated themselves with it. Opium has sometimes the like Effects on them.

GOLD is very plentiful in this Island; but it is brought down from the hilly inland Country; there is none found near the Sea Coasts. The Natives of the mountainous Part of the Country bring it down in Dust, and sometimes little Pieces like the Seeds of an Orange, weighing from half a Grain to two or three Penny-weights; and Mr. *Lockyer* relates, he once saw an entire Lump of an Ounce Weight; and it is sometimes found in the hardest Stones: He had seen a Stone of a Pound and a half Weight, which seemed to have been beaten off another Stone, to which it grew, and that there were Crannies in it, coloured and veined like white Marble: That it was very weighty, and there were several Branches of Gold shooting out of the Chinks and craggy Parts of it; the Rock Gold of *Achen*, known by its Brightness, is very fine.

As to Gold Mines there are none wrought in this Island, and I question if there are such Mines any where else. Gold seems to lie near the Surface, since nine Parts in ten of what we have is washed down from the Hills, and found in the Beds of Rivulets in the dry Season, when the Water is gone. That there are some Stones which contain Gold is not to be denied, but it is found in Pieces of Rock, that lie on or near the Surface; and there are Gold Veins in the *Lapis Lazuli*, but this Stone is so scarce, that it is as dear, if not dearer than Gold; and therefore it would not be worth while to break the Stone for the small Quantity

city of Gold it contains : But wherever their Gold is found, it is in Possession of the Mountaineers, who live towards the North ; for if there had been any Gold in the South, the *Dutch*, who possess that Part of the Country, would have monopolized that precious Mineral long before now. The Mountaineers who bring it down to *Achen* to sell don't make that Advantage of it they might. They exchange it for Rice, Cloathing, Tobacco, and other Provision, at a very moderate Price ; but the Natives of *Achen* and the *Malays*, who understand the Value of it, ask an extravagant Price for what they dispose of to Foreigners ; and that other Nations may be deterred from penetrating further into the Country, and trafficking with the Mountaineers directly, they are represented as Savages and Canibals, Monsters of the human Species ; and possibly the Natives of *Achen* represent Foreigners to those poor People in a Light no less shocking than they are described to us, that the *Acheneers* themselves may enjoy the sole Profit of this rich Trade.

THE Pepper Plant is of as great Advantage to this Island as their Gold : No Country has it in so great Plenty. These Plantations lie on the West Side of the Mountains, but scarce any of them within twenty Miles of the *English* Settlements ; the Pepper is brought down in Boats to their Factories. The Time of gathering the Pepper upon the West Coast is about *Michaelmas*, and they have another small Crop in *March*. In a dry Season they are forced to water the Pepper Grounds perpetually.

THEY have a small Breed of Horses in *Sumatra*, Buffaloes, Deer, Goats, Hogs, Tygers, Monkeys, Squirrels, Guanoes, Porcupines, Alligators, Serpents, Scorpions, Musketoos and other Insects. Here are also Hens, Ducks, and other Poultry ; Pigeons, Doves, Parrots, Parakeets, Maccaws and small Birds ; Sea and River Fish also are very plentiful, and Turtle or Sea-Tortoise. They have Elephants, but I think they are not Natives.

As to Food, Rice is much the greatest Part in all their Meals, strong Soup, made of Flesh or Fish, and a very little Meat high seasoned, serves to eat with their Rice. As to the Mahometans that inhabit the Coast, they abstain from Swine's Flesh, and from strong Liquors, as in

all Countries of the same Faith. As to the Mountaineers, they will eat any Kind of Flesh, but Beef, the Bull being one of the Objects of their Worship, and if we could give any Credit to their Neighbours, the People of *Achen*, they eat human Flesh; but the World is pretty well satisfied by this Time that there are no Nations of Canibals.

LEARNING is not to be expected here. The common Language is the *Malayan* Tongue, and the Alcoran and religious Books of the Mahometans are written in *Arabick*, which is now a dead Language.

THEY have the Use of Letters here, as they have in almost every other Eastern Nation except *China*; those Gentlemen were so self-sufficient, so much above being taught by People they look upon as their Inferiors, that they have now the least Pretence to Learning of any Nation on the Face of the Earth.

THE Mahometans of *Sumatra* speak and write the *Malayan* Language. The Pagan Mountaineers have a Language peculiar to themselves. As the *Malayans* write from the Right Hand to the Left, the Mountaineers write as we do, from the Left to the Right; and instead of Pen, Ink and Paper, they write, or rather engrave, with a Stile on the Outside of a Bamboo Cane; the *Malays*, indeed, use Ink and a coarse brown Paper. Both Nations are poor Accomptants, and are forced to make use of the *Banians* that reside amongst them as their Clerks, when they have any considerable Accounts to make up, the *Banians* being some of the sharpest Traders in the World.

THEIR Mechanicks and Artificers are very indifferent Workmen, except it be their Carpenters, who make their swift-sailing Prows, and their Cane Houses, which they build very dextrously: The Goldsmiths and Blacksmiths are bad Workmen as well as their Bricklayers. The *Chinese* who are settled here are good Mechanicks. Ten or twelve Sail of *Chinese* Junks arrive here every Year in *June*, bringing with them Rice and other Produce of their Country, and in this Fleet come over all Manner of Artificers, who go to work as soon as they arrive, making Tables, Cabinets, Chests of Drawers, and all Manner of Household Furniture, Utensils and Toys, and these they expose to Sale in a Street next the Sea, which is called
the

the *Chinese* Camp; for three or four Months this Street is crouded like a Fair, and if they can meet with good Chapmen, they will sell their very Ships, reserving only as many as will carry them Home. The Fair being over, the *Chinese* begin to game; if they are not at work, you will always find them with Cards or Dice in their Hands. The *Europeans* resort to their Camp to drink Hockshew, with which they are frequently very merry. It is a Sort of strong Beer, made of Wheat, and preferred by our People to any Liquor the Country affords.

As to the foreign Traffick of this Country, I have already observed, that the *Europeans* bring from thence chiefly Gold-Dust, Pepper, and Canes; that they meet with more Pepper here than in any Country in the World.

THE Pepper brought to the *English* Factory at *Bencoolen* grows in the Territories of two *Rajas*, or *Indian* Princes, one of them called *Pangaran Munco Raja*, whose Capital is at *Singledemond*, situate on a large Bay, ten Miles North of *Bencoolen*. The other of them has the Title of *Pangaran Songe Etam*, or Lord of the *Black River*, whose Capital is called *Busar*, situate ten Miles East of *Bencoolen*; both these have Houses at *Bencoolen*, in that Quarter called the *Malay* Town, and reside there when they have any Affairs to transact with the *English*, who pay these Princes two *Sooca's*, or half a Dollar Custom for every Bahar, containing five hundred and sixty Pound Weight of Pepper. And the *Pangarans*, in Consideration thereof, promise to promote the Planting of Pepper among their Tenants and Subjects, and bring their Fruit to the *English* Factories; and as soon as the Pepper is weighed and delivered by the Owners, the Factors immediately pay for it, after the Rate of ten Molocos or *Spanish* Dollars for every Bahar.

THE Coins of the Country are first Cash, or Pieces of Lead, one thousand five hundred of which make one Mas, valued at fifteen Pence, which is a gold Coin. A Pollum or Copang is a Quarter of a Mas, sixteen Mas is one Tael, which is an imaginary Coin, and equivalent to twenty Shillings Sterling; Dollars and other *Spanish* Coins also are current here.

As to their Weights, five Tael make a Buncal, twenty Buncal one Catty, and one hundred Catty one Pecul, one Pecul being one hundred and thirty-two Pounds *English*, three Peculs are a *China* Bahar of three hundred and ninety-six Pound *China* Weight; and of *Malay* Weight, at *Achen* four hundred and twenty-two Pound fifteen Ounces, and at *Bencoolen* and the rest of the West Coast a Bahar is five hundred Pound great Weight, or five hundred and sixty Pound *English*.

THEY make their Payments oftener in Pieces of Gold at *Achen* than in Coin; and therefore the Rate you intend to receive and pay Gold at, and the Catty you buy and sell by must be expressed in the Contract. It would be very tedious receiving one thousand Pound in Gold Mas; for Brass, mixed Metals, and Silver gilt are frequently mixed with them: Nor can the Money-Changers, who are employed to examine them, avoid being deceived sometimes; but if they do receive any that are bad, they are obliged to make them good to the Person that employs them.

I HAVE already observed, that there are several States and Principalities in this Island, differently constituted, of which that of *Achen* is the chief, comprehending the North Part of the Island.

THIS Kingdom, some Writers assure us, has been ever governed by Queens, others affirm, that there never was a Queen Regent here; I believe we may take the middle Way, and allow that it has been subject both to Kings and Queens: Certain it is, a King was upon the Throne when we first visited this Island, because we have his Letter which he wrote to Queen *Elizabeth*, and Kings have of late Years filled that Throne: There is another Difference among Writers in relation to the Constitution, some relating it is an absolute, and others a limited Monarchy: It is generally agreed, that there are several *Orancayas* or great Lords in this Part of the Island, that exercise sovereign Authority in their respective Territories, as the *German* Princes do; but these acknowledge the King of *Achen* their Superior, and accept of the great Offices in his Court; and as he sometimes displaces and deposes these, so there are Instances of their deposing one King and advancing another to the Throne. There have
been,

been great Struggles between the King of *Achen* and these Princes for sovereign Power; and if the King has been absolute in some Reigns, he has had a very limited Authority in others. As to a third Dispute, whether the Throne be hereditary or elective, it seems the King takes the Liberty to dispose of it to which of his Children he pleases, whether he be born of a Wife or a Concubine; and if the Prince does not dispose of it in his Life-Time, there are sometimes several Competitors for the Crown, and that Prince who is most favoured by the *Orancayas*, or Vassal Princes, usually carries his Point; and from thence the Crown is said to have been elective. Mr. *Lockyer*, the *Indian* Supercargo, who was at *Achen* about forty Years ago, relates that one of the *Orancayas* being charged with sodomitical Practices, and summoned to appear at *Achen* to answer the Charge, upon his refusing to appear the Sabander, or Governor of that City, sent a Detachment of the Guards to cut him in Pieces, which was executed before the House of an *English* Merchant, in the Streets of *Achen*; from whence he concludes, that the *Orancayas* are vested with an uncontrollable Power; but this Instance seems to me to infer the direct contrary; for *Achen* being the Seat of the Government, this Sabander was probably the King's Vice-Roy, and acted in this Case by his Authority, especially as it does appear that one *Orancaya* has not any Authority to censure or punish another.

As to the South Part of the Island, this is divided into Abundance of small Territories, each of them governed by their respective *Pangarans* or *Rajas*, with the Advice of the chief Men of the State, called *Proatens*; and every Town has a Governor appointed by the *Pangaran*, or chosen by the Inhabitants, and confirmed by the *Pangaran*; there are also some Towns upon the Coast vested with sovereign Power, and governed by their own Magistrates, called *Dato's*, of which *Bencoolen* has twelve, and *Sillebar* four, which do not seem to be subject to any of the *Pangarans* or *Rajas*.

THE Inhabitants of the Mountains are governed by the Chiefs of their respective Tribes, who are under a Necessity of maintaining a good Correspondence among themselves, in order to defend their Country against their powerful

powerful Neighbours; for as they are possessed of all the Gold the Island produces, there is no doubt but the Mahometan Princes that lie round them, would make an Effort to subdue those golden Mountains, if their Princes were at Variance: Or if they did not, the *Dutch* would find a Way to their Gold, if they should find their Chiefs divided; for the *Dutch* are possessed of several strong Places and Countries in the Island, which would be supported in such an Enterprize by Fleets and Forces from *Batavia* and *Malacca*, that lie but a very little Distance from them. The *Dutch* have subdued innumerable Kingdoms and Islands in the East. It is amazing that so inconsiderable a People have been able to grasp and keep so much. They don't want Avarice to put them upon subduing this Country as well as the rest; but they have acquired more already than they will be able to keep long, now so many *European* Powers are entered upon the *Indian* Trade; should they attempt more, it would infallibly hasten their Ruin; though we have been so very passive and indolent to let the ungrateful *Hollanders* enjoy our Spices so many Years, which they robbed us of, they will soon find other Nations putting in for a Share of them, which will be a general Benefit to this Part of the World; for if that Trade was laid open, we should purchase the fine Spices at a much more reasonable Rate than we do, from a People who destroy the Gifts of Heaven, lest other Nations should enjoy a Share of them, and would destroy all the Earth produces to enrich themselves.

THE Mahometans of *Sumatra* have no written Law but the Alcoran, and their Comments by their Priests, who are also the only Judges and Interpreters of those Laws. They are governed in their Decisions very much by Custom and ancient Precedents, as we are here. Death is the Punishment of Murder and Adultery, and every Man is an Executioner; the Criminal is stabbed by every one of the Assembly that can get near him, with their Crices or Daggers. Women are strangled with the Bow-String for capital Crimes; for Theft the Offender has some Joints of his Fingers and Toes cut off, and sometimes a Limb, according to the Heinousness of the Crime; and for the third Offence he is put to Death by Behead-

Beheading, Impaling, or the like. Some of the Kings of *Achen* are said to have inflicted the cruelest Tortures on their greatest Subjects on mere Suspicion. The *French* Admiral *Beaulieu* relates, that while he resided at *Achen*, the King sent for him to be Witness of an Execution of some of his own Women. They were tortured in the King's Presence for three Hours, which the Admiral could not avoid being an Eye-Witness of, and the King's Rage increasing with the Torture, he at length ordered their Hands and Legs to be cut off, and their Bodies to be thrown into the River; and this Barbarity was pretended to be exercised on a supposed Conspiracy against the King's Life, of which he had no other Proof but this; one of these Women, who lay in a Room adjoining to his Majesty's, shrieked out, and the King enquiring the Reason, they all agreed to tell him it was occasioned by a Mistake, but being threatened to be put to the Torture, if they concealed the true Reason, the Woman that shrieked out said somebody pushed a Dagger through the Reeds or Partition of the Room, and wounded her in the Thigh, which occasioned her crying out, and alarming the rest. The other Women did not agree with this, or with one another in their Answers; some said they heard a Noise, and others said they heard nothing; however the Dagger was found, and no Body could discover whose it was; and the King being able to get no satisfactory Account of the Matter, suspected there was a Design carrying on against his Life by his Mother, imagining she had alarmed the Women, and upon their crying out she supposed his Majesty would have come out to their Assistance, and given the Assassins she employed an Opportunity of murdering him; and in order to make a further Discovery, commanded five of the Women to be tortured by the Rack; but their Constancy was not to be moved, though the King made them repeated Offers of Pardon, if they would confess. One old Woman swooning from Time to Time, the King was so merciful as to order her to be put to Death for which she thanked him, and wished him a long and happy Reign. Some of the rest, after their Legs and Arms were cut off, declared, that they had long wished

wished for this happy Hour, which delivered them from the Drudgeries of the Palace.

THE King demanding of Mr. *Beaulieu* what he thought of this Execution, the Admiral was so terrified with the Cruelty of the Action, that he seemed to approve it by answering, *That without the Execution of Justice no Government could subsist.*

THE King has no other standing Forces than his Guards, but depends on his Militia, which are as numerous as the People in his Kingdom, able to bear Arms, who are all obliged to appear under Arms whenever they are summoned. As to fortified Towns and Castles, there are scarce any but what are natural; and the Country seems to be so inaccessible, that the Natives boast it has never been conquered by any foreign Power; but this must be a Mistake, for the present Generation, who are Masters of the North Part of the Island and the Sea-Coast, are not the original Inhabitants, but came from *Egypt* and *Arabia*, and having driven the Pagans up into the Mountains, succeeded them on the Sea-Coasts.

THE Mahometan Religion is professed at *Achen*, and upon all the Coast of *Sumatra*; but they are not such bigotted Zealots as they are in some other Mahometan Countries. Their Temples or Mosques are but meanly built, some of them no better than Cottages. The chief Priest resides at *Achen*, and has a great Influence on Affairs of State. Their Marriage Contracts are made before some Priest, and they are Judges in Cases of Divorce, as well as in all civil Causes. The Priest also assists at the Celebration of their Funeral Rites, as in other Mahometan States.

THIS, as well as the rest of the *Indian* Islands, was, no doubt, first peopled from the neighbouring Continent. The *Phœnicians*, *Egyptians*, and *Arabians* afterwards trafficked with them; and we find *Solomon* desiring *Hiram*, King of *Tyre*, to send him skilful Mariners to pilot his Fleet into these Seas; and the *Ophir* mentioned in Scripture, is supposed to be this very Island, from whence he fetched his Gold. The *Arabians* and other Nations bordering on the *Red-Sea*, afterwards planted Colonies here, and became so potent, that they drove the former Inhabitants

up

up into the Mountains, and possessed the Coast. The *Portuguese* found the Descendants of those Nations fixed on the Shores of the *Indian* Continent as well as the Islands when they arrived there.

THE *Portuguese* enjoyed the sole Traffick with this and the adjacent Islands for near one hundred Years, viz. from the Year 1500 almost to the Year of our Lord 1600, when other Nations followed them round the *Cape of Good Hope*, and put in for a Share of the *Indian* Trade.

THE *English East-India* Company having obtained a Charter, empowering them to trade to *India*, in the Year 1600, sent Captain *Lancaster*, stiled the General, Captain *Middleton*, and two Ships more, to traffick with the Natives of this Island, who arrived at *Achen* on the 5th of *June*, 1602, bringing with him a Letter from Queen *Elizabeth* to the King of *Achen*; Captain *Middleton* being deputed by the General to give the King Notice of his Arrival with the Queen's Letter, his Majesty invited the General to come on Shore, which he did, and the King ordered one of his Ministers, with six Elephants, and a large Retinue, to attend his Excellence, and bring him to Court. The largest Elephant being fourteen Foot high, had a large Room upon his Back, something resembling the Body of a Coach, covered with Crimson Velvet, in the Middle whereof was a Gold Bason, in which the Queen's Letter was laid, and covered with a Piece of rich Silk. The General being mounted on another Elephant, and his Retinue upon the rest, moved forward to the Palace Gate, where they were desired to wait till the King was acquainted with their Arrival; soon after which they dismounted, and were admitted to an Audience, wherein the General declared that he was come from the Most Mighty Queen of *England* to propose an Alliance with his Majesty, and being about to continue his Speech, the King desired him to sit down and rest himself after his tedious Voyage, told him he was welcome to his Country, and he might depend on his granting whatever he could reasonably demand in behalf of that noble Princess from whom he came, whose Fame had already reached to *India*. Then the Queen's Letter was presented to his Majesty, and the Present was set before the Throne, being a silver Bason with a Fountain

tain in the Middle of it, weighing two hundred Ounces, a silver Cup, a fine Looking-Glass, a Head-piece with a Plume of Feathers, a Sword with an embroidered Belt and Scabbard, a fine Pair of Pistols; and a Fan; the last seemed most acceptable, for he immediately ordered one of his Women to fan him with it.

THE Ambassador and the Gentlemen who attended him being afterwards desired to sit down on the Carpets, after the Manner of the East, a grand Dinner was introduced in Dishes of Gold or Tamback, being a Mixture of Gold and Brass, the King being seated on a Floor raised about six Foot above the Hall, in a Kind of Gallery; he frequently drank to the General a Glass of Arrack, and having pledged his Majesty once, he was left at Liberty to drink what Liquor he chose afterwards. The King's Women and the Musick being called, the Ladies danced, and the General being presented with a Vest of the Country Fashion, put it on immediately, and the Company retired.

THE Queen, in her Letter to the King of *Achen*, observes, that God had given different Fruits to different Countries, to promote an Intercourse between the several Inhabitants of the Earth, and the Fame of his Majesty's Humanity and Goodness to foreign Merchants had induced her to licence these her Subjects to visit his Kingdom (notwithstanding the Dangers that must attend so long a Voyage) and to offer to begin a Trade with his Subjects, which, if his Majesty approved of, he should have no Cause to repent; he might depend on their Truth and fair Dealing, and they should carry over such Goods as were most wanted in that Part of the World, and be better served than he had been by the *Portuguese* and *Spaniards*, her Enemies, who endeavoured to exclude all other Nations from this Traffick, pretending to have obtained the Sovereignty of these Kingdoms by Conquest. Whereas her Majesty was well apprised that the King had not only defended his Country against them, but carried the War into *Malacca*, where he had been victorious over those Powers: And if the King pleased to take into his Protection these Subjects of hers, they should establish an *English* Factory in his Kingdom: That the General should settle Articles of Trade with his Majesty in her Name, which

which she engaged on her Part should be performed, and desired he would let her Majesty know how he approved of this Commerce, in a Letter by the Bearer.

THE King thereupon ordered his Ministers to conclude Treaties of Alliance and Commerce, with the General, the principal whereof were, that the *English* should enjoy a free Trade, and pay no Customs, either upon Importations or Exportations; and that all Bargains should be punctually performed by his Subjects; that he would take the Factors into his Protection, and they should enjoy the Freedom of their Religion.

THE *Portuguese* at *Achen* doing all that lay in their Power to hinder the Traffick of the *English*; the General, to make himself some Satisfaction for the Mischief they intended him, cruized off the Port of *Malacca*, where he took a Ship of nine hundred Ton, going from the Coast of *Coremandel* to *Malacca*, with six hundred People on Board, and found in her nine hundred and fifty Bales of Chints and Calicoes, plain and painted, and Abundance of other rich Merchandize (sufficient to freight his Ships) Part of which he made a Present of to the King of *Achen*; and having taken in some Pepper and settled the Factory, the General sailed to *Bantam*, carrying with him a Letter from the King, in Answer to the Queen's.

THIS Letter the King begins with glorifying God for his Works, who is not, he observed, to be uttered by Words, or conceived by Imagination, that no Bounds can contain him, or any Similitude express him.

He declares himself highly pleased with the Offer of Traffick between the two Nations, and tells the Queen she may safely send her Subjects to trade in his Ports: That the *Spaniards* are his as well as her Enemies, and that he will fall upon them wherever he meets them: That he had formed her Factors into a Society, granted them Privileges, and instructed them in the best Methods of Trade, and to testify his Affection for her Majesty, had sent her a Ring adorned with a Ruby, and two Habits or Vests of Gold Stuff enclosed in a red China Box.

THE King also made the General a Present of a Ring at parting, but before he went on board, the King desired his People would sing him some of *David's* Psalms, which a Dozen of the Company performed to his Satisfaction.

THE General set Sail soon after for *Bantam*, where he compleated his Cargo of Pepper, and then returned to *England*; where he arrived, after a very stormy Passage, on the 11th of *December*, 1603.

THE *English* having erected several Forts in *Sumatra*, especially to the South of the Equinoctial, continued to traffick with the People of that Island, without any Interruption, all the seventeenth Century; but in the Beginning of this, some imprudent Chiefs being sent thither, gave the Natives several needless Provocations, which occasioned great Part of the Island to enter into a Confederacy, to extirpate the *English*. *Dampier* relates, that an *English* Governor of *Benccoolen*, when he was there, put in the Stocks two *Raja's*, or sovereign Princes in that Neighbourhood, because their People did not bring down Pepper to the Fort so fast as he expected; and in the Year 1719 there was a general Insurrection of the Natives to drive the *English* from their Coast, which was begun by setting the Company's Sugar Plantations on Fire on the 25th of *March*, 1720, when the *Pingoff* or *Maccassar* Soldiers in the Company's Service deserted the *English*, and most of them went over to the Enemy, and there being but one hundred and twenty-five *English* in the Fort, most of them unexperienced or disabled Men, it was thought most for the Company's Service, to put their Treasure on board the Ship *Mechlapatan*, that then lay in the Road, which was done on the 27th of *March*, 1720; and the Town of *Benccoolen* being set on Fire by their own *Bugassies*, with most of the Houses in the adjacent Country, together with the Fort itself, most of the *English* with their Slaves went on board the Ship *Mechlapatan*; all that were so unfortunate as to be left behind being cut to Pieces by the Enemy.

FROM *Benccoolen* they set Sail for *Batavia*, where they arrived the 16th of *April*, and the Enemy in the mean Time took Possession of the Company's Fort at *Benccoolen*; however, within the Compass of a Year the Natives invited the *English* to return to their Plantation on the West Coast again, suffering them to compleat the Fortifications they had begun at *Fort Marlbro*; for though there had been some Governors sent to *Benccoolen* that behaved very imprudently, and often insulted the Natives, this
they

they thought a much less Grievance than a *Dutch* Government, which they began to be apprehensive of on the Expulsion of the *English*. They expected the *Dutch* would have laid hold of this Opportunity of seizing the *English* Settlements, and enslave them as they had done other *Indian* Nations. Laying aside therefore their Resentment against the *English*, they thought their wisest Way to give them all Manner of Encouragement to come and settle among them again, if it were but to keep out the *Dutch*.

THE *English East-India* Company were so discouraged by the Losses they had sustained at *Bencoolen*, and an Apprehension that the Natives would remain perpetual Enemies, and consequently it would be no Advantage to keep up their Forts and Settlements in that Country, that, 'tis said, they left it to the Option of some of the Commanders, they sent to *India*, to abandon or reinforce their Settlements on the West Coast of *Sumatra*, as they judged proper; but sure, when these Orders are given, they did not reflect, that the giving up these Settlements must be the Loss of the Pepper Trade in a great Measure, which would immediately be monopolized by the *Dutch*, as the fine Spices had been. The *English* must in that Case buy their Pepper at such a Price as the *Hollanders* are pleased to set upon it; for the Pepper Trade of *Borneo* is so precarious, that the Company send but few Ships thither; and the little Factories on the Coast of *Malabar* cannot supply so much Pepper as this Nation wants.

JAVA, one of the *Sunda* Islands, is situate in the *Indian* Ocean, between one hundred and two and one hundred and thirteen Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between five and eight Degrees of South Latitude, being seven hundred Miles long and upwards of one hundred broad, having the Island of *Borneo* on the North, the Straits of *Bally* on the East, the Ocean on the South, and the Straits of *Sunda* on the North-West.

THE Air of *Java*, near the Sea, is generally unhealthy, unless where the Bogs have been drained, and the Lands cultivated, there it is much better, and in the Middle much more so. The worst Weather upon the North Coast of *Java* is during the westerly Monsoon, which begins the first Week in *November*, when they have some Rain.

Rain. In *December* the Rains increase, and it blows fresh, and in *January* it blows still harder, and the Rains continue very heavy till the Middle of *February*, when both the Wind and Rains become more moderate and decrease, till the End of *March*. Their fair Season commences in *April*, the Winds are then variable, and it is sometimes calm, only at the Change of the Moon there are sudden Gusts of Wind from the West. In the Beginning of *May* the Eastern Monsoon becomes constant, and in *June* and *July* there is a little Rain; but in this Monsoon they have generally clear, wholesome Weather, until the End of *September*. In *October* the easterly Wind blows faintly, and in *November* the westerly Monsoon sets in again: When the westerly Wind and Currents are strongest here, namely, in *December*, *January* and *February*, there is no sailing against them. The easterly Winds and Currents are more moderate; Ships may sail against this Monsoon, and a Ship may come from the Westward through the Straits of *Sunda* to *Batavia* almost at any Time. There is good Anchorage on the *Java* Side, in twenty or thirty Fathom Water: Near the Coast of *Java* and *Borneo*, from *April* to *November*, they have Land and Sea Breezes from different Points; the Wind blows from the Land between One and Four in the Morning, and continues till Noon; at One or Two in the Afternoon it blows fresh from the Sea for five or six Hours.

A CHAIN of Mountains runs through the Middle of the Island from East to West, which are covered with fine Woods. The low Lands are flooded in the Time of the Rains. Along the North Coast of *Java* are fine Groves of Cocoa-Nut Trees, and wherever we see one of these Groves, we do not fail to meet with a Village of the Natives.

THE Island was anciently divided into Abundance of petty Kingdoms and States, and when Admiral *Drake* visited this Island in his Voyage round the Globe, in the Year 1579, he relates, there were five Kingdoms in it. We may now divide it into two Parts, 1. The North Coast, which is under the Dominion of the *Dutch*; and, 2. The South Coast, subject to the Kings of *Palambang* and *Mataran*. *Bantam* was, till lately, the most considerable Kingdom in *Java*, but this King is now a Vassal to the *Dutch*.

BANTAM,

BANTAM, heretofore the chief Town, is situate in a fine Plain, at the Foot of a Mountain, from whence run three Rivers, two of which surround the Town, and the other passes through the Middle of it; and when this City was in its Prosperity, it was twelve Miles in Compass, and exceeding populous, being one of the chief Ports in the *Indian Seas*, to which the *European* as well as *Asiatick* Merchants resorted; but the *Dutch* have removed the Trade to *Batavia*, and most of the Inhabitants have deserted it; the *English* Factory was expelled by the *Dutch* in the Reign of King *James II.* since when neither the *English*, nor any other *European* Nation, have been suffered to trade thither.

BATAVIA, or *Jacatra*, is situate in a level Country, on a fine Bay of the Sea, forty Miles East of *Bantam*; several Islands lying before the Bay, cover it from the Winds and Waves, so that one thousand Sail may ride here securely; two large Moles run out half a Mile into the Sea, and Vessels may lie close to the Keys. In one of these Islands, before the Harbour, the *Dutch* are perpetually building or careening of Ships, from whence it has obtained the Name of *On-roof*, or *No-rest*.

THE Form of the Town is almost square, built with white Stone, and laid out in spacious Streets, Canals lined with Stone, and planted with Evergreens, running thro' the principal Streets; the River which passes through the Middle of the Town supplying them with Water; and it is defended by a Fort which commands the Harbour, and the Town is surrounded by a Wall and twenty-two Bastions. What adds to the Beauty of the Place is their Bridges, near sixty of which built with Stone are laid over the Canals. Within the Fort stands the General's House, and the Apartments of the principal Officers. In the Middle of the City is a fine Square, on one Side of which is the great Church, and on another the Stadthouse. The Suburbs reach a Mile and half beyond the City, in which are large Gardens and Orchards. Here the *Chinese* live, or rather did live, and had their Temples and Tombs resembling those in their Mother-Country, and the free Exercise of their Religion, which is denied to the *Lutheran* Protestants. Here also reside the *Javanese*, *Malays*, *Bandanese*, and a

Multitude of other People, which the *Dutch* have brought hither from Countries they have enslaved. There are little Forts erected on every Side, six or seven Miles from the Town, to defend the Avenues, and for the Security of their Country Seats and Gardens.

MOST of the great Towns in this Island, especially those that are under the Dominion of the *Dutch*, are situate on the North Coast; those East of *Batavia* are *Cikaraben*, *Samarang*, *Japara*, *Roombong Tuban*, *Sidaye*, *Jorton* and *Surabaya*, and at the East End of the Island are the Towns of *Passarvan* and *Panarucan*, and on the South Coast *Palambang* and *Materan*.

THE native *Javanese* wear a Kind of Skull-Cap, but their Bodies are naked to the Middle, wrapping a Piece of Silk or Calico about their Loins, which reaches below the Middle of their Legs, which are bare. The Women cover their Bodies with a Piece of Silk or Calico, and have another Piece wrapped about their Loins, and dress in their Hair. The Men are employed in Husbandry and Fishing, or in building Country Boats.

THERE is a mixed Breed, called *Topajes* or *Mardikers*, consisting of several Nations, incorporated with the *Dutch*, and have greater Privileges than the rest. Many of these are Merchants, and differ but little in their Habits, or Way of Life from the *Dutch*, only the Men wear large Breeches or Trowsers, which reach down to their Ancles. The Women tie up their Hair in a Roll on their Heads, wear a Waistcoat, and a Piece of Silk or Calico wrapped about their Loins. These live both in the City and Suburbs.

THE *Macassars*, whose Ancestors possessed the Island of *Celebes*, and were enslaved by the *Dutch*, though they went almost naked in their Mother-Country, wear Cloathing here.

SEVERAL of the *Timoreans*, Inhabitants of an Island East of *China*, having been brought hither by the *Dutch*, now constitute Part of the People of *Batavia*. The Habits of these and of the *Macassars* I have not met with any Account of; but as many of them profess Christianity, and are conformable to the *Dutch* in their Religion and Customs, it is to be presumed they cloath themselves as the *Hollanders* do.

THESE and many more Nations the *Dutch* have subdued, and out of them have formed a body of twelve or fifteen thousand

thousand regular Troops, one thousand of them mounting Guard at *Batavia* every Day.

THE *Dutch*, by introducing such Numbers of the *Indian* Nations, have made *Batavia* one of the most populous Cities in *Asia*; and the chief People of the several Nations being thus in their Power, they have not much to fear from the meaner Sort, who have been left behind to cultivate the Ground.

THE *Hollanders* have done whatever Force or Policy could do to establish their Empire in the East, if Justice and Clemency had had some small Share in their Councils. The Want of these may probably one Day incline the Natives to join some other Powers against them. I have long been of Opinion their Reign would not be lasting, as they have never endeavoured to gain the Affections of the conquered Nations; but now so many Powers are endeavouring to rival them in the *Indian* Trade, the Time seems approaching when they must abandon what they so unjustly acquired: Other Nations will certainly join the Natives to drive the barbarous *Hollanders* from their Shores, as they, with the assistance of the injured natives, did the *Portuguese* about one hundred Years ago. This can only be prevented by doubling their Forces on that Side; and if they should enclose their Garrisons, and render their Governors more powerful in that Part of the World, some ambitious Chief possibly may set up for himself, and render their Colonies independent of their Mother-Country, as the Governor of *Ceylon* lately did. The obtaining the Sovereignty of that charming Cinnamon Island is so strong a Temptation to an ambitious Man, as it is not easy to resist, especially as the possessing of that must make great Part of the World dependent on him for the Spice it produces.

Rice is the principal Grain that grows here. They have also Plantations of Sugar, Tobacco and Coffee: Their Kitchen Gardens, are well replenished with Cabbages, Purslain, Lettice, Parsley, Fennel, Melons, Pumpions, Potatoes, Cucumbers, and Radishes. Here are also all Manner of *Indian* Fruits, such as Plantains, Banano's, Coco's, Anano's, Mangoes, Mangosteens, Durions, Oranges of several sorts, Limes, Lemons, the Betel and Arek Nut; Gums of several Kinds, particularly

Benjamin: In *March* they plant Rice, and their Harvest is in *July*. In *October* they have the greatest Plenty of Fruit, and they have some all the Year.

THEY have good Timber, Cotton, and other Trees proper to the Climate, besides Oak, Cedar, and several Kinds of red Wood. The Coco Tree is very common, which is of universal Use, affording them Meat, Drink, Oil and Vinegar; and of the Fibres of the Bark they make them Cordage; the Branches cover their Houses, and the Leaves they write on with a Steel Stile, and with this and the great Bamboo Cane they build their Houses, Boats, and other Vessels.

HERE are Buffaloes and some Oxen, and a small Breed of Horses. The few Sheep we find here have Hair, rather than Wool, and their Flesh is dry. Their Hogs, wild and tame, are the best Meat we eat here, or in any other Countries between the Tropicks; and their Venison is good: Here are also Tygers and other wild Beasts, Crocodiles, Porcupines, Serpents, Scorpions, Locusts, and a Multitude of Insects; Monkeys also abound here: Mr. *Leguat*, who resided in *Java* some Years, relates, that he saw a Monkey that was kept in one of the Bastions at *Batavia*, that came very near the human Form; that it was a Female, went upright on its hinder Legs, was very tall, and concealed the Pudenda with one of its Hands; that she made her Bed neatly every Day in a little House her Master had built for her, and lying down at Night, covered herself with a Quilt, and sometimes would bind her Head with a Cloth, and seemed to grieve as if she had the Head-Ach. Mr. *Leguat* imagined great Pains had been taken to teach the Creature to perform such Actions, as seemed to be the Result of Reason, while others were of Opinion it was the Issue of an Ape and a Female Slave; for when a Slave has committed a great Fault, or what the *Dutch* are pleased to call such, they frequently run up into the Mountains, and live perfectly wild, and suppose that this Creature was begot on her Mother by some Male Ape.

THE Food, Salutations, and Diversions of the *Indians* in this Island are the same as in *Lorneo* and *Sumatra*, and therefore need not to be repeated here. The *Dutch* travel
in

in Coaches, and on Horseback, and sometimes in Palanquins, or covered Couches, carried on Mens Shoulders, as the *Indians* do, with a grand Retinue.

NONE of the Nations of *Europe* are suffered to trade to *Java*, but from *China* fourteen or fifteen Junks of two hundred or three hundred Tun, used to come every Year in *November* or *December*, and return home in *June*; which furnished the *Dutch* with the Merchandize of *China* upon easier Terms than they could purchase it in that Country: And this is the Reason the *Dutch* so seldom visit that Kingdom, and permit other Nations to trade thither, which they could prevent if they pleased, by shutting up the Straits of *Sunda* and *Malacca*, which the Squadrons of Men of War they always keep in *India*, enable them to do. Besides the Goods imported to *Batavia* by the *Chinese*; the *Dutch* themselves import the Produce of *Japan*, the *Spice-Islands*, *Persia*, *Surat*, *Bengal*, the Coast of *Coromandel* and *Malabar*, and all the Merchandize of *Europe* and *Africa*. Never were such Magazines of Goods laid up in any City, as are to be found in *Batavia*, except in *Amsterdam* itself; and as they barter the Goods of one Country for another, the *Indian* Trade is so far from diminishing their Treasure, that it brings them in more Gold and Silver than any other Traffick. They have such a Superfluity of Spices, that they employ People to root them up in the *Molucca's*, and, it is said, burn Ship-Loads of Cinnamon in *Ceylon*; but I should think the last Article unnecessary, because if they did not burn the Cinnamon, they have so fortified the Coasts of that Island, that no other Nation can come at it. The *Dutch*, with great Propriety, assume the Title of *Sovereigns of all the Seas*, from the *Cape of Good Hope*, Eastward, to *Cape Horn* in *America*. I don't know any Power, that can resist the Fleets they are able to fit out at *Batavia*, within these Limits.

LEARNING is not to be expected among the Natives of *Java*; most of the modern *Indian* Languages indeed are spoken here, but none are more generally understood than the *Malayan* and *Portuguese*, and the *Dutch* have founded Schools in *Batavia* for teaching the learned Languages which are studied in *Europe*, and all Kinds of Mechanick Arts

Arts are brought to great Perfection here. A Printing House, Paper Mills, and Gunpowder Mills, are erected here; there are also Sugar-Bakers, Cotton-Weavers, Carpenters, Ropemakers, Bricklayers, Shipwrights, Smiths, Braziers, Cutlers, &c.

THE Island of *Java* was not known to the *Europeans*, until the *Portuguese* passed the *Cape of Good Hope*, about the Year 1500, where they found the *Arabians* planted upon these Shores, as they were upon the adjacent Islands; whose Ancestors, very probably, came hither so long ago, as the *Phœnicians*, *Egyptians* and *Jews*, ventured into these Seas, in Search of *Spices*, Gold, and other rich Merchandize, the neighbouring Islands afford: About an hundred Years after the *Portuguese* arrived here, the *English* and *Dutch* began to trade with the *Javonese*; *Bantam* being the chief Port to which the *Chinese* and most of the *Indian* People resorted, which made *Bantam* one of the greatest Marts in *India*: But there being a Misunderstanding between the King of *Bantam* and the *Hollanders*, the latter removed to *Jacatra*, now *Batavia*; where they erected Forts, and introduced so many Troops, that they soon found themselves in a Condition to give Law to most of the Sovereigns in that Island; the King of *Bantam* only hindered them being Masters of it. The *Hollanders* therefore understanding there was a Difference between that King and the Prince his Son, they joined the Prince against his Father, and assisted him to usurp his Throne; they afterwards introduced such a Number of Forces into that Capital as enabled them to command both Father and Son, suffering the young King, however, to retain the Name of King, but took the Administration of the Government entirely into their own Hands, expelled all *European* Factors and Merchants from the Coasts, and particularly the *English*, who had a very great Trade here, so lately as the Reign of King *James II.* And the *Dutch* may now be looked upon as the only Power in that Island, except the Kings of *Mataran* and *Palamboan*, whose Territories are situate beyond the Mountains on the South-East Part of the Island, from whom they do not apprehend any Disturbance.

THE Princes that are their Vassals, are permitted to live in as great State as ever they did when they were really Monarchs, and the Orders of the *Hollanders* are executed in the Name of such Kings. An Instance of the State they appear in, has been given us by a late Traveller; he relates, that when the King of *Bantam* goes in or out of his Palace, the Great Guns are fired, and four of the Natives of *Amboyna*, Men of prodigious Stature and terrible Countenances, with their Shields and Broad Swords, begin the Procession, who are followed by a Company of *Javanese* Soldiers, and another Company that are Natives of *Bali*, or *Little Java*, follow them; after these come six fine *Persian* Horses richly accoutred, and then the King's Son on Horseback, but very young, attended by a great Number of Women, carrying golden Vessels, with Fruits and Flowers; after whom marched a Body of *Dutch* Soldiers, and then the King mounted on a *Persian* Horse, covered almost with gold Trappings, attended also with great Numbers of Women on Foot; and two Companies of Soldiers, the one *Dutch*, and the other *Javanese*, closed the Procession.

THE *Dutch* Governor of *Batavia* also takes great State upon him, and has in Reality the Power of a Sovereign Prince. A Troop of Horse Guards precede his Coach when he goes out, Halberdiers surround his Coach, and a Company of Foot-Guards march after it, cloathed in yellow Sattin, enriched with Silver Lace and Fringe; and the Governor's Lady has her Guards, and is attended in all Respects, both within and without Doors, like a Queen.

THE *Dutch* have upwards of twenty thousand standing Forces in *Java*, one Part *Hollanders*, and the other *Indians*; but except the Guards, their Soldiers make no great Figure, their Cloathing being very mean, and not uniform; and they mortify the Subaltern Officers pretty much, not suffering them to have an Umbrella carried over their Heads, though they allow the meanest *Dutch* Tradesman this Privilege.

As *Batavia* is a Place of the greatest Trade in *India*, the Customs must be very considerable: They lay a Poll-Tax also on the *Chinese*, who pay a certain Sum for the Privilege

Privilege of wearing their Hair, and as much more for every Silver and Gold Bodkin in it ; which must amount to a good Sum, if every *Chinese* in the Island pays this Tax ; for there are not less than one hundred thousand *Chinese* there ; but I question, whether one Half of them live in and about *Batavia*.

BESIDE the Land Forces, the *Dutch* have not less than thirty or forty Men of War in *India*, which are a Force sufficient to engage any *European* or *Indian* Fleet they may meet with in those Seas. As for the *Javanese*, they never had any Ships of above fifty Tun, but some swift-sailing Praws, which are almost equal to those of the *Ladrone* Islands.

THE Nations the *Dutch* have enslaved, and the Cruelties they exercised both on *Europeans* and *Indians* in the last Century, have been taking Notice of already, and were almost forgot, till the Massacre of the *Chinese* in *Batavia*, in the Year 1740, revived the Memory of them : To justify which, the *Dutch* pretended to have discovered a Conspiracy of the *Chinese*, to make themselves Masters of *Batavia*, and extirpate the *Hollanders* : But as this was the Pretence for murdering our innocent, defenceless Factors, at *Amboyna*, as well as for massacring the Natives of the Spice Islands, and for the numberless Cruelties they have exercised in *India*, this will be but little regarded ; especially, when it appears, that the *Chinese*, who inhabited the Suburbs of *Batavia*, peaceably delivered up all their Arms, as soon as required. What Danger could then be apprehended from them ? None of them lived within the Walls of the City, which was well fortified and defended by a Castle and several other Forts, and a Fleet of Men of War in the Harbour. If it be considered further, that the *Chinese* without had no Cannon, or any Preparations made towards forming a Siege, in this defenceless Condition, could the *Dutch* be so terrified, as not to admit one of them to a fair Trial, or find any other Evidence against them, but what they extorted by the Rack ? and yet destroyed upwards of twenty thousand of these People in cold Blood, having first disarmed them. The Governor, to excuse his barbarous Cruelty, affirmed, that the Order for the Massacre was signed by every one
of

of his Council, except Baron *Imboff*, whom he sent to *Europe* in Irons, because he would not consent to the Order: And, I have so favourable an Opinion of the *Dutch*, that I can't think, all the rest of the Council would have signed the cruel Order, if they had not been induced to do it by the Governor's Threats, who hoped to screen himself from Justice, by procuring the Hands of most of the Council. So much he depended upon this, that he ventured to send his most valuable Effects to *Europe*, declaring, that he would go thither himself, not doubting but he had amassed Treasure enough by the Plunder of the *Chinese* or otherwise, to have bribed any Tribunal in *Europe*, in his Favour; but the States of *Holland* being apprised of his Intention, sent Orders to the Governor of the *Cape of Good Hope*, if he came that Way, to stop him, and send him back to *Batavia* to take his Trial. The Packet which included these Orders arriving at the *Cape* when the Governor of *Batavia* was there, who having a superior Authority to the Governor of the *Cape*, and all other Governors between that Place and *Japan*, the Packet was first carried to him, and delivered into his own Hands; but he never dreaming what it contained, sent it, unopened, to the Governor of the *Cape*, who no sooner saw the Contents, but he sent a Guard to seize on his *Batavian* Excellency, and put him on board a Ship bound for *India*; and he was probably thrown overboard, to prevent any further Enquiries: And to shew the Resentment of the States at this barbarous Execution, they also dispatched Baron *Imboff*, to take upon him the Government of *Batavia*, whom the former Governor had sent over in Irons, for expressing his Abhorrence of the Massacre. And now, when the *Dutch* themselves have thus shewn their Detestation of the Fact, is it not strange to see some of our own Writers justifying the cruel Order, and relating false Facts, in order to excuse the Persons that perpetrated this monstrous Villany; and even excusing and justifying the *Dutch*, in torturing and murthering the *English* Factors at *Amboyna*, and not only plundering their Effects, and taking their Ships, but invading and subduing the *English* Spice Islands, and keeping Possession of them to this Day, notwithstanding we had the best Title to them that could
be

be made, namely, the Cession of the Princes and States of those Countries ?

WHETHER the *Dutch* really approved the Massacre of the *Chinese*, or not, may be a Doubt ; but seeing the rest of Mankind expressing their Abhorrence of it, they certainly hoped to throw the Odium off themselves upon their Governor, by sending him back to be tried at *Batavia*, where the Crime was committed, affording more Mercy to him, than he had shewn to so many thousand Men, Women, and Children murdered in cold Blood ; but whether the late Governor ever reached *Batavia*, or was put to Death without a Trial, as the *Chinese* were, is yet doubtful : All that can be affirmed of Certainty is, that he has disappeared ever since, and we hear of no Prosecution begun against him, or any of the Council that signed the Order with him. Baron *Imhoff*, who succeeded the cruel Governor, is since dead ; whether he died fairly or not, or was taking off for not complying with the late Governor's Orders, will be difficult to know ; for Mysteries of State, or rather Mysteries of Iniquity, are sometimes impenetrable, and may remain Secrets till the last great Day of Account. To return to the Description of the *Javanese*.

As the Women of *Java* are remarkable for their amorous Disposition and Constancy to the Man they espouse, and expect that the Man should be equally constant, if her Lover goes astray, she makes no Scruple in preparing a Dose for him. An old Traveller, who seems much enamoured with the *Javanese* Ladies, gives this Description of them ; he observes that they are much fairer than the Men, have good Features, little swelling Breasts, a soft Air, sprightly Eyes, a most agreeable Laugh, and a bewitching Mien, especially in Dancing : that they express the greatest Submission to their Husband, prostrating themselves before him when he enters the House. Polygamy prevails here ; the *Javanese* have several Wives besides Female Slaves, of whom they make Concubines when they see fit.

THERE being a Scarcity of *European* Women, the *Dutch* are allowed to marry a Native, provided she will profess Christianity, which she is seldom averse to, as it gratifies her

her Pride; a Christian and the Wife of a *Dutchman* taking Place of a Native *Javanese*, and being allowed a great many Privileges, which the Natives can't enjoy; and her Husband is obliged to confine himself to her Bed, and bring no Rivals into the Family.

INSTEAD of hired servants at *Batavia*, every body almost is served by Slaves of all Complexions and all Nations; the Buyer asks no Questions from whence they came, or how the Seller came by them, which induces the Rovers or Free Booters in these Seas to land upon any Coast, and carry off the Inhabitants, Men, Women, and Children, and sell them at *Batavia*, or any other Town where there is a Demand for Slaves.

I PROCEED to the Description of some other *Javan* Princes, who are still independent of the *Dutch*. The two Kingdoms of *Materan* and *Palambang* are situate on the South Side of the Island. *Materan*, the Capital of the first Kingdom, is situate in one hundred and ten Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and in seven Degrees forty-five Minutes South Latitude. *Palambang*, the Capital of the Kingdom of that Name, is situate in one hundred and fourteen Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and in seven Degrees thirty Minutes South Latitude, on the Straits of *Bally*, through which the *East-India* Ships sometimes pass, when they are homeward-bound from *Borneo*; such Ships touch at the Town of *Palambang* for fresh Water and Provisions; but the Surf often beats with such Violence on the Shore, that makes it difficult Watering there. Captain *Beckman* passed this Strait in *January*, 1724, and relates that he was fifteen Days between the East End of the Island of *Madura* and the Straits, though it was not above thirty Leagues, and should have been longer, if he had not observed that once in twenty-four Hours the South Wind broke through the Straits with such Violence, that it set him back as much as he had gained the whole Day before: That this Wind is always attended with heavy Rains, and lasts about an Hour, but gives timely Notice of its Approach. He advises Ships therefore that pass to the Southward to keep the Coast of *Java* on board, steering along Shore within a Mile or two with the northerly Breeze, which lasts till the other comes from the Southward,

ward, in which Time the Ship will have run four or five Leagues to the Southward of the North-East End of *Java*, when you will open a black sandy Bay; and when the Tornado is seen beating up the Straits, which may be discerned an Hour before it comes, it is adviseable to get near enough into the Bay to anchor before the southerly Wind reaches you; but there is no safe Anchoring till the Ship gets into the Bay, the Strait between *Java* and *Bally* not being half a Mile over in the narrowest Part, and the Mountains on each Side of a prodigious Height hanging almost over the Ship, and affording a dismal Prospect, while Gusts of Wind frequently come down from the Hills, veering round the Compass. To prevent being whirled round, therefore, by the circling Eddies, he advises to keep the Boat a-head; but when the Ship is got to the narrowest Part of the Strait, the Rapidity of the Current to the Southward soon forces the Ship through. The Danger of the Passage is not so great as is generally believed, and after the Strait is passed, the Ship may anchor in the Bay of *Palambang*, where it may be supplied with Wood, Water, and other Provisions.

THE Natives here are under terrible Apprehensions that the *Dutch* design to send a Colony hither, and thought his Ship had belonged to the *Hollanders*; but as soon as they understood the Captain was an *Englishman*, the King invited him on Shore, and the next Day came on board his Ship. The Captain and his Officers were afterwards well entertained on Shore, and the King made them a Present of Rice, Oxen, Deer, and Poultry; and the Captain was informed that the Country produced Gold, Pepper and Cotton in Plenty. They had a small Breed of Horses, Buffaloes, Goats, and very large Oxen; all Manner of Land and Water Fowls, and Fish. The King and his Subjects are most of them Pagans, though there are some Mahometans, and the *Chinese* trade to this Place.

THE Island of *Bally*, or the *Lesser Java*, is only divided from the larger Island by the last mentioned Strait; and Eastward of this are the Islands *Lombo*y, *Combava*, *Flores*, *Solor*, *Timor*, and several more, upon which the *Dutch* have Forts, and look upon the Natives as their Subjects, many of whom have been transported to *Batavia*, and serve

serve in the *Dutch* Troops. *Timor* is the largest of these Islands, being about two hundred Miles in Length, and fifty in Breadth, and divided into several petty States, which the *Dutch* play against one another, and by that Means govern the whole. The *Portuguese* had formerly Colonies here, whose Descendants are now so intermixed with the original Natives, that they are scarce to be distinguished from them, especially as they profess the same Religion. There are also some Pagans and Mahometans still remaining here, and the *Chinese* come hither to trade once a Year: The Inhabitants are so very swarthy, that they are sometimes taken for Blacks, and those that are not under the Government of the *Portuguese* or the *Dutch* are represented as Savages; they wear no Cloathing but a little Piece of Cloth about their Loins, and the better Sort wear a Kind of Coronet about their Temples, adorned with little thin Plates of Gold or Silver; the rest have Caps made with Palmetto Leaves. Their Arms are Swords, Darts, and Lances or Spears, and with these they run down and kill their Game. Their Animals are the same as in the Island of *Java*, as well as their Forest and Fruit Trees. The *Dutch* don't seem to make any great Profit of these Islands; the principal Design of their building Forts here is to defend the Avenues to the Spice Islands, which lie in their Neighbourhood.

THERE are Countries which lie South-East of these Islands, to which the *Dutch* have given the Names of *New Guinea* and *New Holland*, in which they relate there are some few savage Inhabitants, and that they are not worth the planting; and I can't learn that the *Dutch* themselves, to whom they must be of more Value than to any other People, as they lie not far from *Batavia*, have made any Settlements there; for which there may be this Reason, that the *Hollanders* have possessed themselves of more Countries in the East already than they can possibly maintain and defend; but 'tis strange that no other Power visits those Coasts, when they lie so near the Spice Islands, and possibly may produce the like Fruits. As every Nation almost now puts in for a Share of the *East-India* Trade; surely, some of them will make the Experiment, and not sit down with the Account the *Dutch* have given us of

I

them,

them, whose Interest it is to prevent other Nations settling so near the Spice Islands. The *English* did make some Essay towards this Discovery about the Year 1700, being at the Charge of fitting out Captain *Dampier*, and sent him into these Seas, where he met with a People not so barbarous as the *Dutch* represented them, and treated with them about entering into an Alliance with the *English*; and if I remember right, he brought home a Crown and Sceptre, made of Wood, or some very mean Materials, which one of their Princes presented him with. *Dampier* happened to be cast away upon the Island of *Ascension*, and though the Ship was broke to Pieces, he and his Crew got safe to Shore, and were taken up by Commodore *Warren*, on his Return from *India*, where he had been to suppress the Pirates in those Seas.

WHAT Report *Dampier* made to the Council, or the Board of Trade, on his Return to *England*, I never heard; but it seems, the Government never made any further Attempts to inform themselves of the State of those Countries, or whether it might be worth while to plant them. I am apt to think the Reason nothing further was done towards the Discovery, was, because we were entering into that long War in the Beginning of the Reign of Queen *Anne*, which engrossed the whole Attention of the Court.

I RETURN now to the Description of the *Indian* Islands, of which the Chief of those that remain to be treated of are the *Nicobar* and *Andoman* Islands, and those of the *Maldiva's*.

THE *Nicobar* Islands are situate in the *Indian* Sea, between ninety-two and ninety-four Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between seven and ten Degrees of North Latitude, near the Entrance of the Bay of *Bengal*, a little North of the Island of *Sumatra*. The largest of these Islands, which lies most to the South, is forty Miles long, and fifteen broad; the South End is mountainous, and there are some steep Rocks near the Sea; the rest of the Island is covered with Woods, but not high Land. It is a rich Soil, that would produce almost any Grain, if it was cultivated. The Groves of Coco-Nut Trees, that stand in the flat Country near the Sea, are exceeding pleasant; but I don't find there are any Towns, only as we
fail

fail by, we see Clusters of five or six little Houses in every Creek and Bay, which are built on Bamboo Pillars, eight or nine Feet above the Surface of the Ground, the Roof neatly arched with bended Cane and covered with Piam Branches.

THESE Islanders are moderately tall, the Complexion a deep Olive, and have long black Hair, and black Eyes; their Women might be esteemed handsome, if it was not the Custom to pull the Hair off the Eye-brows by the Roots.

THE Men wear no Cloaths, but a little linen Cloth about their Loins; that of the Women is deeper, reaching below their Knees. The Country is still over-run with Wood; they neglect to clear it, and cultivate the Ground, but live chiefly on Fish and such Fruits as the Country produces spontaneously; they have little Trade or Commerce with any other People; but as Ships sail by in their Way to and from the Straits of *Ma'acca*, they bring off Hogs, Poultry and such Fruits as the Country affords, taking Tobacco, Linen, and other Necessaries in Return.

THE *Andowan* Islands lie in the Bay of *Bengal*, North of the *Nucbar* Islands, in ninety-two Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between ten and fifteen Degrees of North Latitude. These Islands do not seem to differ much from those of *Nicobar*, except in producing Rice, which is cultivated here and eaten by the Natives as well as Fish and Fruit, and both these People, when the *Europeans* first visited them, were charged with devouring their own Species, though it appears, that for the most Part they live upon the Fruits of the Earth, and are so far from eating human Flesh, that they hardly eat any Flesh at all. I have examined the Custom of most Countries, which had the Reputation of being Canibals, and have not been able to find Evidence, or even a Probability, that there was ever a Nation of Canibals. What particular People might be induced to do, driven to it by Necessity, is a different Thing; but I can't readily give Credit to the Stories we meet with of whole Nations of Canibals. I have myself experienced what Hunger is, lived two whole Days without taking any Nourishment whatever, and was so far from finding my Appetite encrease, that I grew indif-

ferent whether I eat or not. The Rage of Hunger, as some People call it, will be as violent after twelve Hours fasting, as ever it will be. Thirst is much more intolerable than Hunger, especially when the Sun is continually shining upon us with perpendicular Rays, of which I remember the following Instance. Seven or eight *Englishmen* (with one of whom I sailed in the same Ship to *India*) being taken Prisoners by the *Arabs*, escaped into the sandy Deserts, where they met with no Water for several Days, and the Sun all the Day-Time beating over their Heads; whereupon they agreed that one of them should bleed, and the rest drink his Blood; and having cast Lots who should be the Sacrifice, it fell to my Friend's Turn; but such was their Thirst, that it was almost indifferent to them on whom the Lot fell: My Friend very readily let himself Blood, and bled to Death, and the rest by drinking of it saved their Lives till they came to some Water, and all of them returned alive to *India*, and gave this Relation of the Matter.

ANOTHER Instance of the intolerable Rage of Thirst I knew in *India*, was this. Our Ship, the *Martha*, lying at an Anchor before *Fort St. George*, four of the Seamen agreed to run away with one of the Boats in the Night-Time. Accordingly they got into the Boat, while the Man who kept it was asleep, and rowed to Sea after something they took to be a Ship, but happened to be a Cloud, and were so far from Land the next Morning, that they could see neither Land or Ship, and had neither Provision or Compass with them. It happened to be bright Weather at that Time, and the Sun directly over their Heads, which had that Effect, that one of them on the third Day fell mad, and so died, and was thrown overboard; two more of them died in the same Manner, the succeeding Days, and were thrown into the Sea; and now two only remaining, on the ninth Night they heard the Surf beating against the Shore, and had just Strength enough to turn the Head of the Boat towards the Land, and came safely to it, having received no other Nourishment in the nine Days than the Blood of a Tortoise or Turtle they found asleep upon the Water, and hauled into their Boat; and of this, I think, they drank but one Coco-Nut Shell apiece,

piece, mixed with the Sea-Water. When the Boat came ashore, they found they were two hundred Miles North of *Port St. George*, from whence they set out. The Boat-Keeper came back afterwards to the Fort, from whose Mouth I had this Relation. The other Man that was left alive went into the Mogul's Service, not daring to return, for Fear of being punished for running away with the Boat ; but the Boat-Keeper pretending he was asleep when the Boat put off, and innocent of the Conspiracy, thought he had nothing to apprehend from his Masters.

THE Reader, I presume, will pardon this Digression, as I had so fair an Opportunity to speak of the Effects of Hunger and Thirst of my own Knowledge.

I COME now to conclude the Description of the *Indian* Islands, of which only the *Maldiva's* remain to be treated of.

MALDIVA Islands are situate in the *Indian* Ocean, between sixty-eight and seventy-six Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between the Equator and seven Degrees of North Latitude, about five hundred Miles South-West of the Continent of the *Hither India*, being about one thousand little Islands, and a Multitude of Rocks just above Water, stretching generally North-West and South-East, generally flat low Land, difficult to be approached, but at three or four Inlets. The People descended from the *Arabs*, and retain the same Religion (Mahometanism) and Customs with those of their Mother-Country. One King commands them all. The Islands produce the tropical Fruits, especially the Coco-Nut, which is both Meat and Drink ; and the little Sea-Shells, or Cowries, called Blackamoors Teeth, are the Produce of these Islands, and serve in *India* instead of small Money, to purchase Herbs and Fruits. They abound in Fish, but I don't find they have Rice or any other Corn, but import Rice from the neighbouring Continent of *India*.

C H A P. V.

Describes the Kingdoms of Tonquin, and Cochinchina.

INDIA is usually divided into two Parts, *viz.* *India* beyond *Ganges*, and *India* on this Side *Ganges*: I shall first enter upon the Description of that Division which lies beyond the River *Ganges* (because it adjoins to *China*) which comprehends, 1. The Kingdom of *Tonquin*. 2. *Cochinchina*, and *Chianpa*. 3. *Siam*, including *Malacca*, *Cambodia* and *Leos*. 4. *Pegu* and *Martaban*. 5. *Ava*, including *Arracan*, *Tipra* and *Acham*: The whole lying between ninety-two and one hundred and nine Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between one and twenty-eight Degrees of North Latitude.

T O N Q U I N, the first of these Divisions, is bounded by *China* on the North and East, by the Bay of *Cochinchina* on the South, and by *Leos* on the West, and is situate between one hundred and one and one hundred and nine Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between twenty-one and twenty-seven Degrees of North Latitude, being about five hundred Miles long, and four hundred broad.

As we sail up the River *Domea*, we view a fine, level, fruitful Country; in which are no Trees, unless about the Villages, but a pretty Mixture of Rice Ground and Pastures: Further within Land on the North, it rises into Hills, the Air generally healthful, especially in the dry Seasons.

THE South Division of this Country lies in the Form of a Crescent, about a spacious Bay of the Sea, near one hundred Miles wide; the Depth in the Middle about forty-six Fathom, and good Anchorage in every Part of it. Into this Bay, run the Rivers *Rockho* and *Domea*, which rising in the Mountains on the North-West, take their Course to the South-East, and running almost parallel, discharge themselves into the Bottom of the Bay, at about twenty Leagues Distance from each other. The *Europeans* trade with the Natives, up the River *Domea*, which is near two Miles over at the Mouth; but there are so many

many Sands on each Side, that it is necessary to wait for a Pilot to carry a Ship over the Bar.

THE Year is here divided into the wet and dry Season, as in other Countries, which lie between the Tropicks. The wet Season begins in *April* or *May*, and lasts till the Beginning of *September*, in which Time, however, there are considerable Intervals of fair Weather, especially in the Mornings. In *September* the Rain and Wind are moderate generally, and yet in that Month and *October*, happen the Tuffoons (*Typhoons*) which are such violent Storms, that no Ships venture out of the Harbour, during that Time. The Tuffoons happen usually about the New or Full Moon; it is fine, fair Weather, and little Wind, twelve Hours before the Storm begins. The Wind having blown very fiercely for twelve Hours from the North-East, and attended with Thunder and Lightning, and heavy Rains, it grows calm on a sudden, but in the Space of an Hour turns about to the South-West, and blows with equal Violence from that Quarter: When the Sun is at the greatest Distance from them, is their fairest Weather, as it is in most Countries between the Tropicks. The Rains are heaviest when the Sun is vertical, but the Seasons are not always alike: Sometimes they have not Rain enough for their Rice, which most commonly grows in Water.

IN *Tonquin* are eight Provinces. *Cachao* or *Kescio*, the Capital City, is situate about one hundred Miles up the River *Demea*, in one hundred and five Degrees of East Longitude, and twenty two Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude, on an elevated Situation, having neither Wall or Moat about it. There are about twenty thousand Houses in it, most of them low thatch'd Cottages, and some few built of Brick; their Streets wide, but ill paved, and several muddy Ponds, which, in the dry Season, are very offensive.

THE King's Palace is in the Middle of the City, and with the Parks and Gardens which surround it, eight or nine Miles in Circuit. There is another Palace meanly built, in which the *Choua* or General resides; before it is a grand Parade, for exercising the Soldiers, and a House where the Train of Artillery, consisting of fifty or sixty

Iron Guns are lodged, and some Mortars: Near the Parade also is a Stable of War-Elephants, and another of the King's Horses.

D O M E A is a Town situate about sixteen or eighteen Miles up the same River, where the *Dutch* Ships which trade to this Country usually lie; but the *English* ride three Miles higher. The *Dutch* have a Factory at *Domea*, where they employ their temporary Wives to buy up Goods during their Absence.

H E A N stands upon the same River, about eighty Miles from the Sea; it consists of about two thousand Houses, and has a Garrison of Soldiers in it. Here the *Chinese* have Factors, who trade between this Place and *Japan*.

THERE are Abundance of Villages in the flat Country, surrounded with Walls or Banks of Earth, to defend them against the annual Floods.

THE Natives are of a Middle Stature, tawny Complexion, black long Hair, which falls down on their Shoulders, and black Eyes, and their Teeth dy'd black; they wear the Nail on the little Finger of the Left Hand as long as the Finger, as the *Chinese* do: They are fairer Dealers than the *Chinese*, submissive to their Superiors, and very faithful and diligent.

THEIR Habit is a Gown girt about with a Sash: The Sexes are scarce distinguishable by their Dreßs. People of Condition wear *English* Cloth, red, blue, or green, or else Silk of their own Manufacture; their Caps made like the Crown of a Hat, of the same Materials as the Gown; the Common People wear Cotton or Calicoe; the Soldiers the same, but shorter; and all of them wear Cotton Breeches, or Drawers, which reach down below their Knees.

THE People of *Tonquin* are good Mechanicks, but their Lords, who are Owners of the Lands, keep them so miserably poor, that they are frequently forced to remain idle, for Want of Materials to work upon. The *Dutch*, who marry temporary Wives in this Country, employ them as their Factors to buy Materials, and set the poor People to work, and have their Goods ready against the Shipping arrives.

THEIR

THEIR Manufactures are chiefly Silk and Lacquered Ware; the Country produces also Turpentine, Lignum Aloes, fine Perfumes, and Wood for Dying, much like Logwood.

RICE is almost the only Grain that grows here; but they have Coco Nuts, Guava's, Mangoes, Plantains, Oranges, and all other tropical Fruits; and their beloved Betel and Arek Nut are the Produce of the Soil.

IN this Kingdom and the rest of the Peninsula, are great Numbers of Elephants, some Horses, Oxen, Buffaloes, and the same Kind of Hogs we meet with in *China*, and Plenty of Fish and Poultry, but scarce any Sheep or wild Beasts.

As to Snakes, Scorpions, and other Reptiles and Insects, they are as troublesome here as in other hot Countries, but none more so than the Ants, which march in large Bodies, and devour every Thing they can penetrate; they will eat through a Bale of Silk in a few Hours.

As this was once a Province of *China*, their Language is a Dialect of that Nation, and their Characters the same; their Learning consisting chiefly in understanding these Characters, they are examined what Progress they have made in this Study, when they stand Candidates for any Place, as in *China*. In the Mathematicks, Astronomy, and other Sciences, they equal the *Chinese*, and have been improved like them, in these Sciences, by the Popish Missionaries, who visited this Country.

THE King or Boua, has barely the Title of King: He has no Share in the Government. The General is vested with the Regal Power; he makes the King a Kind of Prisoner in his own Palace, but allows him to appear at certain Times, and receive the Homage of his Subjects, and the General himself seems to adore him before the People, declaring, he takes upon him the Administration of the Government, only to ease his Sovereign of the Trouble of it, and that he may enjoy his Pleasures without Interruption. His Majesty's Servants are all appointed by the General, and have Orders not to suffer any of the rest of his Subjects to come near him. The General disposes of all Offices, civil and military; has a Guard of two hundred Elephants, besides his Horse and Foot Guards,

Guards, and usually has a standing Army of thirty thousand Men in and about the Capital City, and sixty or seventy thousand Men in other Parts of the Kingdom, particularly on the Frontiers of *China*, the Power they stand most in Fear of. When the Army marches, the Generals and great Officers are mounted upon Elephants; a Castle or rather a great Room being fixed upon the Back of this monstrous Beast, in which a dozen Men may be accommodated, and discharge their Musquets, or shoot their Arrows. They have no Naval Force, only some little coasting Vessels, with which they don't pretend to make long Voyages.

THE chief Magistrates and Officers of State are generally Eunuchs, an imperious Set of People, difficult of Access, and exceeding covetous, though they have none but themselves to make Provision for. And indeed, it is a common Observation, that those who have least Occasion for Money, covet most; and whatever an Eunuch has scraped together, at last falls to the Government, when he dies: He has not so much as the Power of disposing of any Part of it by Will; and this is the Reason their Extortions and Oppressions are generally connived at; but to this is imputed, the extreme Poverty and Want of Trade in the lower Class of People, who have no Encouragement to work; possessing nothing they can call their own. There is still something more unaccountable in these Eunuchs than their Covetousness, and that is, their keeping a Parcel of young Wenches to play with (the Eunuchs in *Turkey* do the same) and though they can't oblige the Ladies themselves, in the Manner they may expect, their Masters grow so fond of them frequently, that they suffer them to make Choice of a Gallant, especially among the *Europeans* that arrive here.

THEIR Religion differs but little from that of *China*, and *Confucius* is adored with equal Veneration; but they have some Images we don't meet with there, particularly the Elephant and the Horse. The Temples or Pagoda's are very small, some of them but just big enough to contain the Image. Their Priests have their Cells about the Temple, where they attend to offer up the Prayers of the Devout, who bring them their Petitions in Writing,
which

which the Priest reads aloud before the Image, while his Disciple lies prostrate on the Ground in a supplicating Posture.

People of Figure seldom come to the Pagoda, but perform their Devotions before an Image placed upon an Altar in one of the Courts of their own Houses; some Dependant reading the Petition instead of a Priest, while his Master prostrates himself on the Earth. In the Paper, are enumerated the several Instances of the Petitioner's good Fortune, for which he returns his Thanks to Heaven, as for Riches, Honours, Preservation, &c. concluding with a Prayer for the Continuance of them: After which the Paper is burnt in a Pan of Incense, and then their Poor Neighbours and Dependants are called in, and made to partake of an Entertainment the Master has provided for them. Whenever they make their Addresses to Heaven, the Poor are sure to be relieved; the devout Supplicants looking upon this, as the readiest Way to obtain a favourable Answer.

THIS People are much addicted to Superstition as well as their Neighbours: They consult the Astrologer or pretended Fortune-Teller, whenever they are about to undertake any Thing of Moment, and have their lucky and unlucky Days: And as every Hour of the Day has the Name of some Animal, *viz.* the Horse, the Lion, and the like, the Beast that marks the Hour a Man is born upon, is ever avoided.

THE Jesuits pretend, they have made great Numbers of Profelytes to Christianity, and caused several Churches to be erected: But *Dampier* relates, that when he was at the Bishop's Palace at *Hean*, the Jesuits informed him, that the Court of *Tonquin* shewed no Inclination to embrace Christianity, but many of the poor People had been induced to profess it, he supposed chiefly on Account of the Rice the Missionaries distributed among them: That the Fathers lived as Merchants at *Hean*, and thought proper to conceal their Mission; apprehending, probably, they were not acceptable to the Court, who made no other Use of them, than to learn some Branch of the Mathematicks of them: And whether the poor People made a Profession of their Religion openly, seems doubtful to me: For if
the

the Missionaries apprehended themselves in Danger, one would think, their Disciples, who were Natives, must be at least in equal Danger.

A PLURALITY of Women is allowed here, as in most other Pagan Countries, and very little Difference made between a Wife taken upon Contract, and a Concubine. Their Children are equally entitled to inherit, and the Natives are so far from being disturbed by Jealousy, that it is said, they will offer their Women to the *European* Merchants, or rather let them out, for they expect some Consideration for the Favour. Here Men are allowed to take temporary Wives, as the *Dutch* do, to transact their Affairs in their Absence. And by this Commerce the Women sometimes raise Fortunes, and afterwards become Matches for the most considerable Men in the Country.

THE Men are at Liberty to divorce their Wives for any Trifle almost, but then they must restore the Effects she was possessed of at the Time of the Marriage, and keep the Children; but the Wife cannot obtain a Divorce unless the Husband is charged with some very notorious Crime. The Punishment of a Woman convicted of Adultery, is to be thrown to an Elephant bred up for such Executions; who taking her up with his Trunk, tosses her up into the Air, and when she falls, tramples her under his Feet, crushing her to Pieces with as much ease as one might kill a Moth. A Man may sell both Wife and Children here, which makes a Divorce very unnecessary on the Man's Part; for this amounts to something more than a Divorce. In a Scarcity, the poor People sell their Children with very little Reluctance; for by this Means, they frequently save their Childrens Lives, as well as their own. And in this Part of the World, we see People very ready to part with their Children, to any one that will maintain them, without demanding any Consideration for them: And why is this more unnatural than the *Tonquinese* selling their Children to preserve themselves?

In their Funerals, they differ very little from the *Chinese*: We see the like Processions and the like Mourning, only they burn the Corps, and put the Ashes in an Urn: They carry Provisions to the Tomb where the Urn is deposited, which are distributed among the Priests and poor People;

People, after they have been offered to the Deceas'd, and the Idol placed on an Altar before the Corpse: Over the Tombs of People of Condition, they erect a wooden Tower four or five and twenty Feet high, and the Priest ascending to the Top of it, makes a Funeral Oration, enumerating the Virtues and good Qualities of the Deceas'd: After which, he comes down and sets Fire to the Tower which is soon consumed to Ashes, being built of very slight Materials; and then the People sit down to an Entertainment, which is provided for them. *Dampier* relates, that he saw fifty Hogs dressed and distributed at a Funeral, with the greatest Quantity of Fruit that ever he saw together.

THE King lies in State sixty-five Days after his Decease, and his Table continues to be served every Day as if he was alive; the Meat being distributed every Evening, among the Priests and poor People. After which a very splendid Procession is begun towards the Royal Burying-Place, which is about two Days Journey from *Cachao*: But they seldom reach the Tombs under seventeen Days. The Mandarins, Great Officers, and Magistrates, are obliged to mourn three Years for the Prince, the Gentry six Months, and the common People three, and no Diversions are allowed for three Years after the Funeral.

COCHIN-CHINA including *Ckiampa*, is situate between one hundred-four and hundred-ten Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between ten and seventeen Degrees of North Latitude, bounded by *Tonquin* on the North, by the *Indian* Ocean on the East and South, and by *Cambodia* on the West, being about four-hundred Miles long, and one-hundred and fifty broad.

THE Mountains of *Kemois* run the whole Length of it from North to South, dividing it from *Cambodia*; but towards the Sea the Country is generally level. The Air of this Country is not so hot as that of *Tonquin*, though it lies nearer the Equator, for which several Reasons may be assigned, as the Advantages of the Sea Breezes, of which *Tonquin* has not so great a Share; *Tonquin* lying upon a Bay where the Winds have not so free a Course, while this Country lies open to the Ocean. It is also observed, that the Countries which lie near the Tropicks, as *Tonquin* does,

are much hotter than those that lie near the Equator; for the Countries which lie under either Tropick have the Sun over their Heads near three Months, whereas the Sun passes swiftly over the Countries near the Equator, and does not return thither again for near six Months; and it may add to the Heat near the Tropicks, that the Days are an Hour and half longer at the Tropick than they are at the Equinoctial, and the Rains and cloudy Weather continues longer there also than it does at the Tropick.

TRAVELLERS do not mention any considerable Towns in this Country, but relate that the King resides in the most northern Provinces, which has the Name of *Sinua*, in which we find a Town called *Touran Faifo*, situate in sixteen Degrees of North Latitude, and one hundred and six Degrees of Eastern Longitude. *Chiampa* is situate in the Province of *Chiampa*, the most southerly Province of *Cochin-China*, in one hundred and eight Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and eleven Degrees of North Latitude: They build their Houses chiefly with the Bamboo Cane, one Story high; but the lower Room is of no Use in the Time of the Flood, which lasts near half a Year, when they are forced to live in their upper Rooms, and have no Communication with one another but by Boats.

THE Persons and Habits of the Natives differ very little from those of *Tonquin*, but their Complexions are something darker. They take a great deal of Pains also to get a Set of black Teeth: As the Negroes are remarkable for good white Teeth, these are as much taken Notice of for having very bad ones; for they do not only spoil them by that Ingredient which make them black, but the Betel and Arek, which they chew perpetually, contributes to rot them; however, it colours their Lips red, which is esteemed a considerable Addition to their Beauty.

THE Natives have been represented as a friendly hospitable People; but the *English* Factory at *Pulo Condore* had no great Reason to applaud their Humanity, if their Case is rightly represented.

PULO CONDORE is an Island of the *Indian Ocean*, situate in one hundred and six Degrees thirty Minutes Eastern Longitude, and in nine Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude, sixty Miles South of *Cochin-China*, but
subject

subject to it; in which is a commodious Harbour and two or three small Villages. Here the new *East-India* Company settled a Factory, and built a Fort for the Protection of it in the Year 1702, without asking Leave of the Inhabitants, who soon began to shew their Discontent at this Invasion of their Country, and sent to their Prince, the King of *Cochin-China*, to apprize him of it; however, he did not think fit to express his Resentment of the Procedure at that Time: And the Factory lived in tolerable Quiet till the Year 1705, when the *Macassar* Soldiers, whom the Company had taken into their Service, being threatened for letting some of their Slaves escape, set Fire to the Port, killed the Deputy-Governor, and nineteen of the Factors, but several of the Factors got on board a Sloop, and sailed to *Malacca*; the rest were massacred by the *Cochin-Chinese*, except Mr. *Cunningham*, who was loaded with Irons, and sent over to the Continent. He was charged by the Governor of the Province with invading the Island of *Condore*, and defying the King's Authority, when he was required to quit it again: To which he answered, that when the *English* possessed themselves of that Island, they did not know there were any Inhabitants upon it; and that they had sent an Embassy to *Cochin-China*, and received a Licence to remain there; and the Governor appeared so well satisfied with his Answer, that he gave him his Liberty, but made himself Master of all the Treasure and Effects which belonged to the *East-India* Company, and demolished the Fort. *Cunningham* was afterwards made Governor of *Banyar Mossien* in *Borneo*, which Factory was also destroyed before he had been there ten Days, and he himself was cast away in his Voyage towards *Europe*, as has been related in treating of *Borneo*.

It must be acknowledged, that neither the *English* or any Power can be justified, in taking Possession of a Country already inhabited, by Violence, as it is evident the *East-India* Company did of the Island of *Pulo Condore*; for though Mr. *Cunningham* pretends the Factory had the Leave of the King of *Cochin-China* to remain there, which is very much doubted, he certainly never gave them Leave to erect a Fort, and disarm his Subjects, as they did by their own Confession. I hope we shall never imitate the

Pertu-

Portuguese or *Dutch* in usurping the Dominions of Countries we have no Right to. It has been their constant Practice indeed to get Leave to trade, and to build or purchase Warehouses to lay their Effects in, and then build Forts and introduce Forces, till in the End they have actually subdued and enslaved the Inhabitants : But how unjust and ungrateful is this Procedure ! The *English* have seldom attempted any Thing of this Nature, and when they have, it has not answered their Expectations : Witness this Affair of *Condore*, and that of *Banjar Mafseen*, which happened soon after.

C H A P. VI.

Contains a Description of Siam, and of the Kingdoms of Pegu, Ava and Arracan.

SIAM, in which I comprehend *Malacca*, *Cambodia* and *Laos*, is situate between ninety-seven and one hundred and seven Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and between one and twenty-five Degrees of North Latitude, being bounded by *Acham* and the Provinces of *Yunam* in *China* on the North ; by *Tonquin*, *Cochin-China*, and the Bay of *Siam* on the East ; by the Straits of *Malacca* and *Sincapora* on the South ; and by the Bay of *Bengal*, *Pegu* and *Ava* on the West, being one thousand five hundred Miles long, the Breadth very unequal, but no where three hundred Miles broad.

THE Vallies in this Country, which lie at a Distance from the Sea, are excessive hot, the Mountains cool, and that Part of the Country which lies near the Coast is refreshed great Part of the Day by the Sea-Breezes. The annual Rains also contribute to cool the Air, or this Part of the World would scarcely be habitable.

THERE are two Ridges of Mountains that run through the Country from North to South ; the Air which comes from them renders that Part of the Country tolerably cool. There are not many Parts of this Country, which have not either the Benefit of cool Breezes from the Mountains, or from the Sea.

THE

THE two chief Rivers are the *Menan* and the *Mecon*. The *Menan* rises in *Tartary*, and running from North to South, passes by the City of *Siam*, falling into the Bay of the same Name, in thirteen Degrees of North Latitude. The *Mecon* also rises in *Tartary*, and running from North to South, through *Loos* and *Cambodia*, discharges itself into the *Indian* Ocean, in nine Degrees of North Latitude.

THE Monsoons, or periodical Winds and Rains prevail here as well as in the *Hither India*, and the Rains are heaviest about *Midsummer*: The fairest Season is in *December*, when the Sun is at the greatest Distance from them; the most stormy Weather is at the Shifting of the Monsoons, which usually happens about the Equinoxes, or within a Month sooner or later, when the Shipping gets into Harbour, or must run the Hazard of being broke to Pieces.

THE chief Towns are, 1. *Siam*, the Capital, by the Natives called *Syakhya*, situate on the River *Menan*, in one hundred one Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and in fourteen Degrees North Latitude, being encompassed almost on every Side by the Branches of the River *Menan*. It is surrounded by a Wall and other antique Fortifications, being about nine or ten Miles in Circumference; but not a sixth Part of the Ground within the Walls is built upon. On the vacant Spaces are near three hundred Temples, by the *Indians* called Pagoda's, from worshipping their *Legods*, or Images in them; and about every Temple are the Convents of the Priests, stiled *Talapens* by the *Siamese*; here also are their Burying-Places with Pyramids erected over them. The Streets are spacious, and some of them have Canals running through them, over which are a great Number of Bridges. The Houses are built with Cane, and stand upon Pillars of Bamboo (a thick knotted Cane) twelve or thirteen Feet above the Surface of the Ground, to secure them against the annual Flood, when they have no Communication with one another but by Boats. Where a Family is large, they live in distinct Tenements, but all within their Pale, every Man's Ground being separated from his Neighbour's by a Palisado, and the Cattle are housed in barns, which stand upon Pillars during the Rains, or they would be carried away by the Inundation.

THE royal Palace at *Siam* is encompassed by three Walls, with large Courts or Spaces between the several Walls. The King resides in the innermost Court, which is called the *Vang*, and contains spacious Gardens, Groves, and Pieces of Water; whosoever passes in or out of the *Vang* falls down on his Face before the Gate. The *Siamese* never build above one Story high; but then as you pass from one Room to another in the King's Palace, both the Floor and Roof of every Room is raised; the first Room is the lowest, from whence you ascend by several Steps to the second, and so on to the third, &c. There are seven such Rooms in the Royal Palace, and in the Houses of Persons of Distinction there are three Floors, in passing to every one of which we ascend by Steps. The Grand Room where Ambassadors are entertained, is open on all Sides, for the Benefit of the Air, and the Roof is supported by slender Pillars; it is surrounded also by Water and shady Groves. There are several such Rooms in the Gardens of the Palace, where the Mandarins, or great Officers attend, while they are in waiting.

THE Hall of Audience, beyond which Foreigners are seldom admitted, is wainscotted, varnished, and painted red, with Pannels of Looking-Glass in it, and the Floor covered with rich Carpets. The Guards have Orders to admit no Man into the Palace who is armed, or has drank any Arrack or Spirits: The Officer therefore smells every Man's Breath before he suffers him to pass the Gate. The Stables for the King's Elephants and Horses are within the first Enclosure of the Palace. In a Gallery at the upper End of the Hall of Audience the King usually shews himself to the People.

THE King chuses to be attended only by Women in his Palace; they dress him, prepare his Food, and attend him in his Bed-Chamber, and at Table; but his Cap he puts on himself. This is not to be touched by the greatest of his Subjects. The King's favourite Wife is called Queen, who is generally one of his nearest Relations. One of these Queens was the King's own Daughter by his Sister; they seem to be of the same Opinion in this Article, as the *Egyptians* were, that none but those of the royal Family are fit to match with a King: The famous

Cleopatra

Cleopatra married two of her Brothers, and poisoned them, that she might reign sole Monarch of *Egypt*; but though these Kings don't marry out of the royal Family, they maintain Abundance of other Women; they will take the fair Daughter of any Subject to their Bed, and sometimes send for a Nobleman's Daughter only to extort Money from the Father for her Ransom.

As to the Furniture of the *Siamese* Houses, they have neither Beds, Chairs, or Tables; they lie upon Mattraffes, on Cotts or Couches, having one Sheet under them, and a Quilt, or Piece of Calico, which they draw over them in the rainy Season; for it is much cooler during the Flood, though the Sun be then vertical, than it is in the dry Season, when the Sun shines more obliquely upon them. As to Servants and poor People, their Lodging is no better than a Mat upon the Floor, and the Cloth they wear in the Day-Time covers them at Night.

THE *Siamese* are neither tall nor corpulent, but well proportioned, and very swarthy; their Faces are broad, they have high Cheek Bones, and both their Foreheads and Chins are contracted, and terminate in a Point. They have small black Eyes, large Mouths, and thick pale Lips; and like the rest of the *Indians* in their Neighbourhood, take Abundance of Pains to make their Teeth black, and nourish and polish the Nails of some of the Fingers of their Left Hands, till they are of the Length of their Fingers; and this distinguishes a Gentleman from the Vulgar. The Fashions never alter as they do with us; both Sexes have black Hair, without a Curl in it, and they cut it short, that it does not come below their Ears; the Women make it stand upright on their Foreheads. The Men have very thin Beards, which may proceed from their pulling them up by the Roots, not leaving so much as a Whisker on the upper Lip: They generally bathe before they go out, or have Water poured upon their Heads for an Hour. The latter is more eligible in this hot Country, for the Water they have in Ponds and Reservoirs is luke-warm, but what is drawn out of their Wells is exceeding cold, and seems the more so as our Bodies are much hotter than they are in colder Countries.

THE better Sort of People wear a Calico or Muslin Shirt, wrapping a Piece of Cotton Linen, called a Pagne, about their Loins, and in the cool or rainy Season they wear a Mantle of Chint, or painted Calico. The King is clothed in a Vest of brocaded Sattin, and has a Cap of a piramidal Form, with a Coronet of precious Stones about his Temples; the great Officers and Nobility also have Coronets, but not so rich as his Majesty's; all their Cloaths are red in Time of War, and in their hunting Expeditions.

THE King frequently presents his Officers with a Vest and Cap; none are suffered to wear Vests, except such as are appointed by the King, and the Caps are never worn except in his Majesty's Presence, or when they preside in Courts of Justice; Slippers are worn sometimes, but always put off when they enter their Temples or Houses.

THE Women wear a Linen Cloth about their Loins, which reaches down lower than the Mens, and serves instead of a Petticoat; they also throw a Piece of Linen about their Necks, which covers their Breasts, leaving the rest of their Bodies bare, as well as their Legs, and have no Cap or Covering for their Heads, except their Hair, which is cropped as short as the Mens. The inferior People cover no more of their Bodies than Modesty requires; the Women wear Bracelets on their Arms and Legs, and as many Rings on three Fingers of each Hand as they can put on,

THE *Siamese* are esteemed a very ingenious People, they will imitate readily any Thing they see, but are too lazy to use much Application, for which Reason they scarce bring any Thing to Perfection. Chymistry and Astronomy are the Studies they most delight in; but in these they have made no great Proficiency. They are admired for their Chastity and Temperance; Drunkenness is detested by them. In their Quarrels they very seldom proceed to Blows, and must be thoroughly provoked before they express any Resentment; but if they are grossly injured they will revenge it, not openly by a Duel, but by some secret Attempt, in which they run as little Hazard as possible themselves, not being remarkable for their Courage. They carry themselves with too much

Info-

Insolence towards their Inferiors, but cringe like *Frenchmen* to those above them. They have a great Command of their Passions, serene as their Heaven, says *Loubiere*, which changes but twice a Year, and that insensibly. They are remarkable for living well with their Families. All is Peace at Home, their Children are such sweet, tractable Tempers, that they are the Delight of their Parents, and the King takes Pleasure in nothing more than the Company of Children under seven Years of Age. But then it is observed they grow cunning, and lose their childish Innocence; therefore at that Age, he changes them for others, that will retain their native Simplicity.

As Children grow up, they are taught Modesty and Submission to their Superiors in the first Place, not to be noisy or talkative. In the Houses of great Men, a profound Silence is observed: They are advised rather to listen to their Seniors, than rudely to give their Opinions without being asked: Nothing is esteemed more unpolite, than to pretend to be wiser than the Company, or to relate any Thing, whether true or false, which may create any Uneasiness to those they converse with; and like the *Chinese*, they always avoid speaking in the first Person: They never say, *I* did this, or *you* are in the Wrong; never asserting any Thing positively, but by Way of Question; enquiring, if the Person they speak to, is not of this or that Opinion. When they speak to Ladies, it is always with some respectful Epithet; they insinuate that she is young or fair, whatever her Age or Complexion may be. It is not to be supposed that any Woman can ever suspect Old Age is approaching.

The Way of Salutation here, as in most *Indian* Nations, is the *Salam*, that is, the lifting one or both Hands to their Heads and bowing their Bodies. If any one addresses another who is much his Superior, he falls down upon his Face before him; to stand upright when we attend a great Man, is the highest Piece of Insolence: The usual Posture is sitting on their Heels, with their Heads a little reclined. The Ceremonies used at Visits so much resemble those of the *Chinese*, that they need not be again enumerated here. I shall only take Notice of the uncommon Reverence they have for their Heads, and even for their

Caps, when they have been authorized by the Sovereign to wear them. The Cap, as has been observed, is a Badge of Authority, and seldom worn but on publick Occasions, or when a Magistrate sits in a Court of Justice; and as it is esteemed the rudest Thing in the World, to stroke or touch a Man's Head, so his Cap is treated with uncommon Respect: The Servant who carries it, puts it on a Cane made for that Purpose, and carries it above his Head.

The usual Food in this Country, is Rice and Fish, sometimes fresh, but most commonly dried or pickled, and neither of them very sweet. They follow the Fashion in their eating stinking Fish, which are as much admired there, as stinking Rabbits used to be with us; but they eat also the Flesh of all Manner of Animals as the *Chinese* do, not refusing Rats, Mice, Locusts, or any Insects whatever, seasoning every Thing so very high with Spice, that it is not easy to distinguish one Kind of Flesh from another. Their Liquor is River Water, which must stand a great while before it is settled and fit to drink, especially in the Time of the Rains, when all their Rivers are Torrents, and carry down so much of the Soil along with them, that they occasion the Flux, especially among Foreigners. The Rain-Water which is preserved in capacious Reservoirs, is the wholesomest. They drink Tea in these Countries universally, and in private, it is said, they drink Arrack and Spirits, though these are prohibited.

AMONG their Diversions are the Mock-Fights of Elephants: What they were fondest of, was Cock-Fighting, till their Priests procured an Order against it, esteeming the killing those Animals almost as wicked as the killing a Man. Comedies also are another Part of their Diversion, and a Kind of martial Dances in which they act a Battle, being armed and masked, and in their Songs repeat Part of the History of their Country. Their grand annual Festival is when the Waters retire; then they sail down the River several Evenings successively, their Barges being illuminated with Painted Paper-Lanterns. They have another Festival or Thanksgiving for the Fruits of the Earth after Harvest, when their Streets as well as their Boats are illuminated, and a grand Fire-Work is play'd off

off on the Occasion. Here are Races also, not of Horses but Oxen; and they row Races also upon their Rivers, and are so bewitched by the Games of Chance, that they will not only play away their Wives and Children, but set their own Persons and Liberties on the Cast of a Die, and become Slaves if they lose. The New and Full Moon are so far from being Festivals, that they keep a strict Fast, and will admit no Manner of Diversions on these Days; at this Time it is they make their Offerings to the Priests in their Convents, and give Alms to the Poor. The Offerings are presented by the Priest to the Idol, and some Time after the Priests apply them to their own Use.

In this Country, no Man learns any particular Trade; but every one has some Knowledge of all, and they work half a Year by Turns for the King; when, if any of them should be found perfectly ignorant of the Business he is set about, he would undergo the Bastinado: Nor does any Man endeavour to excel, lest the King should keep him in his Service as long as he lives. The tyrannical Government they live under, is another great Discouragement to Industry, the King seizing on any Man's Money and Effects, when he pleases.

THEIR Carpenters Work is fastened together with wooden Pins instead of Nails: They know how to cast Metals, and cover the Hilt of Swords, and other Things with Gold, Silver, or Copper: They have not the Art of tanning Leather, or of making any Stuffs of Silk or Wool, and weave only Cotton-Cloth. Their Painting is rather worse than that of *China*; being such indifferent Workmen, therefore, they give great Wages to the *European* Artists.

THE *Siamese* not affecting Finery in their Dress, and despising superfluous Ornaments, neglect a great many mechanick Arts, which the *Europeans* are employed in. They appear to be the honestest and fairest Dealers in the World: Their Weights and Measures may be depended on: They are the very Reverse of the *Chinese*. The King is the Chief Merchant in this Country; no Man may traffick with a Foreigner, till the King's Factors have had the Refusal of the Goods; and these Factors descend so low, as to sell them by Retail again. The Sub-

jects are obliged to buy all their Cloathing of them, which is chiefly Cotton-Cloth. He obliges his Subjects to sell him all their Ivory and Arrack at a certain Price, which he sells again to Foreigners.

In the King's Magazines are Salt-Petre, Lead, Sapan-Wood, Gunpowder, Sulphur, and Arms, which his Majesty monopolizes, not suffering his Subjects to deal in these Articles. Skins and Furs also he purchases at his own Price of the People, and disposes of them to Foreigners; but by these Practices he has ruined the Trade of the Country, which was formerly very great. Foreigners as well as his own Subjects are so ill used by the King's Factors, that very few care to resort thither.

MALACCA contains the Southern Provinces of *Siam*; its chief Town, is now in Possession of the *Dutch*, is of the same Name, being situate in one hundred Degrees of Eastern Longitude, and two Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude, on a flat level Shore, close to the Sea, and defended by a strong Castle; the Walls of the Castle are founded on a Rock, and carried up to a great Height. The Town contains about three hundred Families of *Dutch*, *Chinese*, *Portuguese*, and *Mosers*, and some considerable *Armenian* Merchants. The Natives inhabit the Suburbs living in poor Cottages, and tyrannized over by the *Dutch*, which they are not yet reconciled to, appearing greatly discontented in their Looks. The *Chinese* have the best Shops in the Town, of whom may be had any Thing their Country or the neighbouring Islands produce. *Malacca* is esteemed as healthful a Port-Town as is to be met with in so warm a Climate: They have no hot Winds there, as in the *Hiher India*, nor the chilling Winds, that are so destructive in the neighbouring Island of *Sumatra*; however, it is not a Place of any great Trade at present. The *Dutch* drive away all other *European* Nations from this Coast, and endeavour to monopolize the Trade: By a Squadron of Men of War or Cruisers they have here, they are Masters of the Straits of *Malacca*, and can prevent other Nations passing them, or trafficking with the Natives. But to return to the upper Part of *Siam*, which is still subject to that King.

THE Soil of the low Lands is enriched by the annual
bloods,

Floods, and is exceeding proper for Rice, which grows in Water for the most Part. It is sometimes sown also in the high Grounds, and the Rice which grows there is esteemed the best; but then they have poor Crops. They sow Wheat also sometimes; but unless they can turn the Water into their Grounds, it comes to nothing, for all the high Grounds are burnt up as soon as the Rains are over.

THEY begin to plant the Rice in the flat Country, when the Flood has moistened the Earth, and as the Water increases the Rice grows, and keeps its Head above Water till the dry Season approaches, and the Sun has exhauled all the Water, and then is the Time of Harvest. Sometimes it is ripe before the Waters retire, and then they go in Boats to reap it. Their Kitchen Gardens afford them Herbs for Salads, Pulse and Roots, and the Cucumbers and Melons which the poor People eat in the dry Season, are esteemed very innocent Food. The only *European* Fruits almost they have, are Limes, Oranges, and Lemons; but they abound in Plantains, Banana's, Mangoes, Guava's, Jaques, Durion, Tamarinds, Ananas, Coco Nuts, and Sugar-Canes: Here are some *European* Flowers, as the Tuberose, Gilliflower and some few Roses, Jassamine, and Amaranthus, and other Natives of the Country valuable for their Colours and Scent: But it is observed, that in the Heat of the Day, they do not smell near so strong, as they do in the Morning and Evening; and the *European* Flowers transplanted thither, do not afford near so sweet a Smell there, as they do here.

THEIR Hills are covered with good Timber, of which the Bamboo is of great Use in Building; it is a hollow knotted Cane, of an enormous Size, very strong and hard to cut. The Coco Nut, which grows on the low Lands by the Sea-Side, affords them Meat, Drink, and Oil; the Body of the Tree is useful in building Boats and other Vessels, and of the Fibres of the Bark and Nut, they make Cordage; the Leaves serve to write on, and the Branches for Covering for their Houses. The Cotton-Tree is very common here; it bears a Fruit of the Bigness of a Walnut, which opens when it is ripe; within it they find the Cotton; from other Trees they draw Lacque and other Gums:

They

They have also the Sapan, and other Woods proper for dying, and some Lignum Aloes or Aquila.

Of their Animals, Elephants are the chief; there is no Country where they abound more; the King's Elephants have a great Number of Servants to attend them: They are covered with rich Cloths, and adorned with Colours and Streamers, when they appear abroad: No Animals are so tractable and quick of Apprehension: As their Strength and Bulk are such, that there is no bridling nor governing them by Force, they are managed altogether by Signs. These are the longest lived Animals we meet with any where, it is an hundred Years, probably, before they are full grown. The *Siamese* are of Opinion, they are animated by some illustrious Souls. The white Elephant, which the King of *Siam* imagines is the only one of that Colour, and has the Soul of some great Prince lodged in him, he never rides upon; orders him to be served in Gold Plate, and treated as Sovereign of the Species; nor has he much less Esteem for his white Horse than he has for his Elephant; that Beast is honoured in the East, as much as the *Hanoverian* white Pad is in the West. Next to the white Elephant, the black are most esteemed on Account of their Scarcity.

THERE are very few Horses, Sheep, or Goats in this Country; nor is their Mutton or Goat's Flesh to be admired; their Hogs, which resemble those of *China*, are much the best Food: the Oxen and Buffaloes draw their Ploughs and Carriages. They have almost all Manner of Poultry, Wild-Fowl and Game, which are exceeding cheap: But the Flesh of their Fowls as well as their Mutton is poor dry Meat. Venison is so little admired, that they kill the Deer only for their Skins, which the *Dutch* usually purchase of them and carry to *Japan*.

HERE are some beautiful Birds, such as Maccaws, Parrots, &c. but no singing Birds. The Natives will not kill a Bird, but on the contrary, feed them out of Charity, which makes them so tame, that they will come into their Houses, and feed on any Thing they find there.

THE King of *Siam* is not only Sovereign, but Proprietor of all the Lands of the Country, and chief Merchant also,

also, monopolizing most of the Traffick. The Crown is said to be hereditary, but their Tyranny occasions frequent Revolutions. When one Prince is deposed, another is immediately advanced to the Throne, either by Force or the Election of the People: And it is a little strange, that when they have so often suffered by bad Princes, they have never thought of limiting their Power; when they have advanced a new Family to the Throne. As to their Laws and Customs, these are hardly worth mentioning, where the Will and Pleasure of the Prince is the supreme Law.

THE King shews himself to the People but twice a Year, when he distributes his Alms to the *Talapous* or Priests. He is always seen on an elevated Situation, or an Elephant: The King's Seat on his Elephant is not covered with a Top, and is open before; the Man who has the Direction of the Beast, sits upon his Neck, and governs him by Signs, or pricking him with an Iron he holds in his Hand. Tho' the King does but seldom appear in the City, he frequently goes to the *Louvo* to hunt, when his Women attend him on Foot, a Guard of two hundred Men marching before them to drive all People from the Roads and Towns through which they are to pass; and whenever the King stops, all the People about him fall upon their Faces on the Ground.

HERE are no hereditary Nobility, or any Distinctions made between one Man and another, unless what every Man's Office or Post in the Government occasions. The Word *Mandarin* is a *Portuguese* Term, which Writers apply to every great Officer and Magistrate in the East. The King gives a Name to every Officer on his Advancement, which is some Honourable Epithet. The *Portuguese*, 'tis observed, finding several Governments hereditary here, gave the Governors the Title of Kings, representing the King of *Siam* as an Emperor, who had a great Number of vassal Princes dependent on him. This appears to have been the Case also in the neighbouring Kingdoms.

INSTEAD of an Oath of Allegiance every Person who has a Place under the Government, comes before one of the principal *Talapous* or Priests, from whom he receives a
Glas

Glass of Water, which the Priests orders him to drink, repeating at the same Time certain Curses and Imprecations, wishing he may perish, if he does not serve his Prince faithfully.

SUCH is the Tyranny of this Government, that if any of the Prince's Council happens to give him any Advice that does not succeed, he is frequently punished for it; and the great Officers are not only prohibited coming into the King's Presence without Leave, but are forbid to visit one another; and every one is obliged, if he hears any Thing spoken to the Prejudice of the Government, to declare it on Pain of Death: The great Men are absolute Slaves here as they are in *Turkey*. People that live at a Distance from Court, and have no Business with the State are much the happiest. Danger and Servitude are the Fruits of Ambition in all Arbitrary Governments: Nor is the Sovereign much happier, who cannot depend on the Fidelity of his Subjects, who having no Security in their Properties, don't much concern themselves about their Prince's Right or Title.

THE Governors of Provinces, Judges, and Magistrates having no Salaries, or very mean ones, are guilty of great Extortion and Oppression; some Governors having revolted, whose Governments were hereditary, the rest are now made temporary, and continue only for three Years. The Province of *Patan*, however, elect their own Governor, and generally make Choice of an old Woman of some particular Family, who is called Queen; but her Authority is limited, she is obliged to have the Concurrence of the chief Men in every Transaction of Moment: She sends two small Trees of Gold and Silver annually to the King of *Siam*, by way of Tribute, and as an Acknowledgment that she holds that Country of him.

SUBMISSION to Parents and Governors is as strictly required by the Laws of *Siam*, as by those of *China*, and the Aged are much revered here. Lying is punished, and deemed as great a Crime in *Siam* as Perjury is in this Part of the World; and Theft is so much detested, that one who is guilty of it, is at once abandoned by all his Friends, none will intercede for him, or give him any Assistance;

Assistance; and an unjust Possessor of Lands is punished as a Robber.

No Man is suffered to prosecute another, either in a civil or criminal Cause, without giving Security to make the Charge good; every Man is allowed to plead his own Cause, or any of his Relations may speak for him; but the Law is not a Profession of a particular Set of Men.

THE Justice of a Prosecution is tried by various Methods, where the Truth of the Charge is doubtful. Both the Prosecutor and the Defendant are sometimes commanded to walk over burning Coals, and he that escapes is held to have the Right on his Side. Another Method is by diving into deep Water; the Man that continues longest under Water is adjudged innocent.

A THIRD Trial is by Vomits. The Priest gives each of the Parties a Pill, and the Testimony of the Person who keeps the Pill in his Stomach without vomiting, is believed. They throw both the Plaintiff, and Defendant sometimes to a Tyger, and he that comes off unhurt is held to be in the Right; and they will frequently offer themselves to undergo this last Trial, though they appear to be extremely timorous when they are to engage an Enemy.

CRIMINALS are sometimes thrown to an Elephant and trampled to Death, but Punishments are usually adapted to the Nature of the Crime. A Person convicted of Robbing the Publick has melted Metals poured down his Throat; they sew up the Liar's Mouth, and for little Crimes they fasten a square Pillory Board about the Offender's Neck; some are set in the Ground up to the Shoulders, and every one authorised to buffet him, which is the greatest Indignity a *Siamese* can suffer, especially to have his Head buffeted by Women; but though their greatest Men are sometimes punished in this Manner, this is said to be done for their Reformation, they are afterwards restored to their Posts; Officers are frequently punished for the Faults of their inferior Officers, and Parents and Masters of Families for the Faults of their Children and Dependents,

THE Forces of this Kingdom, and the Men able to bear Arms are the same Number, for the whole Nation is regimented, and serve the King by Turns, either in his Wars or in the publick Buildings, and furnishing the Court with Provisions, Cloathing and Utenfils, building Barges, Boats, &c. the *Talapoins*, or Priests, Women and Children, only being excused from these Services. As the *Asiaticks* magnify every Thing they speak of, either as to Numbers, Strength, or Beauty; they call an Officer who has the Command of five hundred, a Commander of ten thousand. Figurative and allegorical Expressions also are much in use; Princes and Men of Eminence are frequently called Stars of the first Magnitude; Ladies are called beautiful Flowers, and the like, which should always be remembered when we read the History of any Eastern Country, or we shall form very odd Ideas of them. We are shocked also at the numerous Armies we read of in that Part of the World; but if we consider that half a Nation, and perhaps several Nations in some extensive Empires, take up Arms at a Time, their Numbers will not appear incredible; but it must surely be in a Figure Writers speak, when they tell us that the King of *Siam* maintains ten thousand Elephants: Neither his Kingdom, nor any other of ten Times the Extent, would be able to feed such an Army of Monsters; nor do I believe that any People ever had one thousand in their Armies, they would not only be unnecessary, but an Incumbrance. They are said indeed to be the Strength of their Armies in the *Farther India*; but they were much more serviceable formerly than they can be now, since Gunpowder and Cannon have been in Use. It would be a very easy Matter to put them in Disorder by Fireworks, and drive them upon their Masters, which would infallibly prove the Loss of a Battle.

BESIDES the ordinary Militia, the King has a Battalion of Guards at his Palace of *Louvo*, consisting of eight hundred Men, and four hundred more at *Bancock*. These have been instructed in Military Discipline by some *Europeans* the late King retained in his Service. They have some small Artillery, which are carried in Waggon, but how they fire them does not appear, for they have no proper

proper Carriages to lay them on; however, we are told they begin the Battle with these, and it is very seldom they advance within Musket-Shot of an Enemy. One Side or other retires before they come to a close Fight, and secure themselves by Intrenchments and Barricadoes in the Woods and Mountains; for this Country is very well secured against Invasions by their Mountains on one Side, and by the Sea on the other. The Floods also are a good Defence in the rainy Season; the *Siamese* very artfully drew the People of *Pegu* into their Country a little before the Rains began, in one of their IncurSIONs, and kept them in Play till the Waters rose to such a Height that they could not retreat; and thus the *Pegu* Army was entirely ruined without fighting. There are scarce any fortified Towns in *Siam*, or any of the adjacent Countries, and very little Occasion for any; the Mountains and Waters are a better Defence: It is no Wonder, therefore, we hear of no Sieges in the *Farther India*; this Part of the Art of War they are perfectly Strangers to.

As the King is Proprietor of all the Lands in the Country, he reserves a Rent on every Acre he lets out; a Duty is laid also on every Ship, Boat and Vessel, and on every Fruit-Tree: And he has six Months Service of his Subjects, who are employed in all Manner of Manufactures for the King's Use. Presents are made by the Governors and Officers he advances, and he monopolizes almost every Branch of Trade. The Kingdom to him is one great Farm, of which the Sovereign alone receives the Profit. It is impossible therefore his Subjects can be rich. They are all Slaves, and work only for him; and yet the Tyranny of the Government, and the Restraint he lays upon Trade are such that few Foreigners care to traffick with him, and with all the Advantages already enumerated, he himself is neither rich or powerful. The *Dutch* do what they please with him, build Forts, and possess themselves of what Part of his Dominions they see fit, and by their Fleets drive all other Foreigners from his Coast, whenever they please. His whole Revenue in Money, 'tis computed, does not amount annually to three hundred thousand Pounds Sterling.

Two Languages are spoken by the *Siameſe*, namely, the *Baly* and the *Siameſe*: In the *Baly* they have thirty-three Letters, and in the *Siameſe* thirty-seven, all Conſonants, and there are a great Number of Vowels in both Languages, for which they have particular Characters, ſome placed before the Conſonant and others after, ſome above, and others under the Conſonant. In theſe Languages much depends upon the Accent and Tone of the Voice; they rather ſing than ſpeak. The *Baly* is a dead Language, and ſpoke only by the Learned: I take what Writers call the *Siameſe*, to be indeed the *Malayan* Language, which is ſpoke commonly upon the Coaſts of the *Farther India*, and the adjacent Iſlands. It is ſtrange, that when *Siam* and all the Countries almoſt near *China*, have long had the Uſe of Letters, that the *Chineſe* ſhould ſtill neglect to introduce them, but make uſe only of a Kind of Hieroglyphicks, which, in a few Generations, are rendered unintelligible. Not only the Aſtronomy of the *Siameſe* is very imperfect, but they were very lately ignorant of the Figure of the Earth, as well as its Motion, and I believe remain ſtill ſo: But they are great Pretenders to Aſtrology as well as the *Chineſe*. They would make us believe they can charm away Diſeaſes, calculate Nativities, and foretel future Events; but are very cautious when they are conſulted by the Prince, who ſometimes rewards them with a good Baſtinado if they deceive him. To procure or eſtabliſh Health, the *Siameſe*, and other *Indian* Nations, after bathing, have their Slaves to rub and chafe them, ſtretch their Limbs, mould and ſqueeze their Fleſh from Head to Foot, which is a pleaſant, as well as a wholeſome Operation. Their Phyſicians ſeldom let Blood or Vomit, they have a great Opinion of Sweats, and ſometimes purge their Patients; but their beſt Receipt ſeems to be Congee, a Water-gruel made of Rice, to which Diet they uſually confine the Patient till he recovers. If a Medicine preſcribed fails of producing the expected Effect, the Phyſicians impute it to the Malice of ſome evil Spirit, and are very dextrous in deceiving their Patients; and, as one obſerves, there will never want Pretenders as long as there are Fools to be impoſed upon.

THE *Siamese* Court has a very mean Opinion of Ambassadors, looking upon them rather as Factors than Representatives of their Princes: They pay more Respect to the Letter he brings from his Master, than to his Person, and seldom send Ambassadors to other Courts, but upon Business relating to Trade. When he is admitted to an Audience, he is directed not to address himself to the King, till his Majesty speaks to him first; nor are they pleased with a long Speech, the less Time it takes up, the greater is the Respect paid him; they esteem a tedious Harangue a Kind of Insult. When the Ambassador has concluded his Speech, he is presented with a Vest, which he immediately puts on in the King's Presence, and is ordered afterwards to confer with the Prime Minister, or *Barcalon*. This People, 'tis observed, are not hasty in their Resolutions, and will never omit Matters of Form. The Women only seem to have the Liberty of addressing this Prince with Freedom, and they know very well how to adapt their Flattery to his Humour: As he has a great Passion to be thought a wise and politick Prince, they dwell chiefly on his Wisdom, which they declare surpasses that of all other Princes, and touch but lightly on his Courage, Wealth and Grandeur, which he affects to despise. It is not out of Inclination that he governs his People with a strict Hand, he declares, but because he apprehends it necessary: For his Subjects, he observes, are like his Monkies, who are very obedient, while he holds their Chain, but disregard him as soon as they are at Liberty.

THE *Portuguese*, who first visited this Country, called their Temples Pagoda's, from the *Persian* Poutgheda, which in that Language signifies a Temple; but the *Siamese* Name is *Piban*: Some call the Idol, as well as the Temple, a Pagoda; but I apprehend the Idol is the Pagod, and the Temple it is worshipped in the Pagoda. These Temples, and the Area about them, are surrounded by a Wall, and beyond the Wall are Convents of *Talapoins* and *Talapoinesses* (or the Cells of their Priests and Priestesses) who live in separate Houses. The Females, or Nuns, are not forced into these Convents, neither are they obliged to remain there any longer than they see fit;

but none are admitted till the Decline of Life. The Education of Youth is committed to the *Talapoins*, and they are served by their Scholars. These *Talapoins* are a Sort of begging Friars, which live upon the Alms of the People, and every one eats what he begs, or is given him, by himself, and not in a common Room. They are very hospitable to all Strangers, Christians as well as others, and have Lodgings for them on each Side their Gate.

THESE Priests vow Celibacy, and lead very austere Lives; the Penalty of deviating from their Rules is no less than Burning, which the King takes care shall be rigorously executed, to prevent too many of his Subjects turning *Talapoins*, since they pay no Duties, and contribute nothing to the Defence or Support of the State.

THEY preach every New and Full Moon, and during the Inundation, every Day, from Morning till Evening, the Preacher sitting cross-legged on a raised Floor, and is relieved when he is weary by one of his Brethren; the People expressing their Assent to the Reasonableness of the Doctrine, and bringing their Alms to the Preacher, by which many of them grow rich. The Time of the Rains is their annual Fast, when they eat nothing but a little Fruit in the Evening. The *Talapoins* are obliged to watch as well as pray, especially after Harvest, when they go out into the Fields in the Night-Time, and return into the Towns in the Morning; and though others are apt to think themselves in Danger of wild Beasts when they are abroad in the Night-Time, the People are made to believe, that a Tyger will not touch a *Talapoin*, they are so sanctified a Generation; and if any one happens to be killed by a wild Beast, they either deny it, or say he did not live up to the Rules of his Order. These Priests shave their Heads, Beards, and Eyebrows, and carry a Talapot, or broad Leaf, in their Hands, which serves them for an Umbrella. The Superior shaves himself, because no Man is worthy to touch his Head, and the Elder always shave the Younger; but when he is grown too old, a young *Talapoin* is permitted to shave him, who asks Pardon first, and declares himself unworthy of that Honour.

Honour. They wear a yellow Cloth about their Loins, and another about their Shoulders.

THEY wash in the Morning as soon as they can see, and not sooner, for fear they should destroy some Insect. After washing, they perform their Devotions in the Temple, which they sing as in Choirs, their Books are Coco-Nut Leaves, on which they write, or rather engrave; for they have not yet the Art of Printing: They sing their Devotions sitting upon their Heels; but both Priests and People, at their going in and out of the Temple, prostrate themselves three Times before their Idols. After the Morning Devotion, they go into the City, and standing at the Doors of the Houses they expect any Thing from, their Food is brought them, but they never ask for it, though there does not seem to be much Occasion for these Alms; for they have Lands and Gardens appropriated to their Convents, and Slaves to cultivate them, and they are exempt from Taxes. The *Talapoins* have Servants as well as Slaves, who wear a white Habit, and receive the Money given their Masters, it being a Sin for the *Talapoin* to touch Money himself: The *Talapoinesses* wear White, and if they are taken with a Man, are delivered to their Relations to chastise; for it is against their Rules for a *Talapoin* to strike any one. Most of the *Indians* believe a pre-existent State, and that they are punished here for Offences they have committed in another; and they believe, that if they are not reformed in this Life, they shall pass into other Bodies, till they are sufficiently purified to be received into Paradise; some of the *Talapoins* will take upon them to relate what has happened to them in a former State. They believe the Soul to be material, and yet not subject to the Touch; that it retains the human Figure after Death, and appears to its Acquaintance; and the Wounds of one that has been murdered, will then be visible.

THE Things chiefly required of the *Talapoins* are, that they neither kill or steal, or commit Uncleaness, drink strong Liquor, or tell Lies: By the first they understand they are not only forbidden to kill Animals but Vegetables, and therefore do not destroy any Plant or the Seed of it, but eat, however, of the Fruit, which does not

effect the Life. They have various Ways of evading these Precepts, for though they do not boil Rice, which is a Seed, themselves, because that would kill it, yet if others boil and kill it, they esteem the eating of it innocent : And though they think the making Water upon the Earth to be a Sin, because it corrupts it; yet if they make use of a Vessel, and their Servant pours it on the Earth, they do not think themselves answerable for the Consequences.

Musick, Plays, and Dancing, or the being present at such Entertainments is held sinful in a Priest, or *Talapoin*; also the using Perfumes, and even the Touch of Gold or Silver: The intermeddling in Trade, or any Thing else, which does not relate to Religion, is held sinful in them; they may not judge or censure any Man, or look upon a Woman, so as to take any Delight in the Object. The Meat they beg they must not lay up any Part of it till the next Day, but give it to some Animal: It is with them a Sin to ride upon any Beast, or be carried in any Kind of Vehicle; to wear Shoes or fine Cloaths; to eat out of Plate; to boast of their Parts, Learning, or Pedigree, laugh aloud, or visit any but their own Relations; to look impudently in any Man's Face; to be angry, wrangle, or threaten any one: All these are esteemed Sins in a *Talapoin*, but are not required of Laymen; nor do they imagine that a Layman can arrive at those Degrees of Perfection as the Priests may, who, by their great Piety, in their own Opinion, make Satisfaction for the Sins of the People: They are, however, esteemed very proud, from their taking Place of the Laity, and refusing to salute any Man, except a Brother *Talapoin*. They never mourn for the Death of the nearest Relation: In their Confession to their Superiors, as it is called, they never acknowledge themselves guilty of any Sin, only declare they have obeyed all God's Commands: That they neither steal, or lye, or drink strong Liquor, proceeding to justify themselves like the Pharisee in every Article, though there is very little Truth in all this; they have only been busying themselves in finding out Stratagems to evade their Laws. They hold that no Man will be eternally punished; that the Good after several Transmigrations, will enjoy eternal Felicity, and those that are not to be reformed, will be doomed to a perpetual Transmigration. THE

THE chief Object of their Adoration is a departed Saint, whom they have named *Sommona Codom*: *Sommona* is a *Talapoia* of the Woods, whom they esteem the holiest of their Sect, and *Codom* was the proper Name of the Saint who was removed to Heaven, as a Reward of his inimitable Piety; and what is very odd, they relate, that the Mother of this Saint was *Maba Maria*, or the *Great Mary*, from whence the Missionaries infer, that by *Sommona Codom* is meant *Jesus Christ*, St. *Thomas* the Apostle having preached in *India*; but I am afraid we cannot rely entirely on Missionaries in relation to this Matter. They relate further, that the Father of *Sommona Codom* was King of the Island of *Ceylon*; that he distributed his Estate and Effects among the Poor, killed his Wife and Children, and gave their Flesh for Food to the *Talapous*.

THEIR Legends add, that *Sommona Codom*, before he left the World, worked many Miracles, and among others altered the Dimensions of his own Body, sometimes appeared a Giant, and at others less than a Dwarf, and sometimes was invisible: That he had two favourite Disciples, whose Images they place on the same Altar; one of them called *Pra Mogla*, they relate, overturned the Earth, and took Hell-Fire into the Hollow of his Hand, with an Intent to extinguish it, but was prevented by *Sommona Codom*, who observed that Men would be still more wicked, if the Terror of that Punishment was withdrawn. The *Siamese* imagine this *Sommona Codom* is the Protector or Guardian-Angel of their Nation only, and that every People have their particular Protector or Demon that presides over them; nor do they look upon *Sommona Codom* as the Author of their Religion, but that he restored it, after Men were become abandoned to Vice, and no longer influenced by its Precepts.

THEY have no Prejudices to Men of other Religions; every Nation may worship God as they are taught: There is no Reason to hate and make War upon any People, because they have been differently educated: All Men seem to agree in the Worship of the Supreme God. The Saints and great Men, to whose Honour they erect Temples and Images, they look upon as Mediators and Intercessors for them; and these can no more be esteemed Gods in the first Sense of the Word, than the Popish Saints.

but none are admitted till the Decline of Life. The Education of Youth is committed to the *Talapoins*, and they are served by their Scholars. These *Talapoins* are a Sort of begging Friars, which live upon the Alms of the People, and every one eats what he begs, or is given him, by himself, and not in a common Room. They are very hospitable to all Strangers, Christians as well as others, and have Lodgings for them on each Side their Gate.

These Priests vow Celibacy, and lead very austere Lives; the Penalty of deviating from their Rules is no less than Burning, which the King takes care shall be rigorously executed, to prevent too many of his Subjects turning *Talapoins*, since they pay no Duties, and contribute nothing to the Defence or Support of the State.

They preach every New and Full Moon, and during the Inundation, every Day, from Morning till Evening, the Preacher sitting cross-legged on a raised Floor, and is relieved when he is weary by one of his Brethren; the People expressing their Assent to the Reasonableness of the Doctrine, and bringing their Alms to the Preacher, by which many of them grow rich. The Time of the Rains is their annual Fast, when they eat nothing but a little Fruit in the Evening. The *Talapoins* are obliged to watch as well as pray, especially after Harvest, when they go out into the Fields in the Night-Time, and return into the Towns in the Morning; and though others are apt to think themselves in Danger of wild Beasts when they are abroad in the Night-Time, the People are made to believe, that a Tyger will not touch a *Talapoin*, they are so sanctified a Generation; and if any one happens to be killed by a wild Beast, they either deny it, or say he did not live up to the Rules of his Order. These Priests shave their Heads, Beards, and Eyebrows, and carry a Talapot, or broad Leaf, in their Hands, which serves them for an Umbrella. The Superior shaves himself, because no Man is worthy to touch his Head, and the Elder always shave the Younger; but when he is grown too old, a young *Talapoin* is permitted to shave him, who asks Pardon first, and declares himself unworthy of that Honour.

Honour. They wear a yellow Cloth about their Loins, and another about their Shoulders.

THEY wash in the Morning as soon as they can see, and not sooner, for fear they should destroy some Insect. After washing, they perform their Devotions in the Temple, which they sing as in Choirs, their Books are Coco-Nut Leaves, on which they write, or rather engrave; for they have not yet the Art of Printing: They sing their Devotions sitting upon their Heels; but both Priests and People, at their going in and out of the Temple, prostrate themselves three Times before their Idols. After the Morning Devotion, they go into the City, and standing at the Doors of the Houses they expect any Thing from, their Food is brought them, but they never ask for it, though there does not seem to be much Occasion for these Alms; for they have Lands and Gardens appropriated to their Convents, and Slaves to cultivate them, and they are exempt from Taxes. The *Talapoins* have Servants as well as Slaves, who wear a white Habit, and receive the Money given their Masters, it being a Sin for the *Talapoin* to touch Money himself: The *Talapoinesses* wear White, and if they are taken with a Man, are delivered to their Relations to chastise; for it is against their Rules for a *Talapoin* to strike any one. Most of the *Indians* believe a pre-existent State, and that they are punished here for Offences they have committed in another; and they believe, that if they are not reformed in this Life, they shall pass into other Bodies, till they are sufficiently purified to be received into Paradise; some of the *Talapoins* will take upon them to relate what has happened to them in a former State. They believe the Soul to be material, and yet not subject to the Touch; that it retains the human Figure after Death, and appears to its Acquaintance; and the Wounds of one that has been murdered, will then be visible.

THE Things chiefly required of the *Talapoins* are, that they neither kill or steal, or commit Uncleanneſs, drink strong Liquor, or tell Lies: By the first they understand they are not only forbidden to kill Animals but Vegetables, and therefore do not destroy any Plant or the Seed of it, but eat, however, of the Fruit, which does not

effect the Life. They have various Ways of evading these Precepts, for though they do not boil Rice, which is a Seed, themselves, because that would kill it, yet if others boil and kill it, they esteem the eating of it innocent : And though they think the making Water upon the Earth to be a Sin, because it corrupts it; yet if they make use of a Vessel, and their Servant pours it on the Earth, they do not think themselves answerable for the Consequences.

Musick, Plays, and Dancing, or the being present at such Entertainments is held sinful in a Priest, or *Talapoin*; also the using Perfumes, and even the Touch of Gold or Silver: The intermeddling in Trade, or any Thing else, which does not relate to Religion, is held sinful in them; they may not judge or censure any Man, or look upon a Woman, so as to take any Delight in the Object. The Meat they beg they must not lay up any Part of it till the next Day, but give it to some Animal: It is with them a Sin to ride upon any Beast, or be carried in any Kind of Vehicle; to wear Shoes or fine Cloaths; to eat out of Plate; to boast of their Parts, Learning, or Pedigree, laugh aloud, or visit any but their own Relations; to look impudently in any Man's Face; to be angry, wrangle, or threaten any one: All these are esteemed Sins in a *Talapoin*, but are not required of Laymen; nor do they imagine that a Layman can arrive at those Degrees of Perfection as the Priests may, who, by their great Piety, in their own Opinion, make Satisfaction for the Sins of the People: They are, however, esteemed very proud, from their taking Place of the Laity, and refusing to salute any Man, except a Brother *Talapoin*. They never mourn for the Death of the nearest Relation: In their Confession to their Superiors, as it is called, they never acknowledge themselves guilty of any Sin, only declare they have obeyed all God's Commands: That they neither steal, or lye, or drink strong Liquor, proceeding to justify themselves like the Pharisee in every Article, though there is very little Truth in all this; they have only been busying themselves in finding out Stratagems to evade their Laws. They hold that no Man will be eternally punished; that the Good after several Transmigrations, will enjoy eternal Felicity, and those that are not to be reformed, will be doomed to a perpetual Transmigration. THE

THE chief Object of their Adoration is a departed Saint, whom they have named *Sommona Codom*: *Sommona* is a *Talapoin* of the Woods, whom they esteem the holiest of their Sect, and *Codom* was the proper Name of the Saint who was removed to Heaven, as a Reward of his inimitable Piety; and what is very odd, they relate, that the Mother of this Saint was *Maba Maria*, or the *Great Mary*, from whence the Missionaries infer, that by *Sommona Codom* is meant *Jesus Christ*, St. *Thomas* the Apostle having preached in *India*; but I am afraid we cannot rely entirely on Missionaries in relation to this Matter. They relate further, that the Father of *Sommona Codom* was King of the Island of *Ceylon*; that he distributed his Estate and Effects among the Poor, killed his Wife and Children, and gave their Flesh for Food to the *Talapoins*.

THEIR Legends add, that *Sommona Codom*, before he left the World, worked many Miracles, and among others altered the Dimensions of his own Body, sometimes appeared a Giant, and at others less than a Dwarf, and sometimes was invisible: That he had two favourite Disciples, whose Images they place on the same Altar; one of them called *Pra Megla*, they relate, overturned the Earth, and took Hell-Fire into the Hollow of his Hand, with an Intent to extinguish it, but was prevented by *Sommona Codom*, who observed that Men would be still more wicked, if the Terror of that Punishment was withdrawn. The *Siamese* imagine this *Sommona Codom* is the Protector or Guardian-Angel of their Nation only, and that every People have their particular Protector or Demon that presides over them; nor do they look upon *Sommona Codom* as the Author of their Religion, but that he restored it, after Men were become abandoned to Vice, and no longer influenced by its Precepts.

THEY have no Prejudices to Men of other Religions; every Nation may worship God as they are taught: There is no Reason to hate and make War upon any People, because they have been differently educated: All Men seem to agree in the Worship of the Supreme God. The Saints and great Men, to whose Honour they erect Temples and Images, they look upon as Mediators and Intercessors for them; and these can no more be esteemed Gods in the first Sense of the Word, than the Popish Saints.

THE *Indians* not being prejudiced against any Religion, the Reasonableness of the Christian Doctrines would certainly have induced them to have embraced them, in the Opinion of *Loubiere*, if the Ambition, Avarice, Injustice, and Tyranny of the *European* Nations, who have had Settlements there, had not contradicted the Doctrines they taught, and raised in the *Indians* an Abhorrence of their Persons and Practices.

THERE are a great many Preliminaries to be adjusted in *Siam*, before a Contract of Marriage is made: An Astrologer is to be consulted and the Nativities of the young Couple are to be calculated. From this cunning Man also, they are to learn, whether it is likely to prove a happy Match, and whether the Family they are about to marry into be rich; it not being easy for any Man, who is not a Conjuror, to know this; all People that have Wealth endeavouring to conceal it, lest the Government should borrow it. When the Parties have gained the best Information they can in these Particulars, and are satisfied with them, the Lover is permitted to visit his Mistress three Times, and the Relations being present at the Third, the Portion is paid, and then the Marriage is esteemed compleat, without any religious Ceremony perform'd, and it is soon after consummated. The *Talapoin* is prohibited to be present on those Occasions; however, he visits the married Couple in a few Days, sprinkles them with Water, and repeats a Prayer for their Prosperity. The *Siamese* are allowed more Wives than one, but seldom make use of this Privilege, except their great Men, who take these Liberties in most Countries, whether their Religion or Laws prohibit it or not.

THERE is but one Wife however in Reality, who is so by Contract; the rest are Concubines purchased with their Money, and may be sold again; nor can their Children inherit. The Fidelity of the *Siamese* Wives is much applauded, they seldom give their Husbands Occasion to be jealous, and are exceeding diligent. They work and maintain the Family, when the Husband is in the King's Service, as he is obliged to be one Half of the Year. Divorces are allowed, but those happen very seldom, and when they

they do, the Man returns the Wife's Fortune, and the Children are divided between them. As the Women carry on all the Trade, there is a Necessity of allowing them greater Liberties than they do in other hot Countries, and they are so far from abusing their Liberty, that they avoid every Thing that may give any Occasion for Scandal. There have been Instances of Transgressions, however, among the Royal Concubines: One of these Offenders, the King ordered to be covered by a Horse, and then put to Death. And *Loubiere* relates, that another Offender being thrown to the Tygers which refused to seize her, the King offered her a Pardon, but she would not accept it, chusing rather to be torn in Pieces, than return to the Drudgeries of the Palace, the King being present at this terrible Execution.

THE *Siamese* both burn and bury their Dead; they lay the Corpse upon the Funeral-Pile, and let it burn, till good Part of it is consumed: Then they take up the Remainder, and inter it in a Burying-Place which surrounds some Temple. The Reason they do not burn it entirely to Ashes, 'tis said, is because they suppose the Deceased is happy, where any considerable Part of his Remains escape the Fire: Instead of a Tomb-Stone, they erect a Pyramid over the Grave; and though they used formerly to bury Treasure with the Corpse, these Places being deemed so sacred, that none durst attempt to rob their Graves; yet Thieves are not deterred from making free with such Treasures at present, and therefore they now bury only painted Papers, and other Trifles, instead of real Treasure: And here, as in *China*, great Men erect Temples near the Place where they design to be buried: And those who cannot build a Temple, present an Idol to some Temple already erected.

I PROCEED, in the next Place, to describe the Situation of such other great Towns as are comprehended in *Siam*, and its Dependencies. As *Mcnaungfang*, situate on the River *Menan*, in twenty-two Degrees of North Latitude. *Lacontai*, situate on the same River, in twenty-one Degrees North Latitude. *Porfeluc*, on the same River, in twenty Degrees four Minutes North Latitude. *Campengpet*, in eighteen Degrees North Latitude. *Prabat*, in six-

teen Degrees. *Louvo*, in fifteen Degrees thirty Minutes North Latitude, which is the King's Hunting-Seat. *Bangkok*, fifty Miles South of *Siam*. This may properly be called the Port-Town to *Siam*; for here Ships receive their Licence to trade, and their Discharges. *Martaban*, situate in sixteen Degrees North Latitude, on the Bay of *Bengal*. *Tenassarim*, in thirteen Degrees North Latitude, at the Mouth of a River of the same Name, near the Bay of *Bengal*. *Ligor*, in eight Degrees North Latitude. *Liam* or *Chantebon*, in twelve Degrees North Latitude. *Patan*, in six Degrees North Latitude. *Queda*, in seven Degrees North Latitude. *Sincapora*, in one Degree North Latitude, being the most Southerly Promontory of this Country. *Johr*, in one Degree thirty Minutes North Latitude, which, with the adjacent Territory, have rendered themselves independent of the King of *Siam*.

THERE is no History of *Siam*, that can be depended on, before the Year 1500. It is only *supposed* to be the *Golden Chersonese* of the Antients: And this there seems to be but little Foundation for, because Gold is not the Produce of this Country. It is said also, this and the neighbouring Countries of the *Farther India* were formerly tributary to *China*: And this is pure Conjecture; for the *Sicinese* have no such Tradition, much less History. They have had the Use of Letters some Time, but they don't so much as pretend to have any antient Records. When the *Portuguese* took the City of *Malacca* in the Year 1511, *Mahomet* an *Arabian* was Sovereign of that City, and the Territory about it independent of the King of *Siam*. For the *Arabians*, and *Egyptians* had certainly driven the original Inhabitants, the *Malays*, from this Coast, as they had the Natives of *Sumatra*, *Java*, *Borneo*, *Macassar*, the *Molucca's*, *Banda*, &c. from the Coast of the *Indian Islands*, and possessed themselves of the rich Produce of those Countries, viz. of the Cloves of the *Molucca's*, the Nutmegs and Mace of *Banda*, the Camphire of *Borneo*, the Gold of *Luconia* and *Sumatra*, and the Gums, Perfumes and sweet Woods that were to be found in most of these Countries; and the City of *Malacca* was the great Mart, where this Merchandize was to be met with, when the *Portuguese* made themselves Masters of it. We cannot doubt of the

Egyptians

Egyptians and *Arabians* being possessed of this Trade, till the *Portuguese* found the Way to *India* by the *Cape of Good Hope*; for we find the Grand Seignior, who was then Sovereign of *Egypt*, the Coast of *Arabia*, and the *Red Sea*, fitting out Fleets, and engaging the *Portuguese* in several Battles in the *Indian Seas*, to prevent their settling themselves in *India*, which, he was sensible, would deprive his Subjects of the rich Trade they had enjoyed for many Years: And very probably, the *Arabians* traded in these Spices, before the *Israelites* went down into *Egypt*; inasmuch as we find them carried through *Arabia* into *Egypt*, when *Joseph* who was sold to the *Ishmaelite* Merchants, who were trading thither with their Camels in a Caravan: And though the People of *Siam* and the adjacent Countries, have no Histories or Records, that give any Account of this antient Traffick, yet, 'tis strange, that the *Phanicians* and *Arabians* have no Histories relating to their *Indian* Expeditions; or, if such Histories have been destroyed, that there are no Copies or Extracts from them now remaining, unless what we meet with in the Scriptures. I have often wondered how *Siam* and the *Indian* Islands came to have the Use of Letters, when the *Chinese* have no Letters to this Day. But the Wonder ceases, if we consider, how soon the *Indians* might learn the Use of Letters from the *Phanicians* and *Arabs*: Whereas there does not seem to have been any Correspondence between the *Arabs* and the *Chinese*. I shall conclude with an Observation or two on their modern History: And I find, that the Kingdom of *Siam* and that of *Pegu*, have frequently been engaged in Wars, and at some Times, *Siam* has been tributary to *Pegu*; and at others, *Pegu* have been conquered by *Siam*: But at present, they are independant of each other. The *Portuguese* were, in a Manner, Sovereigns of *Malacca* and the Coasts of *Siam* both North and South, from the Year 1511, to the Year 1640, when the *Dutch* took that City, and now remain Sovereigns of it and of the Sea-Coast, and particularly of the Straits of *Malacca*; and by their Men of War stationed here, and at *Batavia*, can prevent all other Nations trading to *China* through the Straits of *Malacca* and *Sunda*.

THESE Kingdoms are situate between ninety-two and one hundred Degrees of East Longitude, and between sixteen and twenty-two Degrees of North Latitude, bounded by *Tipra* and *Acham* on the North, by *Laos* on the East, by *Siam* on the South, and by the Bay of *Bengal* on the West. A Ridge of Mountains runs through the Middle of this Country from North to South, and another Chain of Mountains divides it from *Laos*. That Part of the Country which lies on the Bay of *Bengal*, is low Land, and flooded annually, like the Sea Coast of *Siam*. The chief Rivers are, 1. The *Menan*, which runs from North to South, and falls into the Bay of *Siam*. 2. The *Pegu* and *Ava*, whose Streams being united, fall into the Bay of *Bengal*. And, 3. The *Arracan*, which falls into the same Bay. These Countries lying between the Tropicks, the Air in the Vallies are excessive hot; but the Wind blowing from the Sea great Part of the Day, refreshes the parched Inhabitants in the dry Season, and their Mountains, as in other Countries, are always cool.

Of the three Divisions, I have thrown this Country into, that of *Ava* lies towards the North, the chief Town whereof is *Laflora*, situate in ninety-six Degrees of East Longitude, and twenty one Degrees twenty Minutes North Latitude. The second Division, *Arracan*, lies West of *Ava*, on the Bay of *Bengal*, the Capital of the same Name, situate near the Mouth of the River *Arracan*. The third Division is *Pegu*, situate South of *Ava* and *Arracan*, the Capital City whereof is *Pegu*, situate on a River of the same Name.

THE Produce of these Countries is Rice, Sugar-Canes, Furs, Skins, Salt-Petre, Rubies, Sapphires, Plantains, Mangoes, Tamarinds, Coco-Nut, and other Tropical Fruits; and they have the same Animals as in *Siam*, especially Elephants.

HERE, if we may credit the concurrent Testimony of our Seamen that visit this Coast, the Ladies are very free of their Favours, and their Parents and Husbands are so far from being jealous of them, that they will offer their Wives and Daughters to the *Europeans*. As to the Persons, Habits, Religion and Customs of the Natives in other Respects, I can't learn that they are different from

from those of *Siam*. There are a great many monstrous and ridiculous Stories, indeed, related of these People, as, that they worship the Devil, and their Priests run about with a Torch in one Hand, and Rice in the other, every Morning, to give the Devil his Breakfast; that they quit their Houses three Months every Year, and leave the Devils to inhabit them; that the Kings of *Pegu* and *Ava*, have each of them above five thousand Elephants brought up for War; that they are fed in silver Vessels, and clothed in gold and silver Stuffs, and Canopies of the same held over their Heads; that they are washed in the River every Day, and the Musick played before them when they march'd. But I shall not trespass upon the Reader's Patience, to relate any more of this idle Stuff, with which Books of Travels are frequently filled.

THESE three Kingdoms of *Pegu*, *Ava* and *Arracan*, have sometimes been under the Dominions of one Sovereign, and at others, each of them have had their King. And if we might credit some of our Voyage-Writers, one of these Kings had a Million and half of Men in his Army, besides five thousand Elephants, which is impossible to be true; but that they are all absolute Princes, is probable enough, because most of the Eastern Monarchs are such. As for the Inland Countries of *Brama*, *Tipra*, *Acham*, and *Boutan*, which lie between the *Hither India* and *China*, and adjoin to the *Tartarian Thibet*; I take them to consist of *Tartarian* Hords or Tribes, and that their Customs do not differ much from those of *Thibet*, and therefore refer the Reader to the Description of that Country already treated of; only observe here, that this Country is so mountainous, that it is almost inaccessible, which is the Reason it has no Correspondence either with the *Hither India* or *China*.

C H A P. VII.

Gives a short Description of the Islands in the Ethiopian Seas, with some remarkable Passages historical and accidental.

MADAGASCAR, is one of the largest Islands in the known World, and affords most Part of the Requisites of human Life: It produces very large Cattle, whose Flesh is excellent. They have also Goats and Deer plenty enough, and when the *Portuguese* first sailed along the Coasts of this Island, they left a Brood of Hogs, that has mightily encreased. The *French* made a Settlement on the East Side of it, and called it *Port Dauphin*; but finding that the Commerce there would not bear the Expence of the Colony, they left it again.

THE *English* formerly drove a Trade for Slaves on the West Side of the Island, particularly at St. *Augustine's* Bay, and at new and old *Messalige*, but now they are afraid of the Pirates, tho' some venture their Necks in going to trade with them. There have been several Squadrons of *British* Men of War sent to cruize on the Pirates, but have had very ill Success in finding them out, but one *Scots* Ship commanded by one *Millar*, did the Publick more Service in destroying them, than all the chargeable Squadrons that have been sent in Quest of them; for, with a Cargo of strong Ale and Brandy, which he carried to sell them, in the Year 1704. he killed above five hundred of them by carousing, tho' they took his Ship and Cargo as a Present from him, and his Men entered, most of them, into the Society of the Pirates.

Madagascar is invironed with Islands and dangerous Sholes, both of Rocks and Sand. St. *Mary's*, on the East Side, is the Place where the Pirates first chose for their *Ashlum*, having a good Harbour to secure them from the Weather, tho' in going in there are some Difficulties, but hearing that Squadrons of *English* Ships were come in Quest of them, they removed to the main Island for more Security, and there they have made themselves free Denizons by Marriage: And I am of Opinion, that it will
be

be no easy Matter to dispossess them. In the Year 1722, Mr. *Matthews* went in Quest of them, but found they had deserted the Island of *St. Mary's*, leaving behind them some Marks of their Robberies, for in some Places they found Pepper a Foot thick, lying on the Ground in the open Air. The Commodore aforesaid went with his Squadron over to the main Island, but the Pirates had carried their Ships into Rivers or Creeks, out of Danger of the Men of War, and to offer to burn them with their Boats, would have been impracticable, since they could have easily distressed the Boats Crews out of the Woods. The Commodore had some Discourse with some of them, but they stood on their Guard, ready to defend themselves, if any Violence had been offered them.

THERE are many Islands and Sholes lying to the Eastward of *Madagascar*. *St. Apolloni* is uninhabited; *Domascaenbas* is inhabited by the *French*, but formerly by the *English*, and was called by them, *The English Forest*. *Maritius* was formerly inhabited by the *Dutch*, but in the Year 1703. they had Orders to leave it, and repair to *Batavia*, and the *Dutch* Company sent Shipping for their Transportation. *Diego R. is*, which is the next Island to *Maritius*, was made a *French* Settlement, but finding it barren, they left it in three Years, all the rest were always uninhabited, as well to the Eastward as the Northward, and but three or four to the Westward, who lie in the Channel between *Quiloa* and *Madagascar*.

Comora is the Westmost of the inhabited Islands, and affords nothing but a scrimp Maintenance for a parcel of poor miserable Creatures. *Johanna* is within Sight of *Comora*, and is a plentiful Island, in Cattle, Goats, Fowls and Fish, with good Lemons and Oranges, so that most Part of the *English* Shipping bound to *Mocha*, *Persia* and *Surat*, usually called there for Refreshments, till the Pirates began to frequent it. There are two memorable Accidents fell out at that Island, to the *English East-India* Company's Shipping. One was in the Year 1690 or 91. to Captain *Burton* in the *Herbert*, a Ship of eighty Tons, mounted fifty-six Guns. He was attacked by three *French* Ships, each gunn'd and mann'd as well as he. On their Approach, he cut his Cables, and put to Sea, about two
in

in the Afternoon they began an hot Engagement, which lasted till eight in the Night, that the *Herbert* blew up, and all her Men lost, but six or seven that were in the Pinnace, some whereof I saw afterwards at *Muskat*. The other was lately, in the Year 1720, when two of our *East-India* Ships were watering there, with an *Offend* Ship in their Company; they agreed to stand by one another in case of Assaults, or engaging with the common Enemy, but when two Pirates drew near, the *Greenwich* and *Ojtender* weighed, and stood to Sea, and left the *Cassandra* to shift for herself, who was obliged to engage the smallest Pirate (being a Ship of twenty-four Guns, *Dutch*-built) in the Bay, and soon after they began, the *Cassandra* went aground on some Rocks, and the Pirate striving to board her, was also taken up by some Rocks, not above twenty Yards from the *Cassandra*. The Pirate's Head lay towards the *Cassandra*'s Broadside, and they pelted one another furiously, many falling on both Sides, but the Pirates, finding too hot Work on their Decks, were forced to quit them, and run down into the Hold for Shelter. Captain *Mackraw*, who commanded the *Cassandra*, seeing the other Pirate approach near him, and manning all his Boats to reinforce his Comrade, thought it a good Time for him, and who else could get ashore, to embrace the Opportunity, and accordingly they got into their Boats, and saved their Lives. The Inhabitants shewed much Humanity to the Distressed, and carried them above a Dozen of Miles up in the Country, for Fear the Pirates, in their mad Fury, should have murdered the poor Men that escaped from their Ship. The Pirates, soon after they had Possession of the *Cassandra*, got her afloat again, she having received little or no Damage; they also got their own Ship off, but she was very much shattered, and disabled in her Masts.

CAPTAIN *Mackraw*, being a Gentleman that was well versed in Conversation with Men of any Temper, ventured on board the Pirates, and they were so much taken with his Address, that they made him a Present of that Ship which he had so bravely battered, to carry him and his Crew to *India*; in the mean while, the *Greenwich* came to *Bombay* in September, who brought the Account of the
 Loss

Loss of the *Cassandra*, and in November, Captain *Mackrrow* arrived himself with his new Ship, and his Ship's Company all in Rags, but were soon equipp'd by the Benevolence and Generosity of the Governor Mr. *Boone*, who was a Gentleman of as much Honour and good Sense, as any that ever sat in that Chair.

Mobilla is but a little distant from *Johanna*, pretty well inhabited, but the People not so well civilized as *Johanna*; and the Kings of these neighbouring Islands have continual War. The *Johanna* Men, by the Assistance of Commodore *Littleton*, landed on *Mobilla*, and made great Slaughter and Devastations; but what his Policy was in breaking the Neutrality that the *English* held among those Islanders, I know not. *Mayotta* lies about thirty-five Leagues from *Johanna*, and is the largest of the inhabited Islands, but being surrounded with dangerous Rocks under Water, it is not much frequented, and so the Manners of the Inhabitants not so well known. The Religion of those Islands is *Mahometan*, but there are very few Zealots among them; and so I leave them, and return to Cape *Guardafoy*, and travel up the *Red-Sea*.

THE Navigation of the *Ethiopian* Seas is very dangerous, and their Maps very deficient; for I saw a *Dutch* Skipper at *Mocha*, who had Orders to sail from *Batavia* towards *Mocha*, in the Month of *January*, and to navigate to the North End of *Madagascar*, and from thence to the *Red-Sea*, he affirmed to me, that he saw several large Islands, and many Rocks and Sands in those Seas that were not placed in his Maps, for which Reason he was obliged to anchor in the Nights, when he could have Anchor Ground, and that the Currents run very strong to the Southward, among those Banks and Rocks.

C H A P. VIII.

Gives a Description of Zeyla's Sea-coast, and of a Part of Ethiopia, Zuakin and Upper Egypt.

BUT to return again to Cape *Guardafoy*, from thence up to *Zeyla* is about one hundred and twenty Leagues. The Coast is inhospitable as well as the People. There are only two Places in all that Tract that affords fresh Water, one is a little to the Eastward of Mount *Felix*, but in *Arabic* it is called *Baba-fleck*, or, *The Mountain of Camels*, where there is a small fresh Water River; the other is called *Khagi* ten Leagues more Westerly; it may be easily known by the Side of a Hill close to the Sea, whose North Aspect is of white Sand, that shews at a Distance like a Sail, but may be seen in that Figure ten Leagues off. Several Ships from *India*, that have been necessitated to call at those Places for Water, have been cut off; and one poor Man they surprized with his own Boat that he sent for Water. The Boat's Crew were surprized whilst filling Water, them they killed, except two Boys whom they saved; they then came off in the Night, and those in the Ship not examining them in Time, they boarded the Ship, and took them all unarmed, and killed every Man, and carrying the Ship close to the Shore, they unladed her, and then sunk her. The two Youths who gave the Account of that tragical Accident, were brought to *Aden*, which lies opposite to that Place, and were sold for Slaves. A *Surat* Ship being there, bought the Youths, and brought them to *Surat*.

THERE is no anchoring on that Coast above a Mile off Shore the Sea is so deep; and about *Zeyla*, is a deep Bay opposite to *Babelmandel*, which makes the Entry into the *Red Sea*, there is a large River that disimbogues into the Sea, but tho' the Mouth be large, yet it is so deep, and full of Banks and Rocks, with such Whirl-pools, that no Ship dare go near it. At that River begins the *Ethiopian* Shore, shewing many high Mountains, which are easily seen from the *Arabian* Shore: And all the Coast from this River,

River, as far North as *Zuakin*, which is near two hundred Leagues, is called the *Ethiopian Coast*.

AND tho' I never was on that South-west Coast of the *Red Sea*, and know but few that traffick there, except *Romish* Priests, yet I'll venture to relate what I learned from them. There are two or three small Ports between *Zeyla* and *Mossava*, but an inconsiderable Trade, being most in Slaves of both Sexes, which the *Ethiopians* bring to *Mocha* for a Market, where I have seen a Drove of those unfortunate Creatures carried like a Flock of Sheep, most Part of them insensible of their own Misery, and the highest Bidder carries the Bargain. They also bring some Elephants Teeth, the best that ever I saw, and some Ostriches Feathers.

Mossava is situated on the North-west End of a large Island, and affords a very good Harbour for Shipping of any Size; it has a Garrison of about two hundred and fifty *Turks* in a Castle built formerly by the *Portuguese*, who, according to their impolite Custom, oppress Strangers as well as Natives, that come there to trade.

THE Country produceth low Gold, Elephants Teeth, Slaves, and some Coffee, but of a larger Grain than what grows on the Land opposite to it in *Arabia*, at *Beilefackre*. The current small Money of *Ethiopia* is Salt, which is dug out of the Mountains as we do Stones from our Quarries, which they break in Pieces of several Sizes, the largest weighing about eighty Pounds, the others in forty, twenty, ten, or five Pounds, and are so expert in dividing it, that they err not above five *per Cent.* more or less in their Calculation of Weight; twenty Pounds is in Value about one Shilling *Sterl.* and those Pieces of Salt is the current Money in their Markets for Provisions, and likewise for Cloth, when they buy a Yard or two at a Time; and when a Merchant has got any considerable Quantity by him, there are Bankers to give Gold for it.

THE Religion on the Sea-coast is *Mahometan*, but within Land *Coptics*, who are circumcised *Christians*. The Males they circumcise sometimes at eight Days old, but that Ceremony is often delayed till forty Days, and sometimes not till the seventh or eighth Year of their Age. They circumcise Females as well as Males. The Circum-

cision, they think, is necessary in Memory of *Jesus Christ*, and on a certain Day yearly, they immerse themselves in Rivers or Lakes, in Remembrance of *Christ's* Immersion or Baptism. They forbear eating some Beasts Flesh, according to the *Mosaical Law*. They hold from *Saturday's* Noon to *Sunday's* Noon their Sabbath. They receive the Sacrament standing, and only in the Church, and the Wine only from the Deacon's Hand in a Spoon. Their Priests eat no idle Bread, but maintain themselves by Labour. They have many Bishops, but one they call *Abunab* above the rest, he is held in great Veneration, and when he goes abroad, he has great Attendance, and rides on a Mule, with a Cross in his right Hand.

THEY enter their Churches bare-footed, because God commanded *Moses* to put off his Shoes, for the Ground he stood on was holy. They allow but one Wife, but as many Concubines as they please. They allow of Repudiation, but neither Party can marry again, till the Term of three Years be expired, and if the Parties are not reconciled in that Term, they think the Breach too big ever to be closed up again.

THEY have all the canonical Books of our Scriptures, and several more. They reckon the Prophet *Idno* one of the greater Prophets, and put him in the Class with *Isaiah*, *Ezekiel*, *Isaiah*, *Elijah* and *Daniel*, and that he wrote fourteen thousand Prophecies, many of which they have at this Day; that his Prophecies of *Jesus Christ*, were clearer, or more distinct than any the other Prophets left behind them; but the Substance of their practical Religion consists in their Fasts and Feasts, for they do not much trouble themselves about the Doctrine of Faith, Repentance and good Works, which makes them very dissolute in their Lives.

WE Europeans generally call the King of *Ethiopia*, *Prester John*, but his Subjects know no such Appellation; 'tis true, he is Supreme in ecclesiastick as well as civil Affairs. His Dominions are very large, and he has many Tributaries, who stile themselves Kings, and act despotically. The Royal Family are all kept at *Amara*, which is a pleasant round Hill, situated in twelve Degrees North from the Equator, tho' I saw an old Portuguese geographical Description

scription of *Ethiopia*, place it under the *Equinoctial*. The Hill is walled round with a high Wall, at least twelve Leagues in Circumference, which cuts off all Communication with Strangers or Mal-content's. Within the Walls are Palaces, Gardens, Orchards, Woods for wild Game, Rivulets and Ponds for Fish, and all that the Clime can afford to make it pleasant; there the Youths of the Royal Family study what Arts and Sciences are proper to their Quality, or according to the Knowledge of their Teachers.

THEIR Empire is hereditary, but not in a direct Line, the Succession being kept in the ancient Family, which they reckon up as high as *Solomon*, but on the Demise of one Emperor, they make Choice of a Royal Youth out of the Paradise of *Aniara*, so he that behaves best in that State of Probation, or has the best Friends to recommend him, succeeds without Contention, which political Custom makes their Youths very tractable and studious. There are none reckoned Princes of the Blood after second Cousins-germans, and it seems they have something like the *Saluk* Law in Force amongst them, for their Histories mention no Female Reign since *Condace's* Time, if *Ethiopia*, as it now is, was her Country.

THEY are very nasty in their Apparel and Diet, for tho' their Country is well stored with Fire-wood, yet they do not take Pains to dress their Meat by Fire, but having killed their animal Food, before it be well cold, they mince it, and mix Salt and a sharp hot Bark of a Tree well powdered, and make the Morsel up in small Balls about the Bigness of a Wall-nut, and greedily eat it: But the Princes eat in State, for they being seated on a Mat spread on the Ground, his favourite female Slave or Concubine makes up those Balls of Flesh or Fish seasoned with the afore-said Sauce of Salt and Bark, and squeezes them into fashionable Moriels, his Highness gapes like a young Crow, and she throws it cleverly in, which he presently devours. The Commons eat of the same Sort of Viands with the Grandees, but many of both Sexes die by Excoriations of the Cuts and the right Intestine; but whether their Diet be the Cause of their Distemper, I leave to Physicians to determine, who generally are the best Judges. They have a good pleasant Liquor made of

Honey and Potatoes, which they carouse in plentifully, and often get drunk by it, and then they are rather mad than inebriated, which renders them very quarrellsome and furious; their Honey, as it is very plentiful in their Country, so it is the whitest, hardest and best tasted that ever I met with.

I had the above Relation of *Abasina* from four *Romish* Priests, who had their Mission there for eight Years together, but made but few Profelytes: They had been meddling in State Affairs, and, for Fear of losing their Heads, they fled, and left two of their Brethern, being old, and not fit for Travel; what became of them they know not; but those four transgressed their Superior's Orders, and left their Stations, and travelled three or four hundred Miles to the Sea-Coast, and got a Passage over the *Red Sea* to *Mocha*, where I entertained them about four Months: They also told me, that seven tributary Kings had lost their Heads in six Months Time, for Mal-administration or Treason, and if my Guests had not removed their Quarters when they did, they had been honoured with the Name of *Roman* Martyrs, in the Year 1714. The Country abounds plentifully in Wheat, Rice, Barley, Legumens or Pulse of several Sorts, notwithstanding they eat their raw Meat without Bread. Their Woods abound in Elephants (reckoned the largest in the World) also some Lions and Tygers, and innumerable Troops of Wolves, Monkies and Ostriches, all much larger than in other Countries. The aforesaid Priests also told me, that the Head of *Nilus*, which the Ancients so much sought for, is in this Country, about the Latitude of six Degrees North, and about four hundred Miles from the lower End of the *Red Sea*. How far the *Ethiopian* Coast stretches to the North-ward, I know not, but it has no Seaports to the North-ward of *Mossava*, and the next Country to it is the barbarous *Zuakin*, whose Inhabitants are very different both in Complexion and Customs from the *Abasines*, whose Colour is only as black as Soot, but the *Zuakins* are as black as Jet, and their Skins as soft as Velvet.

THERE are no Sea-ports from *Zuakin* on the South-west Side of the *Red-Sea*, till we come to *Seues*, which
lies

lies near the Head of the Bay of that Sea, which sends his opposite Shores down to the South-eastward, as far as *Babimandel*.

Sues, or *Seues* seems to be the *Ezion-geber*, or *Eloth*, from whence *Solomon* sent his Ships to *Ophir*, for I have conversed with several Pilots of that Navigation, who assured me, there is no clean Bottom for Anchoring, but *Seues*, on that Part of the Coast, for most Part of the *Red-Sea* is incumbered with Coral Rocks under Water, and pestered with Banks, which make the Navigation very dangerous. At present, *Seues* is the only Sea-port for *Grand Cairo*, from whence it is three Days Journey by Land, with a Caffilla or Caravan, but on Horse-back but two short Days. In *Cairo* the *English* and *French* keep their Consuls, for the Support of the Trade of their respective Countries.

In the Year 1714. Mr. *Farrington* was Consul for the *English*, he had a very fair Character from all People, as well Merchants as the Religious that came from *Cairo* to *Mocha*, which made me presume to trouble him with a Letter, giving him the best Account I could of the State of Merchandize in *India*, and to have his Advice, whether it might be practicable to cultivate a Trade from *India* to *Seues*, which Letter he very civilly answered, and next Year it came to my Hand, but he dissuaded me from any Attempt that Way; because of the intolerable Avarice and Insults of the *Turkish Eghazars*, and other Officers of Note, with the Contempt they have for Merchants, especially *Christians*, he assured me, that it is impossible to be a Gainer by such Commerce.

C H A P. IX.

Gives a little Description of the Coast of Arabia the Happy, from Mount Sinai to Mocha, with some Observations on the Religion, Customs and Laws, as they are now established.

OVER against *Seues*, on the *Arabian* Shore, stands Mount *Sinai*, about five or six Leagues from the

Sea; and on its South-west Side, near the Bottom, is the Monastery of *St. Katharina*. The Mount is much revered by the *Jews*, and the Monastery by the *Christians*; it is very antient, and held in some Veneration by the *Mahometans*, whose Pilgrims to *Mecca*, from *Egypt*, *Turkey* and *Palestine*, pass close by, both in their going and returning, as do likewise their *Cassilas*, and other Passengers, that go on Traffick to *Judda*, a City four Days Journey from *Mecca*, where *Mahomet* lies interred: And the great Concourse of Pilgrims (from all Parts where his Religion is spread) brings a great Trade thither.

THERE is a Tradition, that, as *Mahomet* was going on an Expedition to *Palestine*, he called at that Monastery for Refreshments, and the Monks generously assisted him; and in Acknowledgement of their Civility, he gave them a Charter, which they still keep, wherein he gave them many Immunities, and laid his heavy Curse on-all, who should, after that Time, dare to molest that Monastery.

THE Building is strong and high, and no Gate or Door to enter in to it, but one, which stands about ten Yards (in the Wall) from the Ground. It has a large Inclosure adjoining to it, with an high Wall, to keep the wild *Arabs* from robbing them of their animal Provisions; for they are such vile Thieves, that they had rather venture to lie under the *Anathema* of their Prophet, than to keep their Hands from Robbery.

ITS present Possessors are *Nestorian* and *Jacobin* Monks, who are maintained by the Charity of Passengers, and a little Revenue that belongs to the Monastery. The *Christians*, in that Part of *Arabia*, are *Nestorians* and *Jacobins*, whose Priests may marry, and they allow of no Images but the Cross, and many other Things repugnant to the *Romish* Tenets.

Judda is the next Place of Note below *St. Katharina*. It is a small, but well fortified City, belonging to the *Turk*. It stands close to the Sea, and is governed by a *Bashaw*, who keeps a Garrison in it, with four or five Gallies to cruize on the *Red-Sea*, to hinder the Passing of all Ships or Vessels up the Sea, without first calling at *Judda*.

THE inland Country about it, belongs to a Sheek, who pretends to be a Descendant of *Mahomet*. He has the Title of *Xeriff* given him, to distinguish his Eminency from other Sheeks. And, altho' he be so near akin to the Prophet, yet he squeezes above one hundred thousand Pounds *Scotl.* yearly out of the Pilgrims, who go to worship at his Ancestor's Tomb. And so much Gain he can make of their Folly.

It is between this Country and *Sinai*, that the famous Balm of *Gilead* grows. It is reported to proceed from a Shrub, the Bark of which is slit, and Vessels set under the Wound to receive it, as it drains from that Wound. The wild *Arabs* about *Sinai*, have a Tradition, that *Abraham* was their Countryman, and are not a little proud of that Honour; but if it was so, that he was their Sheek, as they alledge, they neither follow him in Morals or Religion.

THE Sea-coasts of *Arabia Felix*, from *Judila* to the Southward, as far as the Latitude of fifteen Degrees, are governed by several Sheeks, who are so avaritious, that no Pilgrims can pass through their Dominions but Beggars; for if Strangers carry any Thing of Value about them, or if they have good Clothes, they are stript of all, and about a Yard of coarse Cloth given them to cover their Nakedness; and Lectures of Humility and Devotion are preached to them, that whoever goes on so solemn an Errand, ought to show, by their outward Appearance, that the inward Man is humble, and that those who love Riches, ought to sequester themselves from the World, before they approach that holy Place, where, after the *Muttee* (or his Deputy, the *Backe*), had bestowed a Benediction on them, if they had any Grace, they would never covet Riches again.

Berlesucker is the first Town of Note (near the Sea-coast) of the *Imamm's* Dominions. It stands about twenty-five *English* Miles from the Sea, and it is the greatest Market for Coffee in the World. It supplies *India*, *Persia*, *Turkey* in *Asia*, *Africa* and *Europe*, besides *England*, *France* and *Holland*, with Coffee-beans. Other Goods and Merchandize may be bought and sold on Credit, for a certain Time; but Coffee is always bought for ready Money. The

Europe Shipping lades yearly at *Mocha*, (from whence *Belefackee* is about one hundred *English* Miles) about two thousand Tuns, rather more than less, and the other Nations above twenty thousand Tuns more. The whole Province of *Belefackee* is planted with Coffee Trees, which are never suffered to grow above four or five Yards high; and the Bean or Berry grows on the Branches and Twigs, first green, then red, and at last a dark brown Colour. The Berries cling to the Branches like so many Insects, and when they are ripe they shake off.

Zibet is the next Town, and serves for a Sea-port for *Belefackee*. It was large and famous in ancient Times for Trade, but in the fourteenth Century, the *Turks* over-ran all the Coasts of the *Red-Sea*, and made them Tributaries to them. They ruined all the Trade from *India* to *Zibet*, and settled their *Emporium* at *Aden*, about thirty-five Leagues without *Babilmandel*, to the Eastward: And the *Imnaum* holds his Kingdom in Feoff from the *Turk* at this Time; and when the *Turks* come to *Belefackee*, none dare break the Price of the Market, nor buy before they are first served.

THE *Imnaum* or King keeps his Court generally at a Town called *Mobaib*, about two hundred *English* Miles to the East, North-eastward of *Mocha*. He has little Splendor about it, and he that reigned in the Year 1714. was about eighty Years of Age. His Government has been of a long Time very ill managed. His Lust having the Ascendant over his Reason, he had seldom less than three hundred Wives married to him, of the most beautiful young Women in his Dominions. He often marries one, at one New-moon, and, on the next New-moon, remarries her to one of his Minions, and bestows a good Patrimony on her to help her off; so that with his own frequent Marriages, and those of his Minions, he exhausts all his Revenues, and is always necessitous, which forces him on many unjust and mean Ways to exact Money from his miserable Subjects. And in the Year 1720, their heavy Burdens made them rebel, and involved the whole Country in a civil War. One Part was for deposing him, and another for keeping him on the Throne; but what the Event was I never heard.

THE *Turks* being baffled in several Projects and Expeditions from *Aden*, and that they could not well maintain their Ground in that Part of *Arabia*, (being so very far from their own Dominions) without much Charge and distant Trouble, they, in the latter End of the sixteenth Century, withdrew their Garrison from *Aden*, and left it, with all its Fortifications and Buildings, to the *Inmaum*; who finding *Aden* to lie inconvenient for the Trade of the *Red-Sea*, because of the fresh Winds usually blowing at its Mouth, in both Easterly and Westerly Monsoons, made him remove the Trade about fifteen Leagues within its Mouth, in a Bay, not very commodious for Shipping, to a Fishing Town called *Mocha*.

Mocha is a Place of good Trade, notwithstanding its bad Situation; for, besides the Commerce with *Sues* and *Judda*, the *English* and *Dutch* Companies have their Factories there, besides a Trade from *India*, carried on by *English* free Merchants, *Portuguese*, *Banyans* and *Moors*, and by Vessels from *Bassorah*, *Persia* and *Muskat* in *Arabia Petrea*. The Country, of itself, affords or produces very few valuable Commodities, besides Coffee, and some Drugs, such as Myrrh, *Olibanum* or Frankincense from *Cassin*, and *Aloes Soccotrina* from *Soccotra*, liquid Storax, white and yellow Arsenick, some Gum *Arabick* and Mummy; with some Balm of *Gilead*, that comes down the *Red Sea*. The Coffee Trade brings in a continual Supply of Silver and Gold from *Europe*, *Spanish* Money, *German* Crowns, and other *European* Coins of Silver; also Zequins, *German* and *Hungarian* Ducats of *European* Gold; and from *Turkey*, *Ebramies* and *Mograbies*, Gold of low Mart.

The Town is large, but meanly fortified; and, from the Sea, it has a fine Aspect. The Buildings are lofty, and make a much better Appearance without than within. The Steeples of five or six Mosques raise their Heads pretty high above the rest of the Buildings. Their Markets are well stored with animal Provisions, such as Beef, Mutton of Sheep and Goats, Lamb and Kid, Camel and Antelopes Flesh, Dung-hill Fowls, *Guinea* Hens, Partridge and Pigeon. The Sea affords Variety of Fish, but not savoury. I believe their Unfavouriness proceeds from the
extreme

extreme Saltnefs of the Sea-water, and the Nature of their Aliment. The Town is well furnished, all the Year round, with good Fruits, such as Grapes, Peach, Apricocks and Quinces, of which they make Store of Marmalade, both for their present Use and Exportation, tho' near the Town, there is not a Tree or Shrub to be seen, but a few Date Trees. And they feldom have more than two or three Showers of Rain in a Year, and often no Rain in two or three Years; but amongst the Mountains, about twenty Miles off, feldom a Morning paffes without a moderate Shower, which makes the Vallies very prolifick in Fruit and Corn, such as the Soil will bear; but they have no Rice, tho' Plenty of Barley and Wheat.

THE Governor of *Mocha*, and the Officers of the Town, are Merchants, when they think to get good Bargains, and are very ready to break their Contracts, both in Payment of their Debts, and in the Time of Payment. Some Instances whereof I saw. And, in the Year 1716, I had an experimental one; for the Deputy-governor having bought a Part of my Cargo, agreed to pay me the first Day of *June*, according to our *Æra* and Computation. At the appointed Time I demanded my Money; but he told me, that notwithstanding he had agreed at that Time to pay me, yet the Custom was not to pay before the middle of *July*, and Custom must be observed before Contract; besides, the King having much Need of Money, sent pressing Demands on the Town for Money, as fast as it came in by Customs and other Subsidies; therefore he could not, nor would not pay me before the customary Time, nor would he clear my Account Customs (which is a Part of his Office) before that Time. I often solicited him to clear my Account, and pay the Balance; but to no Purpose. I then fell on a Project to frighten him into Compliance. I went very calmly to him, and told him, that I had some Goods left, which would be proper for the inland Markets, and that I would let him have a Penny-worth of them. He knew the Goods were proper enough, as I had told him, and so came to my House, which was four Stories high. I carried him up to the highest, and, seated him in a small Balcony, and I shewed him the Musters of my Goods, and ask'd Prices which he thought too high;

high; and, because we could not agree, he was for going abruptly away, and so got on his Feet: But I being much too strong for him, took him by the Shoulders, and forced him to sit down again, and ordered my Linguist to tell him, that, before we parted, he must clear my Account Customs, and give me Bills, on the King's Banker, for the Balance, otherwise I would teach him to fly from the Balcony to the Ground, be the Consequence what it would. He had never been so treated before, and Fear seized him so, that he could not speak for a little Time, but, recovering a little, ordered his Clerk, who was in the Room with us, to make up my Account, and draw Bills immediately, who readily obeyed Orders; and in Half an Hour we became good Friends again. The Noise of this Action run like a Squib thro' the Town, and, before I came to the Banker with the Bill, (which was for about one thousand two hundred Pound *Sterl.*) he was apprised how I had served the Deputy-governor, and, upon presenting it, accepted it to be paid in seven Days; but withal desired, that I would constantly keep two *European* Seamen at his Door, with Arms, and, as Money came in, they were to receive one Bag, and the King's People another, till the Sum should be completed: And accordingly in seven Days I got every Penny, and sent the Governor word, that I wanted to wait on him, in order to take my Leave. He returned me Answer, that I should be very welcome; and accordingly I went, and he received me very civilly; and, all the while I staid, he passed Jokes on his Deputy about the Fright I had put him into.

THE King's Customs are very easy, being but three *per Cent.* from *Europeans*, and five on *Gentiles*; and the Custom-house as easy, for they only desire to see the Musters of Goods, and the Quantity of Goods in each Parcel or Bale, and so cause some, that they choose, to be opened; and if they find the Quantity and Quality agree with the Invoice given in, the Remainder of the Cargo is carried directly from the Landing-place, to the Warehouses, without more Trouble; and, after Sale, they receive an Account from the Seller, and rate the Customs accordingly.

THEY are very ignorant in History and natural Philosophy; for they tell, that *Alexander the Great* was *Mahomet's*

met's General, tho' they lived about nine hundred Years distant from one another; and that, having a Mind to transport his Army over the Mouth of the *Red-Sea*, from *Babelmandel* to *Zeyla*, in order to conquer *Ethiopia*, he went about building a Bridge there; and, there being seven Islands in these Streights, called the *Seven Stones*, he placed them there for a Foundation to build on: And they are of Opinion, that the World is supported on the Horns of a great Bull, who sometimes shakes his Head, which they assign to be the Cause of Earthquakes, which frequently are felt there.

THESE are Abundance of Beggars in *Mocha*, and in most Towns in *Arabia*, who brag of the Sanctity and V erity of their Religion; and, when they pass in the Streets, they are always bawling out, that there is but one God, and *Mabomet* his Prophet and best beloved Servant; and, carrying a Piece of Iron like the Tooth of an Arrow, in their right hand, they strike it with great Force into the Cavity of the Eye, and yet the Eye is not blemished, nor the Eyelids, or Skin about the Eye, seem to be hurt; and they often let the Iron hang down, as if the Point was fastened to the Corner of the Eye next the Nose. As for mad People of either Sex, they venerate them, believing them to be inspired, or actuated by a prophetick Spirit.

THEIR Religion is *Mabometism*, and are superstitiously rigid in their Way, but abominable Hypocrites; for, in their Promises, which they seldom keep, with lifted up Eyes, they call on God to be Witness to their Sincerity: But in no Part of the World is Justice bought and sold more publickly than here; and the Judge, who generally is the Governor of the Place, whilst he is passing unjust Sentences, looks as grave as an old Cat, declaiming against Partiality.

IN the Year 1716, I saw Justice executed on a notorious Criminal, guilty of no less than Robbery and Murder. A poor Peasant had raised a Stock of five hundred Dollars, amongst his Friends and Neighbours, and was on his Way to *Mocha*, to lay it out in Merchandize proper for the Parts he lived in. A Villain, who knew of his Journey, and the Stock he carried, way-laid him, and cut his Throat from Ear to Ear, and then stabbed him
in

in the Breast with his Dagger, and so possessed the Money, and went off with it. Some Passengers, coming that Way soon after, found the mangled Corpse, not quite cold, went and informed the Neighbourhood of the Tragedy. On Information, they went and viewed the Carcase, and knew it. They gave the Account to the murdered Person's Relations, who lived but a little Way off, and they buried the Corpse.

SOME Months after, one of the Relations being at *Mocha*, chanced to see his dead Kinsman's Ring on the Murderer's Finger, and challenged it, for it is the Custom of all the eastern Countries, both the *Mahometans* and *Gentiles*, to wear Rings. They wear no Gold Rings, but Silver among the *Mahometans*, and the *Gentiles* commonly wear Gold. The Person who knew the Ring, informed the *Cadjee* or Judge what had past, and the *Cadjee* ordered the Murderer to be apprehended, and brought before him; and ordering him to be searched, to see if farther Proof could be found about him, the very Purse that the Money was in, was found in his Bosom. However the Murderer denied all, but was sent to Prison, and fettered, till other Persons were sent for that were particularly well acquainted with the Defunct. Five or six Evidences who were sent for, appeared, and the Ring and Purse being produced, they swore, that they knew them to be with the unfortunate Defunct when he set out on his Journey for *Mocha*; and he at length confessed the Fact himself. The Judge, and the rest of his Court, desired him to return the Money, and they would solicit the murder'd Persons Relations to spare his Life, it being in their Power to take away or save his Life; but he absolutely denied the returning back any Part of it, and impudently asked the Judge, how he thought his Wife and Children should be supported, if he should return the Money.

THREE Months had passed in unfruitful Persuasions, but finding him obstinate, they bid him prepare to die next Day about Noon. And accordingly, with a Guard of about five hundred Horse and Foot Soldiers, he was carried without the City, with his Hands tied behind him; and, he was delivered to the Defunct's Relations, who first gave him a deep Stab under the left Pap, and one of
the

the Relations standing behind, pulled back his Head, while another cut his Throat from Ear to Ear, and so left him with all their Speed. For as soon as the Mob saw him killed, they assaulted the Executioners with Stones and Brickbats so furiously, that the Guards had much ado to save them from being murdered; for there is a Passage in the *Alcoran*, importing, that whoever spilt a Believer's Blood, is accursed, and ought to be stoned to Death.

THE Soldiery of *Mocha* are very insolent and licentious; for, in the Months of *May*, *June* and *July*, the Air being fired with Heat, and the greatest Concourse of Strangers come to Town, either about Traffick, or getting Passage by Sea to foreign Countries, and about that Time Cash is plentiful in Town, then those undisciplined Cowards seldom fail to set Fire to some Huts that the labouring People live in, and they being built of a few Spars, covered with the Branches and Leaves of Date Trees, which are very combustible Materials, the Flame soon grows fierce and violent, and very often penetrates thro' the Doors and Windows of Merchants Houses, tho' built of Brick. And, in the Conspiration, when People are intent on saving what they can, by removing their Goods from their burning Houses to the Streets, those Varlets plunder publickly there with Impunity; and, altho' those Villains are detected in setting Fire to Houses and plundering, and Complaints made of them to the Governor, those Grievances are so far from being redressed, that I have known a Complainer well bastonaded for detecting the Rogues.

THE largest City in these Dominions, is *Souman*. It is fifteen Days Journey North-east from *Mocha*. It drives a great inland Trade, and is the Mart for many of the *Indian* Goods that are brought to *Mocha*. The Mechanicks of different Trades have each their peculiar different Street; so that whatever Commodities Strangers may want, they readily know where to find them. And in all the Streets there are Brokers for Wives, so that a Stranger, who has not the Convenience of an House in the City to lodge in, may marry, and be made a free Burgher for a small Sum. When the Man sees his Spouse, and likes her, they agree on the Price and Term of Weeks, Months

or

or Years, and then appear before the *Cadjee* or Judge of the Place, and enter their Names and Terms in his Book, which costs but a Shilling, or thereabout: And joining Hands before him, the Marriage is valid, for better or for worse, till the Expiration of the Term agreed on. And if they have a mind to part, or renew the Contract, they are at Liberty to choose for themselves what they judge most proper; but if either want to be separated during the Term limited, there must be a Commutation of Money paid by the separating Party to the other, according as they can agree; and so they become free to make a new Marriage elsewhere.

C H A P. X.

Contains a Description of Aden, with some historical Remarks about the Turkish Expedition from thence into India: Also an Account of the Sea-coast of Arabia Petrea, as far as Muskat and Bassora; with a particular Account of an English Ship lost on the Island of Maccira.

THE eastmost Town of Note in the *Immaum* of *Mocha's* Dominions on the Sea-coast, is *Aden*, built by the *Turks*, on the East Side of a barren Island, and has no fresh Water but what the Rains afford them, which they keep in Cisterns. The *Turks* had great Designs when they built it, for they thought of driving the *Portuguese* out of their Settlements in *India*, and to have possess them themselves. Accordingly about the Middle of the sixteenth Century, they made an Expedition into *India*, against the *Portuguese*, but were unsuccessful, and so have never attempted since to settle in *India*. It continued many Years after the Stapple Port for the *Red Sea* Commerce, but the Charges of keeping it, so far from the *Turkish* Dominions, made them leave it to the *Immaum*, as was already observed, and he removed the Trade to *Mocha*.

It has a good Road for Shipping in the Westerly Monsoons, and a pretty good Mould, or Basen, for the Easterly,

Easterly, close to the Town, and the Road is not Half Gun-shot from it. It has been well fortified, being naturally strong in its Situation; but the *Badows*, or wild *Arabs*, who inhabit about the Sea-Coast of *Arabia Petrea*, have several Times taken, and plundered it, since it fell into the *Immaum's* Hands. The Country adjacent produces Barley, Wheat and Legumen, and Store of Fruits and Roots, Camels, Asses, Mules and Horses, all very finely shaped and mettlesom; but Money being pretty Plenty in that Part of the Country, their Horses are very dear, for 50 or 60 *l Sterl.* is reckoned but a small Price for one. They have also Plenty of Sheep, with large broad Tails, that reach almost to the Ground, and their Coats are the finest, both for Beauty and Taste. And they have Poultry and *Guinea* Hens in Abundance. And the Sea affords Variety of good Fish. The *Immaum's* Dominions reach about twenty Leagues to the Eastward of *Aden*, along the Sea-Coast; but there are no Places of Trade till we come to *Cassim*, that lies almost under the Meridian of Cape *Gauradafey*, and under the prodigious high Mountains of *Megiddo*, on the Coast of *Arabia*.

THE Religion of *Cassim* is *Mahometan*, and the civil Government *Democracy*. Death is capital, and is punished with Death, but not by the civil Magistrate; for the Tribe or Clan of the Defunct pursues the Murderer or Homicide, and when they have found him, he is immediately beheaded, and his Head put upon the Point of a Lance, and brought to his Relations in Triumph, with Musick and Dancing.

THE Product of the Country (besides the common Roots, and Fruits and Animals) is Myrrh and *Olibanum* or Frankincense, which they barter for coarse Calicoes from *India*; but they have no great Commerce with Strangers. Nor has *Doffar* any better Trade, but is more noted for Barbarity to those they can circumvene. I knew an *English Ship* in the Year 1705, that called there for fresh Water, and the Natives came flocking on board with animal Provisions to sell or barter. They found the *English* supinely negligent, and, being but six or seven in Number, they mixt with them, and suddenly stabbed them all; but did no Harm to the *Indian* Seamen and Merchants,

chants, who were about forty in Number. They took every Thing out of the Ship, and then burnt her.

Curia Muria is another Port on that Shore, but of small Account. It is in the Middle of seven Islands, each having a very high Mountain, which makes them conspicuous from the Sea. There are none that frequent it but Trankies, that navigate from the Gulf of *Persia* to the *Red Sea*, who call there for fresh Water and Recruits of Provision. The Inhabitants, along all that Coast, are *Baddows*, who wear no Clothes above the Navel. Their Hair grows long, which they plat, and wreath about their Heads. The next remarkable Place is *Maccira*, a barren uninhabited Island, lying about five Leagues from the Continent, and within twenty Leagues of *Cape Rassigai*. It has dangerous Shoals lying on its West End, which reach above thirty Leagues along the Shore to the Westward, and so far in the Sea, that the Land (tho' pretty high) cannot be seen, before the unskilful or unwary Pilot feels the Rocks with his Ship's Keel. The Inhabitants on the main Continent, seem to be Sorcerers; for about the Year 1684, a Ship from *London*, called the *Merchants Delight*, Captain *Edward Sey* Supercargo, this Ship unfortunately run ashore on the Island in the Night, being very dark, notwithstanding they kept their deep Sea Lead going every Half Hour; yet they were so lucky as to run her fast a-ground between two Rocks very close to the Shore. In a few Minutes the Ship was full of Water, but, being dry on the upper Decks, the People kept on them till Day-light, and then they discovered about four or five hundred wild *Arabs*, with some Tents pitched at a little Distance from them.

THE *Arabs*, by Signs, shewed themselves ready to assist the distressed *English*, and being excellent Swimmers, swam to the Ship, and brought the End of a Rope ashore. There was one on board, whom I was afterwards well acquainted with, who, before that, had sailed some Years in *India*, and had learned the *Indian* Language, and some *Arabic*; he served for an Interpreter. They bid the *English* hoist their Boats out, and come ashore without Fear, which they accordingly did, with their Arms. They told the *English*, that they were not come there to rob

them, but to assist them for reasonable Rewards, and that they would take no Advantage of the ill Circumstances they were in, but would make a fair Contract with them, and perform their Part, as should be stipulated in their Agreement. The *English*, tho' very diffident of the treacherous *Arabs*, were obliged to covenant, and agree, that whatever was saved of the Treasure, Cargo, or the Ship's Furniture, should be equally divided, and the *English* to have the Choice which Part they might have a Mind to; and that the *Arabs* should transport the *English*'s Part to *Muskat*, about sixty Leagues off, Freight free.

As soon as the Contract was made, the *Arabs* went courageously to work, and, in a Week or ten Days, got every Thing ashore that was portable, and they, according to Agreement, divided the whole into two equal Parts, and gave the *English* their Choice, and then got Trankies, (or Barks without Decks) and shipped what belonged to the *English* for *Muskat*. All the while they were getting the Goods ashore, they treated the *English* with excellent Mutton, both of Sheep and Goat, and laid in Provision for their Passage to *Muskat*, free of Charge to the Supercargo.

AFTER the Interpreter aforesaid was grown familiar with those *Arabs*, that were so kind and benevolent, he ask'd them why so many of them had assembled on that barren Island. They answered, that about eight Days before the Ship was lost, a *Fakee*, who is an ecclesiastick Officer in their Church, prophesied, that near such a Time, a Ship would be lost there, and pressed them to go to the Assistance of the ship-wreck'd People, who would be glad to come under Contract with them, to have one Half of what was gotten out of the Wreck; and conjured his Auditory to perform their Part faithfully, which accordingly they did; tho' at other Times the *Balows* are perfidious, treacherous and cruel.

CAPE *Rasselat* lies about sixteen Leagues to the Eastward of *Maccirâ*, and the Sea-shore is clear of Danger; and just within the Cape, to the Northward, is a Village called *Teyvoo*, which stands on the Side of a small River, near the Sea; but is best known by a little Mountain
(close

(close by it) shaped like an high-crown'd Hat. And about sixteen Leagues farther to the Northwestward, is *Curiat*, a large Village in a Valley close to the Sea. To the Northward of it is a very high large Mountain; whose Foot is washt by the Sea, and there are forty Fathoms within two Hundred Paces of it. It may be seen above forty Leagues from the Sea. There are neither Trees nor Grasse to be seen along the Sea-coast, but at *Curiat*; and yet the Country has Plenty of Cattle, great and small, with Variety of Fruits and Roots from the Vallies, and Fish from the Sea. Their Wells are dug in the Vallies very deep before they come to Springs, but the Water is very good.

C H A P. XI.

Treats of the Kingdom and City of Muskat, and of their religious and civil Customs; with some historical Account of their Wars and Oeconomy. And a little Account of the Sea-coast of Arabia Deserta, also of Basiora, with the famous River of Euphrates.

MUSKAT lies about twenty-two Leagues to the North-westward of *Curiat*, and is the Mart Town of *Arabia Petrea*. It is built on the Bottom of a small Bay, that almost has the Shape of an Horse-shoe. It was built and fortified by the *Portuguese*, in the fifteenth Century, but taken from them about the Year 1650. The King of that Province (for tho' there be many Kings in *Arabia*, yet none assumes the Title of King of *Arabia*) having War at that Time with the *Persians*, had raised an Army of forty thousand Men to insult the Sea-coast of *Persia*; and had provided a sufficient Number of small Vessels, called Trankies, for their Transports. His Army lay at a Distance from *Muskat*, and his Fleet at *Mutiera*, a small Bay about a Mile from the Entrance of *Muskat* Harbour. The King sent a civil Message to the *Portuguese* Governor, desiring the Liberty of his Markets to buy Provisions.

THE insolent Governor, thinking himself safe within a walled Town, with many small Forts to annoy any Ene-

my that could come to attack the Walls of the Town, instead of returning a civil Answer to the King's Request, sent a Piece of Pork wrapt up in Paper, as a Present to the King, and bid the Messenger tell him, that if he wanted such Provisions, he could furnish him. The Messenger, not knowing what was in the Paper, carried it to his Master, with the rude Answer. Now Pork being forbidden the *Mahometans* as well as *Jews*, they hold it in Abomination, and consequently it aggravated the designed Affront. The King was much surprized at the Governor's ill Manners, but disssembled his Resentment, in Expectation to find a proper Time at his Return from his *Persian* Expedition, to correct the Governor's Insolence, or revenge the Affront put on him: But the whole Army being enraged at the Affront, breathed nothing but present Revenge. And the Queen, who was of the *Seid* Extraction, who are a Tribe or Family descended from *Mahomet*, by *Fatima* his Daughter, and *Ali* his Apostle, being of a masculine fiery Temper, reproached the King for not resenting so gross an Affront, swore by her Ancestor the Prophet, that she would never stir out of the Tent she than sat in, till *Meskat* was taken from the *Portuguese*. All the Army applauded the Queen, and threatened to mutiny, if they were not forthwith led by their Officers to the Scalade of the City Walls. And at last the King finding that no Persuasions could cool their Fury, tho' the Day was far spent, ordered them to be led on. The *Portuguese* flanked them, from their Forts on the Mountains, with Plenty of great and small Shot; but the *Arabs* never looked back, nor minded the great Numbers of their dead Companions, but mounted the Walls over the Carcasses of their Slain. About Sun-set they drove the *Portuguese* from two of their City Gates, and pursued their Enemy so hard, that not one escaped, tho' they fled in great Haste towards the great Fort, where the Governor staid. That Fort is built on a Rock almost surrounded by the Sea, and has no Way to get up to it, but by a Stair-case hewn out of the Rock, above fifty Yards high, and not above two or three Persons can ascend a-breast. The *Arabs* thought it impracticable to attack it, so made a Blockade of it. In the Attack of the Town, the *Arabs* lost

lost between four and five thousand of the best of their Forces; and the *Portuguese*, in their Forts, were reduced to sixty or seventy. Those in the small Forts were obliged soon to surrender for Want of Ammunition and Provisions, and all were put to the Sword, except those, who, to save their Lives, promised to be circumcised, and abjure the *Christian* Religion. Those in the great Fort held out about six Months, under great Want and Fatigues; and all Hopes of Relief being cut off, they resolved on a Surrender; on which Motion, the imprudent Governor, who was the sole Cause of their Calamity, leapt down a Precipice into the Sea, where the Water being very shallow, he was dash'd to Pieces on the Rocks.

THE little Garison would fain have come to a Capitulation, but the *Arabs* would grant them no Terms, but that they must yield, or be starved; and tho' the Terms were hard, yet they thought best to surrender, and all were put to the Sword, except a few who embraced *Mahometism*, which in all were eighteen Persons. And this Relation I had from a very old Renagado, who was at the Tragedy, being then a Soldier, who reckoned himself then about one hundred Years old, and, by his Aspect, could not be much less.

THE City of *Muskat* is very strong, both by Nature and Art; but the Buildings very mean, as most Fabricks are under the Oeconomy of a People who abominate Luxury and Pride, as the *Muskat Arabs* do. The Cathedral built by the *Portuguese*, still retains some Marks of its Grandeur, and is now converted into a Palace for the King, when he resides there, which is generally a Month or two yearly. The Wall of the Town that faces the Harbour, has a Battery of large Cannon, about sixty in Number, and there are eight or ten small Forts built on the adjacent Rocks or Mountains, which guard all the Avenues to the Town, both by Sea and Land; and there are none permitted to come in or go out of the Harbour between Sun-set and Rising.

THE Pirates that infested the *Indian* Seas, at the latter End of the sixteenth Century, made a Breach between the *English* and them. The Pirates having made Prize of one of their Ships, they retaliated on the *English* private Ship-

ping: They seized Captain *Morrice's* little Ship, and detain him and all his Crew as Slaves, and would never ransom them: In the Year 1705, they took Captain *Murvel* in a rich Ship from *Bengal*, bound to *Persia*; but that might be attributed to Pusillanimity, in not offering to make a Defence.

THEY put their Slaves to no Manner of Labour, and allow them a Soldier's Pay for Subsistence; and what they can earn otherwise by Industry, is wholly their own.

THERE are neither Trees, Shrubs nor Grass to be seen on the Sea-coast from *Cariat* to *Muskat*, and but a few Date Trees in a Valley at the Back of the Town, and yet there is not the least Want of them felt in the City; and it has as good Markets for Wheat, Barley and Legumen, and for excellent Fruits, Roots and Herbage, and good Cattle, both great and small, as any where in *India*, where the Soil is most luxurious. And the Sea furnishes them with Plenty and Variety of excellent Fish. Their Cattle look to be very lean, but when killed, they are very fat and good, affording a great Deal of Tallow. They are not well stocked with Fowl, but those they have, are very good.

FROM *May* to *September* the Heats are excessive in the Town, so that none appear on the Streets, from ten in the Morning till three or four in the Afternoon. Their *Bazaars* or Markets are all covered with Date Tree Leaves, spread on Beams of the same Tree, that reach from House to House-top; and the Houses being all flat on their Tops, terrassed with Clay and Straw mixt, in the aforesaid Months every Body lodges on them in the Nights; for below Stairs they cannot sleep for Heat, and the Nights afford plentiful Dews, that sometimes wet them through their thick Cotton Quilts; and these Dews are reckoned very salubrious.

THE Reason of so intense Heats proceeds from the Nearness of the Sun in those Months, who sends his Beams almost perpendicularly down on the Sides of the Mountains, which being all naked, and nothing but an hard black Rock appearing, the Sun heats them to such a Degree, that between ten and eleven in the Forenoon, I have seen the Slaves roast Fish on them. And the Horses and

and Cattle, who are accustomed to that Food, come daily, of their own Accord, to be served their Allowance, and when they have breakfasted, retire again to Shades built for them; and yet their Beef and Mutton that are partly nourished by that Sort of Food, have not the least Savour of Fish. And the Reason why Fishes are so plentiful and cheap in the Markets, is by the easy and odd Way they have in catching them, or rather conjuring of them; for I have seen a Man and two Boys catch a Tun Weight in an Hour or two. The Man stands on a Rock, where the Sea is pretty deep near it, and calls *Tall, tall*, for a Minute or two, and the Fish come swarming about the Rock. The two Boys, in a little Boat, shut them in with a Net about twenty or thirty Yards long, and three or four deep, and, drawing the Net near the Rock, keep all in; and, when People come for Fish, he asks them what Sorts they want, and puts in an Hoop-net, fixed to the End of a Pool, into the Water, and serves every Body with what Kind they ask for; and when he has done, he hauls out his Net, and gives the rest their Liberty.

THEIR established Religion is *Mabometan*, of the Sect of *Alli*. They hinder no Body, of what Persuasion forever, to go into their Mosques, even in Time of divine Service. And their *Molchs* or Priests often preach themselves into violent Passions, especially if the Subject of their Sermon be about the Verity of their Religion; and then they'll challenge the Priests of any other Religion whatever, to confirm theirs with as good Evidences as they can; for, being well versed in Legerdemain Tricks, they'll take live Coals out of the Fire, and seem to eat them, which Trick the poor deluded Auditory takes for a Miracle, to confirm the Sanctity of their Religion.

THE King keeps his Court generally at *Nazawa* or *Rey-stock*, two Towns four or five Days Journey from *Muskat* within Land. He has no splendid Equipage, and his Garb very plain, and no finer than an ordinary Soldier's is. He has about one hundred of his own Slaves armed with Matchlocks and short broad Swords, for his Guard, who always attend on him. He, nor his Subjects use no Tables, but plain Mats spread on the Ground, serve for

Table and Chairs. Their Viands are a Dish of Rice, either plain, or made in Pillaw, and a Dish or two more of stew'd or fried Flesh, Fish or Fowl, placed near the Dish of Rice: And he, with his Table Companions, sit on the same Mat, with their Buttocks on their Heels, and, in that Posture they feed very plentifully. Their right Hand serves them for Spoon, Knife and Fork, except when they eat Broth or Milk, and then they have large wooden Spoons. Their usual Drink is Water, or four Milk, and in hot Wheather Sherbets.

THEY make no great Difference about Table Guests; for the King and a common Soldier, the Master and Slave, sit promiscuously, and dip in the same Dish: But Women never eat in Company with Men. The Mens Apparel is a Pair of Breeches down to their Ancles, with a loose Vest on their Backs, with very large Sleeves, and the Body of the Vest girded about their Bodies with a Sash, and a large Turband carelessly wreathed about their Heads, and a Pomard, or a short broad Sword stuck into their Girdle perpendicularly; their Shoes clumsily made, and very low and stiff at the Quarter-heels; and thus a Gentleman is equipped; but in cold Weather they use Camelins, a sort of loose Coat, without Sleeves, made of Camels Wooll. Their Women wear Breeches to their Heels, of finer Stuffs, and better Colours than the Men. The Body of the Vest made for their Use, is strait, but short waisted, and gathered above the Navel in Plats, which makes the lower Part look like a Petticoat. Their Shoes are shap'd like the Mens, flat and broad.

THE Reason why their Shoes are made so, is for their easier slipping off or on, when they enter, or come out of a Room, that they may not dirty the Carpets or Mats wherewith the Rooms are spread, which serve them for Beds in cold Weather. And, except some large round Pillows of broad Cloth or Velvet, stuff with Cotton, for the Ease of those who sit on the Carpets or Mats, to lean upon as they sit cross-legg'd, there is no other Furniture in a Room.

OVER all the three *Arabias*, their Custom in treating Strangers or Friends, is the same; for as soon as every one is seated, a Servant brings a Pot of Coffee, and serves it about in small Cups, that contain not a Quarter of a Gill; but

but as soon as one Cup is out, they fill again, and perhaps a third Time: Then a Pipe of Tobacco is presented, their Pipes differing much from ours in *Europe*, in Shape and Magnitude; which Service lasts till near the Time of breaking up Company, when comes in a little Pot of hot burning Coals, on which they throw some Chips of Agalawood, or some Powder of Benjoin, Myrrh or Frankincense, which produce a thick Smoke, that incenses or perfumes the whole Room. And, as I observed before, it is the Custom of wearing very great Sleeves to their Garments. They open their Sleeves as wide as they can, and hold them over the Smoke, which perfumes their Arms, Shoulders, Neck and Beard. And the last Course is some Rose-water to besprinkle the Company, which is the Signal to be gone every one about their Business; so, without any Forms of Ceremony, every one walks off.

THE Products of *Arabia Petrea* for Exportation, are but few, as Horses, Dates, fine Brimstone, some Coffee, but not so good as at *Mocha*; some Ruinois, which is the Root of a small Shrub, that dies Crimson, and some Pearl. Their Manufacture is some coarse Cotton, Linen and Camelins, which they consume most in their own Country; but the *Badows* need none, since they wear none. The *Arabs* wear no Pearl or Gold; but the Women of Distinction wear Pearl of a small Price, tho' I saw one there as big as a large Hazel-nut, exactly round, and of a fine Water. It was valued at one thousand Tomans, which is above three thousand Pounds *Sterl.* I have sometimes gone in a Boat to see them dive for Pearl, and have bought some Pearl Oysters of them; but the Divers are Cheats, putting the Oysters in the Sun, which makes them gape, and then the Rogues rummage them, and shake out the Pearl; and, after they are robbed of their Treasure, they put them into Water again, and they close. I bought at Times above one hundred Oysters, and got nothing; they cost me but seven Pence half Penny a Piece. At last I found one that had an Excrecence growing to the Shell on the Inside, which I carefully took off; and, at *Carwar* in *India*, I sold it for nine Pounds *Sterl.*

THE Women in this Country have some peculiar Privileges beyond the Men; for if one complain that a Man has offered Violence to her Person, without further Proof than

than her Word of Honour, he is punished with one hundred Bastinadoes on the Soles of the Feet, or put into a Dungeon under Ground, which has only an Hole at the Top, big enough to receive a Man; and when he is in, there is a Stone put over the Hole, too big to be removed by a single Person, and there he must stay three Days, and as many Nights, without Meat or Water, or Room to lie at his Length. And if a Wife complain of her Husband for Unkindness in any Kind, particularly of *due Benevolence*, as by Law established in the *Jewish* and *Mahometan* Churches, the Husband must undergo the Punishment of the Dungeon. But if a Lady trespasses, and her Spouse detect her Crime, he has the Law in his own Hand, and may chastise her with the Whip severely; but must not touch her Life, on Pain of Death.

THE *Muskat Arabs* are remarkable for their Humility and Urbanity. I had one Instance of their Civility. As I was one Morning walking the Streets, I met accidentally the Governor of the City, by them called the *Waal*, and, according to my Duty, I went into the Door of a Shop, to let him and his Guards have the Street, which generally are narrow; but he observing, by my Complexion and Garb, that I was a Stranger, made his Guard go on one Side, and beckoned me to come forward, and stood till I past by him. And for an Instance of their cool Temper, in hearing Debates and rectifying Mistakes between Parties disagreeing about Commerce: The before mentioned Interpreter at *Maceira*, was Commander of a Ship from *India*, and had freighted her to *Muskat*. The Freighter, who was a *Mahometan*, delayed paying the Freight, long after it was due by the Tenor of the Charter-party; upon which he being in a Passion with the Freighter for his continued Delays, went to the *Waal* to complain. He observing by the Gentleman's Countenance, that his Mind was discomposed, answered him, that being at that Time very busy about some of the King's Affairs, he had not Time to send for his Freighter, but desired that he would come some other Time, and he would hear him, and order the Payment. The Delays still continuing, the Captain went again in an angry Mood to make his Complaint, but was still put off with gentle Excuses: But at last addressing the

Waal

Waaly with Coolness, he was desired to sit down, and he would fend for the Freighter, which, accordingly he did; and, on his Appearance, the *Waaly* ask'd him why he did not comply with his Contract, as was stipulated by Charter-party; and his Excuses being thought insufficient, he was ordered to make Payment forthwith, or go to Prison; but the Freighter chose rather to bring the Money, and end the Dispute. The Captain ask'd the *Waaly* why he did not do him Justice sooner, who received for Answer, that it was his own Fault, for coming drunk to make Complaint. The Captain protested that he had not been drunk in many Years; but the *Waaly* replied, that he saw him drunk with Passion, which was the most dangerous Sort of Drunkenness.

THE Countries to the Southward of *Musket*, as far as *Curia Maria*, are under the Dominions of *Myskat*, and the *Sheeks* or Princes are their Tributaries. The Land is mountainous; but the Plains and Vallies very fertile and well watered, and consequently well peopled. And, to the Northward of *Muskat*, the same Chain of rocky Mountains continue as high as *Zoar*, above Cape *Musenden*, which Cape and Cape *Jaques* begin the Gulf of *Persia* on the *Arabian* Side. About *Zoar* begins the Desert, that runs as far northerly as *Aleppo*. The Mountains near the Sea, are sandy, and the Vallies and Plains sterile, and ill inhabited, and as ill watered.

ABOUT the Year 1620, *Persia* was in a flourishing Condition, and was a Terror to all its Neighbours. *Shaw Tamas*, Son to the famous *Shaw Abass*, was then King, and being of a martial Disposition, had a Design to annex all the *Arabian* Coast opposite to *Persia*, to his own Dominions, and accordingly transported from *Cong*, a City of his own that lies on the Sea-shore, an Army of thirty five or forty thousand Men to conquer it. The Army met with no Opposition in landing, and they soon over-ran the Country wherever they went; but they had not been long in Pursuit of their Conquest, till Provisions began to be scarce in the Army, which, with the Scarcity of fresh Water, and the intolerable Heats, both of Sun and Winds, brought a Contagion on the *Persians*, that killed the better
Half

Half of them, and obliged what was left to return back to *Persia* by Shipping, as they had come from it.

THOSE barren Coasts are needlessly secured by sandy Banks, that run ten or twelve Leagues off from the Shore, which would make Navigation impracticable, if it should meet with Encouragement; but the two Islands of *Bareen*, lying in the Latitude of twenty nine Degrees thirty Minutes, almost in the Bottom of the Gulf, and belonging to the Crown of *Persia*, have the best Pearl Fishing in the World.

ABOUT the Beginning of this Century, the *Muskat Arabs* took Possession of *Bareen* Islands; but the honest Pearl Fishers deserted it whilst the *Arabs* kept Possession, who finding that their new Settlement could not defray the Charge of keeping, without the Pearl Fishers, they left it; and the Fishers who are mostly *Arabs*, returned to their Industry, and continue the Fishery.

THE great *Turk* gives Laws to all the Countries that lie between the River *Euphrates* and *Ethiopia*; but there are many Sheeks who inhabit those Desarts, that make but small Account of him or his Orders, because the Sterility of their Country makes them secure from great Armies coming amongst them, and a small one dares not venture amongst them as Enemies. They being naturally Thieves, rob Friend or Foe, or one another; so that few People of Substance have any Commerce with them.

THERE are no Towns of Note between *Muskat* and *Bassora*, but *Zoar*, and but very few inconsiderable Villages; but there are two or three convenient Harbours for Shipping. The southermost is about six Leagues to the Southward of Cape *Mosenden*, called *Courforcaun*. It is almost like *Muskat* Harbour, but somewhat bigger, and has excellent fresh Water in deep Wells, about a Quarter of a Mile from the Landing-Place. The Village contains about twenty little Houses; yet there are pretty good Refreshments to be had there. Cape *Mosenden* is of itself but a good Number of small high Islands lying near one another, but they appear like a Promontory on *Terra firma*. And up to the Westward of the Cape there is another Harbour, whose Name I have forgot; but there
are

are good fresh Water and animal Provisions to be had there.

BASSORA is the eastmost City or Town in the *Turkish* Dominions, standing, about two Miles from the famous *Euphrates* and has a small Rivulet that washes its Walls on the West Side, and discharges its Waters into the *Euphrates*. This City stands about thirty Leagues from the Sea, and it is alledged, was built by the Emperor *Trajan*, and had the Honour to be the Birth-Place of another *Roman* Emperor, *Philip* surnamed the *Arabian*: But at first it was built along the Side of the River, and the *Vestigia* of its ancient Walls are still to be seen from the aforesaid Rivulet, a League down the Banks of *Euphrates*, which disembogues her Waters, by four or five Mouths, into the Gulf of *Persia*; but none navigable for for Ships of Burden, but that Chanel that leads to *Bassora*. At the City it is a short Mile over at high Water, and is keeps about the same Breadth to the very Mouth of it. *Bassora* exports yearly for foreign Countries, above ten thousand Tuns of Dates, which employ Abundance of Seamen for their Exportation, besides many more Poor in gathering and packing them in Mats made of the Leaves of the Date Tree, and likewise in drying them.

THE Ruins of the famous *Babylon* lie about two hundred *English* Miles up the River from *Bassora*; and at *Bagdat*, which is twelve Miles below it, the Ruins appear to be a Mountain, and are the Habitation of wild Beasts and Serpents. Whether *Bagdat* was built out of its Ruins, or no, I know not; but 'tis reported, and generally believed that it was. It is now a prodigious large City, and the Seat of a *Beglerbeg*, who governs a very great Province. The *Bashaws* of *Bassora*, *Comera* and *Musol* (the ancient *Nineveh*) are subordinate to him, and are able to bring one hundred and fifty thousand Men into the Field.

COMERA stands on the Banks of *Euphrates*, about eighty Miles above *Bassora*, and, by common Tradition, is the Place where holy *Job* dwelt. There is a Garison of ten thousand Janisaries continually kept there, and eight or ten River Gallies, well furnished, to awe the circumjacent Countries, who are apt to rebel. And *Bassora* has three thousand Janisaries and five Gallies for the same Account.

The

The Bashaws of the Gallies are not subordinate to the Bashaws of the Cities; but he of the Gallies has the Command of the circumjacent Countries, laying on of Taxes, and raising Subsidies at his Pleasure, as he of the Cities has Power to oppress the Citizens: And their Avarice and Severity often cause Mutinies and Blood-shed. One of those Mutinies happened at *Bassora*, in the Year 1721, for the Bashaw of the City having married a Lady out of the *Grand Seignior's Seraglio*, and that Monarch having some Deference for her on Account of Consanguinity, her Husband was put into the Bashaw's Ship to get Money to support his Lady's Extravagancy; and finding that fair honest Ways would be a long while in raising such Sums as he thought would be sufficient for that End, oppressed both City and Country to fill his Coffers. The poor oppressed Merchants, Mechanicks and Peasants plied him with Complaints on his Soldiery, who, they thought, robbed them, since the Exactions were new. They gave in Remonstrances of their Grievances, and petitioned for Redress; but the Persons sent with those Addresses, had the Bastinado for their Impertinence. Upon this the distressed City and Country made their Address to the Bashaw of the Gallies, who knew they had just Cause of Complaint. He wrote to the *Eglerbeg*, and informed him of their Case and Condition, and obtained a severe Reprimand; for he of the City, instead of Amendment, added Cruelties to Oppression, and murdered many who would not, or could not pay what they were taxed at, which unheard-of Barbarities made above fifty thousand of the City and Country betake themselves to Arms, and march out, with the *Musli* or high Priest at their Head; and he had a green Flag, which is *Mubomet's* Banner, before him, carried by a Priest; and he and his Army encamped near the Bashaw of the Gallies his House, which stands about two Miles below the City, by the River Side; and the Bashaw of the Gallies joined them with one thousand Janisaries. The *Musli*, according to Custom, plied his spiritual Artillery, and excommunicated the Bashaw of the City, and all that adhered to him. This Mutiny continued some Days; but I heard of no Blood-shed, and only opprobrious Language past. But the Town began to feel

War,

Want, for the Peasants would bring no Eatables to the City; but the *Musti's* Host were plentifully supplied. All Shops being shut up, and all the Markets unprovided, made the Bashaw of the City begin to think what the End would be, if the Mutiny continued any longer; so he got some Country Gentlemen, who were of neither Faction, to go to the *Musti* and the Bashaw of the Gallies, as Mediators; and accordingly they went, and were handsomely received, and, in their Oration on the present Posture of Affairs, made the *Musti* and his Party incline to Peace, providing that about a Dozen of Incendiaries might be delivered to them, to receive condign Punishment for their Faults. All the proscribed, but one, by the Intercession of Friends, were pardoned; but they would hear of no Peace till the other was made a Sacrifice to their just Resentment; for this Villain would accost a Merchant in the Street, and, after common Compliments ended, he would ask them what became of the Diamonds, or other Jewels, that they had shewn him such a Time. The innocent Merchant, who perhaps never had any Jewels, being surpris'd at his Question, would deny that ever they had any such as he spake of. Then the impudent Fellow would tell them plainly, that without they would bribe him with a round Sum, he would inform the Bashaw, that he had seen such Quantities of rough Diamonds, or other valuable Stones, in their Possession, and if they could not be found entred in the Custom-house Books, they must expect to suffer what Punishment the Bashaw would please to inflict for defrauding the King of his Customs. Some out of Fear would comply, and give a Sum, others again stood on their Innocence, and would not give him Money; and they were sure to be informed against, and brought before the Bashaw, and, upon that Villain's Evidence, were generally fined about double of what he ask'd of them; so that besides the great Sums that came into the Bashaw's Coffers by that Rascal's Ingenuity, he had accumulated twenty five Bags to himself, each Bag containing five hundred Crowns, and all this in the Space of three Years that he had been in *Bassora*; for he came from *Constantinople* one of the Bashaw's Retinue, hardly worth an *Asper*, and at his Death so much ready Cash was found in his House, which fell into his Master the Bashaw's

Hands:

Hands: For after this Villain was culled out to be sacrificed to the just Repentment of the People, and found that they would not be appeased without having his Life, he fell at his Master's Feet for Protection. The cunning covetous Bashaw bid him convey what Money he had to his House, and he would take Care of it for the Use of his Wife and Children, and would send him secretly out of the Town, and get him safely conducted to *Comera*. He swallowed that Bait, and delivered his ill-gotten Money to his Master, who protected him but one single Day, and then told him, that the People's Clamours were so great, that he could protect him no longer; and accordingly he was delivered to the enraged Mob, who forthwith strangled him, and threw his Body on a Dung-hill by the Side of an High-way, where I saw it two Days after. And the Musti and Bashaw made Matters up for the Ease and Satisfaction of the People, who grew quite tired of their Divisions.

BASSORA was many Years in the Hands of the *Persians*, who gave great Encouragement to Trade, which drew many Merchants from foreign Parts to settle there, and particularly from *Surat* in *India*. But in the Year 1691, a Pestilence raged so violently, that above eighty thousand People were carried off by it, and those that remained fled from it, so that for three Years following it was a Desert, inhabited only by wild Beasts, who were at last driven out of the Town by the circumjacent wild *Arabs*, who possess it about twelve Months, and were in their Turn driven out by the *Turk*, who keeps it till this Day.

THERE are many *Jews* in *Bassora* who live by Brokerage and exchanging Money; but the *Turks* keep that Set of People very low, for Reasons of State. There are also about two hundred *Christians* of the *Greek Church*, but no Priests of that Communion, wherefore some *Roman Missionaries* officiate there. The *Greek Clergy* are very indifferent about gaining Profelytes, and, to nourish their Flocks, will not run the Risque of Martyrdom, so they keep none of their Priesthood at *Bassora*. But when I was there, three *Romish* Priests of the *Carmelite Order* had the Superintendency of that Church. These sanctified Rascals

were a Scandal to *Christianity*, by making a Tavern of their Church; for having more Indulgence from the Government than the *Mahometans*, in moral Matters, they abuse it to the vilest Uses, in selling Arrack, which they distil from Dates, and procuring Birds of Paradise for the Use of their Customers. The *Mahometans* again are forbidden strictly the Drinking of Wine or distilled Liquors, both by their ecclesiastick and civil Laws; for the Heat of the Sun, and the dry sandy Soil create much adust Choler in their Brains, that when they are heated by drinking strong Liquors, they become furious and mischievous to one another, and, in those mad Fits, wound and kill their Fellows. Those scandalous Priests had been often reprimanded by the Government, for abusing the Indulgence they had, but to little Purpose, for their Trade was very gainful.

THE Horses in this Part of *Arabia* are very well shap'd, and mettlesom, and the Men the most dextrous in managing them that ever I saw. They shoot with Bow and Arrow, and throw their Lance at full Speed, and very seldom miss the Mark. They will stoop at full Speed, and take up an Hare as she runs, with their Hands, or throw a Lance in the Air, and catch it before it comes to the Ground: And indeed the most of their Exercise, whilst young, is in managing their Horses.

THEY have many Boats on the River, of several Shapes and Dimensions; some are made of Wood, with high broad Boughs, and very long, others very short: Their Rudders are in Breadth a Quarter Part of their Keel's Length, but not intire of one Piece as ours are, and they daub them over Outside and Inside with Bitumen, without caulking them; others are Baskets made of Reeds, perfectly round with two Sticks laid athwart cross-ways their Bottoms to keep them open. They are also daub'd on the Outside and Bottom with Bitumen. And this Sort they make use of to transport Goods from Place to Place. Bitumen is a thick sulphurous and unctious Matter, generated in the Earth there, and boils up of its own Accord to the Surface; and sometimes it is so hot, that it scalds the Hands or Feet of them that go to gather it. And there are some hot Pits in the Ground, that putting a Pot

over them, they'll boil Meat. There is also Oyl of *Peter* in those Grounds, which is very good in healing rheumatick Pains.

CHAP. XII.

Observations on the Empire of Persia, giving an Account of its Magnitude, the Reduction of Ormusse to the Obedience of Persia by the Assistance of the English: Also of the late Revolution by Meriweys.

THE Empire of *Persia* is of a large Extent, being limited by *Euphrates* and the *Persian Gulf* to the Westward, the *India Ocean*, from *Cape Guaddel*, to the Southward, on the East Side by the River *Indus*, that runs one thousand two hundred Miles to the Northward from its Mouth, and on the North by *Usbeck*, *Tartaria*, *Colchis*, *Mangrelia*, the *Caspian Sea* and *Georgia*. *Erivan* in *Armenia* is a Province in the North-west of it, as *Cebul* and *Candaba* are on the North-east Side. Towards *Turkey* they sometimes lose and get whole Provinces in a Year. About the Beginning of the seventeenth Century, *Shah Abass* was King of *Persia*, a King worthy of Empire, and made himself famous by his Valour and Justice; but having no Fleet at Sea, the *Portuguese* insulted his Sea-Coasts, and settled themselves on the Island of *Ormusse*, and built a good strong Fort, as is already observed, with a pretty large Town, and magnificent Churches. Some Porches and broken Pillars I have seen, that speak their ancient Grandeur; and the Castle is still good, and well kept. The *Portuguese*, with their light Frigats and Gallies, insulted the Sea-Coasts of *Persia*, and all the Shipping that had Commerce in the Gulf, for above a whole Century. *Shah Abass* being tired with the Complaints of his Subjects, and others that had been robbed and insulted by the imperious *Portuguese*, made him very uneasy, and found no Remedy but by encouraging the *English*, who then had a small Factory on the Sea-shore, about seven Leagues from the Mouth of the Gulf, to the East-ward, called *Jasques*,
but

but were continually disturbed in their Commerce by the domineering *Portuguese* from *Ormuse*.

SIR *Thomas Row* being then Ambassador at the Court of *Persia* for King *James* the First of *England*, to cultivate a Correspondence between the two Kingdoms, *Shaw Abass* broke his Mind to Sir *Thomas*, and proferred any reasonable Indulgence to the *English* that traded into *Persia*, providing they would joyn his Land Forces with theirs at Sea, in *India*, to drive the troublesome *Portuguese* out of the *Persian* Gulf. Sir *Thomas* agreed, that, if *Shaw Abass* would defray the Charges of the Ships that should come to his Assistance, give the *English* a free Trade all over the *Persian* Dominions, Custom free, and grant them one Moiety of the Customs raised by Merchandize in the Gulf, they would not only help to drive the *Portuguese* out of *Ormuse*, but keep two Ships in the Gulf, to protect Trade. All which was agreed to by both Parties, and sealed and signed by the King of *Persia*.

THE *English* Forces consisted of five Ships, about forty Guns one with another, and were well mann'd. The King of *Persia* sent an Army of forty or fifty thousand, with *Trankies* for Transports, to land them on *Ormuse*. The *English* soon destroyed the *Portuguese* Armado of light Frigats and Gallies, which were hawl'd dry on the Land near the Castle. The Castle firing briskly on them, sunk one of the *English* Ships, whose Artillery was carried ashore, and put in Batteries to annoy the Castle, which the Shipping and Batteries did so effectually, that, in less than two Months, the *Portuguese* capitulated to leave *Ormuse*, with all the Fortifications intire, and to carry nothing away but their noble selves. The Plunder, which was very great, was equally divided between the *English* and *Persians*; and Tradition reports, that there was so much ready Bullion found in the Castle, that it was measured by Long-boats-full, and one Boat being pretty deep, and an Officer full throwing in more, put the Boatwain of the Ship, who was in the Boat, into a Passion, and made him swear, that for every Shovel-full that they threw more in, he would throw two out into the Sea; for he could not tell what would satisfy them, if a Long-boat Load of Money would not. On the Reduction of the

Island and Fort of *Ormuse*, the *Portuguese* withdrew their Men from the Forts of *Laracka*, another Island four or five Leagues from *Ormuse*, and from *Kisimish* Fort, that lies on the East End of that Island, and retired to *Muskat*. *Shaw Abafs* was punctual in observing the Agreement with the *English*; and it was punctually kept by the succeeding Kings, till about the Year 1680. the *English* Company failed on their Part of keeping the Gulf clear of Insults; and the *Persians*, finding the *English* Company's Forces were now too small for the increasing Power of the *Arabs* their Neighbours, took away the half Customs, and allow them one thousand one hundred *Temaans*, which is about three thousand three hundred Pounds *Sterling* a Year; but I am afraid that is also lost by the late Revolution in *Persia*.

WHEN *Shaw Abafs* demised, his Son *Shaw Tomas* succeeded him, who was a Son worthy of such a Father. He died about the Year 1630. He was a very valiant and fortunate Prince in his Wars with *Turk* and *Mogul*, and a great Lover of Justice; for whoever broke the established Laws, were sure to suffer the Penalty annext to them. One Instance of that he shewed on a Baker; for, being once detected in making his Bread lighter than the Standard, he was severely fined; but, on his being detected and convicted a second Time, he was condemned to be bak'd in his own Oven, for a Terror to others, who might flatter themselves with breaking the Laws with Impunity.

AFTER *Shaw Tomas*, the succeeding Kings have been debauch'd with Ignorance of their own Affairs, Voluptuousness and Indolence, leaving the Reins of Government in the Hands of Parasites, or Eunuchs and Concubines, who never fail to bring their Master into Contempt, and the People into Murmurings and Rebellions. A very flagrant Instance is to be seen in *Meriweys's* Revolution.

THE whole Reign of the last *Sopbi*, or King, was managed by such Vermin, that the *Balkwches* and *Mackrans*, who inhabit the Sea-coast from Cape *Jesques* to *Indus*, observing the Weakness of the Government threw off the Yoke of Obedience first, and, in full Zodies, fell in upon their Neighbours in *Carrackia*, who were thriftier and richer

richer than the maritime Freebooters, and plundered their Fellow Subjects of what they had got by their painful Industry. There was no Want of Remonstrances and Petitions put into the Court to put a Stop to those Enormities, but no Redress could be had. The *Usbecks* came also on their neighbouring Province of *Muschet*, and committed many Depredations; and when Letters came from the Governor of that Province, to acquaint the King of the *Usbecks* Incursions, he happened then to be at Play with a young Cat, that hunted a Feather that he kept in Motion with a Thread. One of the Pages acquainted him, that a Messenger was come in great Haste from *Muschet*, with Letters to the Vizier, who was at the Chamber Door, to know what his Majesty would please to order in that Juncture. He answered, that as soon as he had done playing with his Cat, he would send for the Vizier, and consult of that Matter; but he never thought more of it. This Indolence made many Thefts, Robberies and Murders to be committed throughout the Country: Nay, his own Guards went out in Troops, and way-laid Merchants going or coming to or from *Ispahan*, robbed them, and often murdered them; and when Complaints were made, and Proof offered, yet no Redress could be had, which made most People believe, that some Court Favourites were Encouragers of the publick Calamities. In the Year 1716, I carried some *Armenian* Merchants from *Persia* to *Surat*, who assured me, that there was a Design to depose the King, and set up his Son, or invite the *Muscovite* into the Province of *Casbin*, whose Shores are on the *Caspian* Sea, and where a foreign Army may easily be brought into their Ports by Sea: And certainly there was such a Design; for in the Year 1719, the Plot of deposing the King was found out, and the *Attamadoulet* or Vizier was deeply concerned in it. He was *Meriwey's* or *Meir Mahcumud Shaw's* Father, the Son being then *Chawn*, or Prince of *Candabac*. The King was solacing himself in a Garden near the City of *Ispahan*, when he was apprised of the Plot, which was to be executed the same Night it was discovered. He immediately sent for the *Attamadoulet*, pretending Business of Importance about some Frontier Provinces; and the old Gentleman

not dreaming of the Discovery made, came to the King, who taxing him with the Plot, made no Difficulty to confess that it was of his own Contrivance, to save the Country from Ruin, which was inevitable, if he continued in Supineness, which had affected him near forty Years, and there was no Sign of Amendment, notwithstanding his Remonstrances and Admonitions all that while, and now that he was detected, he knew the worst that could befall him, was to be sacrificed for the Good of his Country, which he took to be rather glorious than dishonourable. The King ordered some Bars of Iron to be heated, and his Eyes kept open till the Irons were gently moved near the Eyes to dry up the Moisture, which is the royal Punishment in *Persia*, for disobedient or rebellious Princes; so the old Man being made blind, his Treasure was seized, but his Palace and Gardens allowed him, and an Allowance suitable to his Dignity. He had in Gold Diamonds, to the Value of eight hundred thousand *Tomaans*, or two millions four hundred thousand *Pounds Sterling*; and some said he had more in his Son's Custody: But how true these Reports are, I am no proper Judge, either to believe or reject; but some Bars of his Gold I saw at *Cambroon*.

BEFORE this Conspiracy of the *Attamadoulet* happened, the *Muskat Arabs* came with a Fleet, and landed five or six thousand Men on *Ormuse*, and besieged the Castle; but could not take it in three Months, and being tired with Fatigue, they left it. But in the Year 1720, *Meriways* hearing how the King had used his Father, made the whole Province of *Candahar* rebel, and wrote Letters to the *Chawn* of *Samachie* to come into Alliance with him and his Confederates the *Ballowches* and *Usbecks*, who readily embraced his Propositions in Hope of Plunder. In 1721 *Meriways* began his March towards *Ispahan*, with an Army of forty five thousand, and paid honestly for what his Army had Occasion for in his March, declaring, that he did not take Arms for their Hurt or Destruction, but to free *Persia* from the Folly and Tyranny of a doting Fool, who was incorrigible by fair Means. The *Usbecks* entered the Provinces of *Muschet* and *Yezd*, with forty thousand, and acted like Robbers. Another Army of
forty

forty thousand went out of *Samachie*, and ravaged *Erivan*; and the *Ballowches* entered the Province of *Carmania* and plundered the Country, and at last took the City. Then they marched towards *Laar*, and took the Town, but not the Fort: And there twelve *Hollanders*, who were sent from *Gombroon*, to convey down some Treasure belonging to their Company, behaved themselves to Admiration. They were lodged in a *Caravanjeray*, where the *Ballowches* came with about three hundred to attack them; but they had a brave warm Reception, and left about four Score of their Number dead on the Spot, without the Loss of one *Dutch* Man: But not thinking themselves and their Treasure safe where they were, they desired Admittance into the Fort, which was readily granted, and there they also behaved themselves so well, that the *Ballowches* marched away without the Booty they came so far for. The *Dutch* staid there above a Month, and in that Time came a Detachment of four thousand Horse to plunder *Gombroon*. We heard of their Design about ten Days before they came, and so we and the *Dutch* fortified our Factories as well as possibly we could, planting little Falconets on the Top of our Walls in Swivels, and beating out Ports in our Walls, to ply great Guns, to scour the Avenues to our Factories. Mean while the *Persian* Governor fired Guns every Night, to let the Enemy know he was a brave Fellow: However they had a Mind to see, and, on the 15th of *December*, they appeared near the Town, on a swift March towards it, which scared the Governor so much, that, tho' there was an high Mud Wall between him and them, he got on Horse-back, and fled to a Fort on the Sea-shore, leaving a few Guns, loaded as they were, to the Enemy.

THE *Fallowches* came first on the West Quarter of the Town, where our Factory stands, and soon made Passages through the Mud Walls. They hewed down all that came in their Way, particularly old People and Children, and came in a confused Haste to attack our Factory, down some Lanes; but we gave them a warm Welcome with our great Guns and small Shor. They soon found their Mistake, and retired in as great Haste as they came. Some of their Musketeers got into some ruined Houses,

and fired on us; but we being barricadoed, they did us little Damage, and had our Men observed their Orders better, we had come off with less. Our Firing lasted about three Hours, in which Time we lost three or four, killed by their own Rashness in standing open to the Enemy, when they might have done better Service under Cover of our Barricadoes. We had also seven wounded, but none mortally, but one who was a Factor, who received a Shot in his right Hand, which threw him into a Fever, of which he died in seven or eight Days. The Agent being gone to *Spahan* some Weeks before we had any Advice of the *Ballovibes* coming, had carried twenty Soldiers along with him for a Guard, and left but six in the Factory, besides Cooks, and a few Servants. I saw the Factory in Danger if they should be attacked, so I reinforced it with thirty six of my best Men, and another small *English* Ship from *Bombay*, assisted with eight or nine of his, so that when the Enemy came, we were about fifty strong. The Season being very cold, made our Duty hard, for we lay in our Arms every Night, for ten or twelve Nights that the Enemy lay in the Town. They had a Consultation next Day after their Repulse, how they might make another Attack; but none would undertake to lead their Men on, and so the Day after Consultation, they went to attack the *Dutch*, who were three Times stronger than we, and they met with the same kind Reception we gave them; but they had a Warehouse within Pistol shot of their Factory, with Goods to the Value of twenty thousand Pounds *Sterling* in it, which the *Ballovibes* broke into, and plundered. The *Dutch* lost twelve Men, and had eight or ten wounded: So finding our Factories were not to be taken without the Danger of much Blood-shed, they went a plundering the Town for eight or nine Days, and carried away, in Money and Goods, above two hundred thousand Pounds, besides fourteen thousand Captives, and as many Beasts of Carriage, and so went off about five or six Miles from the Town which they laid in Ashes before they left it. They continued in our Neighbourhood, with their Plunder, about a Month, I suppose till they received new Orders how to dispose of themselves.

Not-

NOTWITHSTANDING such numerous rebellious Armies were a Foot, threatening Destruction to the State, the indolent King, being lulled asleep in Security, did not offer to raise any Forces for the Defence of himself and Country, but said to his Cabinet Counsellors, *that he was sure his Enemies would leave him Ipahan, and that one City would be enough to maintain him and them his Counsellors*: But when *Merikweys* came within three Days Journey of the City, he raised about fifty thousand of the Citizens, and sent to the *English* and *Dutch* Agents, to join their little Forces to his, to manage the Artillery, and to lend him some Money to support and pay his new raised Army. The latter desired to be excused in both; but the *English* complied, and were very active in defending the City, when *Merikweys* came to besiege it: And when he approached within a Mile or two of the City, the King sent his raw Army out to fight *Merikweys*; but in their March *Merikweys's* Men having made a long Trench a pretty Way from their Front, and had a large Quantity of Gun-powder in it, and then filled it up again, which Ambuscade the King's Army fell into, and, after a good Number of them had past it, Fire was set to it, and blew up and scorched many of the King's Men, which so frightened the rest, that they turned Tail, and fled without striking one Stroke, so *Merikweys* made an easy Conquest of the City, and found the King weeping, and deserted by his base and treacherous Courtiers. But *Merikweys* soon put an End to his Melancholy, by ordering his Head to be struck off, which was forthwith executed, and put on the Point of a Lance, and carried thro' the City three Days successively, as a Spectacle. The Prince royal, or the young *Sepbi*, seeing his Father's Affairs in so wretched a Condition, had left the City, and went to *Taurus* or *Teverize* before *Merikweys* came. *Merikweys* carried himself mighty civilly to the Citizens, but made the *English* Prisoners, and seized what Money and Goods could be found of theirs, and also the *Dutch* Company's Effects, but not their Servants Persons. It was reported, that the *English* lost about fifty thousand Pounds, and the *Dutch* two hundred and ten thousand. But the Truth of these Reports are best known to themselves,

WHEN

WHEN the old King had a Mind to honour the *Englifo* Factory with a Vifit, as I faw in a Letter from Mr. *Bruce* the Company's Agent, that he fometimes did, and one particularly in his Agency, he magnifies the Honour done to his Mafters, above what the *Dutch* could ever obtain. He relates how he and all the Factory, great and fmall, were ordered to leave their Houfe, and Chamber Doors and Ware-houfes all open, for his Majefty and his *Seraglio* Companions to ramble thro', and take fuch Things as beft pleased him and his Minions; and there was a Table left in the Dining-room, fpread and furnifhed with the richeft Sweet-meats and Fruits.

I believe the Company was not very ambitious of having many fuch Honours conferred on them, fince they were obliged to pay for them. And when the King has a Mind for fome new Concubines, he iffues out Orders for all Men and Youths to depart out from their Houfes in the Street, that he is pleased to vifit, and to leave all the Ladies in Poffeffion till his Majefty furveys them; and the Penalty of Difobedience is Death. He generally makes his Progreffs thro' the *Armenian* Quarters, becaufe the faireft and moft beautiful are amongft their Children.

THE Religion, by Law eftablifhed for near eleven Ages, is *Makometan*, of the Sect of *Alli*; but the ancient Religion was *Parfi*, or Worshippers of the Sun and Fire. The Founder of it was *Zoroafter*, whom they ftill venerate. About the ninth Century of the *Chriftian Era*, the *Makometan* Zealots, according to the laudable Way of fome *Chriftians*, raifed a Perfecution againft the *Parfis*, whofe wholefom Severities made many Profelytes; but fome obftinate Rogues, who would not change for a worfe, were lawfully murdered, or obliged to run their Country, fo that at prefent there are but few left in *Persia*, and thofe that are left, are protected by their Poverty and Habitations, which are in Deferts or Hills little frequented.

THERE are vaft Numbers of *Armenian Chriftians* in *Persia*, whofe Religion is tolerated. Their former Country of *Armenia* is now the Province of *Erivan*. There are many fubftantial Merchants of *Armenians*, who inhabit *Julfar*, a Town near *Ifpahan*, and they fend Factors all over *India*

to carry on Trade; and some come to *Europe* on that same Account.

THE *Mahometans* in *Persia*, to encourage Profelytes to their Religion, have a Law, that if a Son of an *Armenian* turns *Mahometan*, all the Fathers's Estate becomes his, and all who continue *Christians* are excluded, which sometimes makes great Divisions and Alterations in a Family.

IN Baptism they immerse, but do not sprinkle. The Priest must officiate in his sacerdotal Garb, with a Crown on his Head, and must have two Assistants in holy Vestments also, but without Crowns. Their titular Saint is *St. Gregory*, of whom they tell many strange Stories; but whether true or false I know not: But I am sure he has plagued them with Fast-days, for they fast one Half of the Year at least.

HAVING made what Observations I could of the Empire of *Persia*, I'll travel along the Sea-coast towards *Induſtan*, or the *Great Mogul's* Empire. All that Shore, from *Fasques* to *Sindy*, is inhabited by uncivilized People, who admit of no Commerce with Strangers, tho' *Guaddel* and *Diul*, two Sea-ports, did, about a Century ago, afford a good Trade.

C H A P. XIII.

Treats of the Mogul's Dominions on the River Indus, particularly of the ancient Kingdom of Sindy; its Product and Commerce, Religion and Customs of the Inhabitants; with a Description of the River Indus.

SINDY is the westmost Province of the *Mogul's* Dominions, on the Sea-coast, and has *Larribundar* to its Sea Mart, which stands about five or six Leagues from the Sea, on a Branch of the River *Indus*, capable to receive Ships of two hundred Tuns. It is but a Village of about one hundred Houses, built of crooked Sticks and Mud; but it has a large Stone Fort, with four or five great Guns mounted in it, to protect the Merchandize brought thither, from the Robberies of the *Ballowches* and

and *Mackrans* that lie near them, to the Westward, and the *Jams* to the Eastward, who being Borderers, are much given to Thieving, and they rob all whom they are able to master. The former are revolted Subjects of *Persia*, and the other are Subjects of the *Mogul*; but being secured from the Awe of an Army's coming to chastise their Insolency, by the moorish Grounds they live in, and the rapid Tides of *Indus*, they make but little Account of their Sovereign's Power or Orders, and so they commit Depredations on the *Cassillas* that pass to and fro between *Tatta* and *Larribundar*, notwithstanding a Guard of one or two hundred Horse are sent along with them, by the *Nabob* or Vice-roy of *Tatta*, for Protection; but often those Protectors suffer the *Cassillas* to be robbed, pretending the Robbers are too numerous to be restrained by their small Forces, and afterwards come in Sharers with the Robbers.

Tatta is the *Emporium* of the Province, a very large and rich City. It is about three Miles long, and one and an half broad, and is about forty Miles Distance from *Larribundar*, and has a large Citadel on its West End, capable to lodge five thousand Men and Horse, and has Barracks and Stables convenient for them, with a Palace built in it for the *Nabob*. All Goods and Merchandize imported or exported between *Tatta* and *Larribundar*, are transported on Carriage Beasts, such as Camels, Oxen and Horses. The Country is almost level, and overgrown with Shrubs and Bushes, very fit to cover an Ambuscade, which the afore said Robbers often make use of, and suddenly rush out on a *Cassilla*, and whilst the Guards and Carriers are fighting in one Place, either of Front, Flank or Rear, the Robbers drive away the Beasts with their Packs.

It was my Fortune, about four Months after, to come to *Larribundar*, with a Cargo from *Mallabar*, worth above ten thousand Pounds. I could find no *Tatta* Merchants that would meddle with my Cargo before it was carried to *Tatta*; but agreed on the Prices of most of the Species of my Goods: And finding no other Remedy but travelling by Land, in a *Cassilla* of one thousand five hundred Beasts, and as many, or more Men and Women, besides

files two hundred Horse for our Guard, about the Middle of *January* we set out; and after we had marched about sixteen Miles, our Scouts brought in News of the *Ballowches* and *Mackrans* being just before us, in great Numbers. I had thirteen of my best Firemen with me in the Front, where my Beasts were. We being all mounted on little Horses, alighted, and set our Beasts on our Flanks and Front, to serve us for a Barricadoc, to defend us from Sword and Target-men, which were the principal Strength of the Robbers, and we, at the same Time, had Room enough to fire over our Barricadoc. We were not long in that Posture, till the Enemy sent an Herald on Horseback, with his Sword brandishing, and when he came within Call of us, he threatened, that if we did not instantly surrender at Discretion, we should have no Quarters. I had two of my Seamen that shot as well with a Fuzee as any ever I saw, for I have seen them at Sea, for Diversion, knock down a single Sea-fowl with a single Bullet, as they were flying near our Ship. I ordered one to knock down the Herald, which he instantly did, by a Bullet through his Head. Another came presently after, with the same Threatenings, and met with the same Treatment. The next that came, I ordered his Horse to be shot in the Head, to try if we could take his Rider, that we might learn somewhat of the Enemy's Strength. The Horse was killed as soon as he appeared, and some of our Horse got the Rider, and hewed him down, instead of bringing him to us. Our Guard of Horse continually kept in the Rear, but seeing what we had done in the Front, took Courage, and getting in amongst the Bushes, met with some that had a Design to attack our Flank, and soon defeated them, which put the Robbers in such Fear, that they betook themselves to Flight, and our Horse pursuing, put many to the Sword; so when they returned from the Pursuit, we went on in our Journey, and travelling four Miles, came to a Mud-wall Fort, called *Dungbam*, a proper *English* Name for such a Fortification. It is built mid-way between *Tatta* and *Larribunder*, to secure the *Cassilla* from being set upon in the Night, who all lodge within it, Men and Beasts promiscuously, which makes it so nasty, that the *English* Appellation is rightly bestowed on it. There
 are

are about twenty little Cottages built close to it, who breed Fowls, Goats and Sheep, to sell to Passengers. And these are all the Houses to be seen in the Way between *Tatta* and *Larribunder*.

THE News of a Victory that I had over three *Sanganian* Pirates at Sea, on my Voyage from *Malabar* to *Larribunder*, had reached *Tatta*, before the second Skirmish by Land, so that when I came to *Tatta*, we were received with Acclamations from the Populace, and the better Sort visited us with Presents of Sweet-meats and Fruits, ascribing the safe Arrival of the *Cassilla* wholly to our Courage and Conduct.

WE were lodged in a large convenient House of fifteen Rooms, and had good Warehouses. The Stairs from the Street, were intire Porphyry, of ten Foot long, of a bright yellow Colour, and as smooth as Glass. They were about ten in Number, and led up to a Square of fifteen Yards long, and about ten broad. Next Day we had a Compliment from the *Nabob*, of an Ox, five Sheep, as many Goats, twenty Fowls and fifty Pigeons, with Sweet-meats and Fruit in Abundance. He, at that Time, lay encamped about six Miles from the Town, with an Army of eight or ten thousand Men, with a Design to punish the *Bellowches* and *Mackrans* for robbing the *Cassilla*, and killing his Men, as is before mentioned. He desired me to let him know when we designed to drink a Dish of Coffee with him, and he would send Horses to bring us to the Camp. I returned Thanks for his Civility, and sent him Word, that I designed to kiss his Hand the very next Day; and he accordingly sent twenty fine *Persian* Horses, well equipp'd, for my Use, ten of which I accepted for myself and Guard to mount, and the other ten were mounted, with some of the most considerable Merchants in *Tatta*, who went to accompany me out of Respect; and, to make our Cavalcade appear with the greater Grace, as soon as we came to the Camp Gate, we would have alighted, but an Officer on Horse-back told us, that it was the *Nabob's* Pleasure, that we should be brought to his Tent on Horse back, and he riding before us, conducted us to the Tent Door, and, as soon as we got from our Horses, I was conducted into his own Pavilion Chamber, where
he

he was sitting alone. The rest that came with me, were not admitted for an Hour after. It would take a great Deal of Time and Room to relate the Compliments and other Discourses that past; but I knew the Custom, not to appear before great Men with an empty Hand. I desired Leave to lay a little Present at his Feet, which he permitted. It consisted of a Looking-glass of about five Pounds in Value, a Gun, and a pair of Pistols well gilded, a Sabre Blade and Dagger-blade gilded, and a Glass Pipe for his Tobacco, and an embroider'd Standish for it to stand in. He then sent for all who had accompanied me into the Room, and shewed the Present I had made him, magnifying every Piece of it; and after some Encomiums on my Valour and Generosity, told me, that I was a free Denison of *Tatta*, with the Addition of an Indulgence of being free of all Custom and Tax on all Goods that I had brought or should export, and that whoever bought any Part of my Cargo, and did not pay according to the Agreement made for Payment, I should not be liable to seek Justice at the *Cadjee's* Court, but to imprison my Debtors, and if that would not persuade them to give Satisfaction, he would sell their Wives, Children or nearest Relations to make good their Debt. This Privilege did me singular Service when the Term of Payments came, and was obliged to try the Experiment of imprisoning. After three Hours Conversation, we took Leave to go, and he dismissed us with much Civility, and told me, that when he returned from that Expedition, he would repay my Visit at my Lodgings; but in three Months that I staid, he did not return, but often sent to enquire after my Welfare, and how my Affairs stood.

IN travelling from *Dungham* towards *Tatta*, about four Miles short of the City, on smooth rising Ground, there are forty two fine large Tombs, which, from the Plain, appeared to be a small Town. They are the Burying-places of some of the Kings of *Sindy*, when that Country was governed by its own Kings. I went into the largest, which is built in the Form of a Cupola, and in the Middle of it, stood a Coffin-tomb, about three Foot high, and seven Foot long, with some others of a lesser Size. The Materials of the Cupola were yellow, green and red Porphyry

phyry, finely polished, and the Stones set in regular Order, Chequer-ways, which Variegation strikes the Eye with wonderful Pleasure. The Tomb is about ten Yards high, and seven in Diameter. I was told, that it was the Burying-place of the last King of that Country, who was robbed of his Sovereignty by *Jehan Guire*, Gand-father to the famous *Aurenzeb*, in the Beginning of the seventeenth Century, who, after he had him Prisoner, bid him ask what Favours he would desire for himself and Children, and they should be granted. He nobly replied, That all the Favour he begg'd, was, that himself, his Queen, and their Children, might be buried in that Tomb, which, in Times of Prosperity, he had built for that Purpose, and had cost him two Lack of Rupees, or twenty-five thousand Pound *Sterl.* which Request his Conqueror could not well refuse.

TATTA City stands about two Miles from the River *Indus*, in a spacious Plain, and they have Canals cut from the River, that bring Water to the City, and some for the Use of their Gardens. The King's Gardens were in pretty good Condition in the Year 1699, and were well stored with excellent Fruits and Flowers, particularly the most delicious Pomegranates that ever I tasted.

For three Years before I came there, no Rain had fallen, which caused a severe Plague to affect the Town and circumjacent Country, to such a Degree, that, in the City only, above eighty thousand died of it, that manufactured Cotton and Silk, and above one Half of the City was deserted and left empty. And that was one Reason why the *Nabob* had placed his Camp in that Place that I went to visit him at. The Figure of the Camp was a regular Tetragon, and ditched about with a Trench about three Yards broad, and two deep. The Ground taken out of the Ditch, was thrown upon the Inside, about four Foot high, and regularly built like a Parapet. It had four Gates, one in the Middle of each Curtain, and a straight Street from the opposite Gates, which made an exact cross in Figure, and the *Nabob's* Tent was pitch'd in the Middle of the Cross. Each Side of the Tetragon was about six or seven hundred Paces in Length, and the Ditches could be filled with Water from the *Indus*, and
let

let out at Pleasure, into a large Marish about two Miles off the Camp.

THE River *Indus* is navigable for their Vessels, as high as *Cashmere*, and one Branch runs up to *Cabul* to the Westward, and others to *Penjeb*, *Labore*, *Multan*, *Buckor*, and other large Provinces and Cities to the Eastward, and all share the Benefits of the inland Navigation.

THIS Country abounds richly in Wheat, Rice and Legumen, and Provender for Horses and Cattle; and they never know the Misery of Famine, for the *Indus* overflows all the low Grounds in the Months of *April*, *May* and *June*, and when the Floods go off, they leave a fat Slime on the Face of the Ground, which they till easily before it dries, and being sown and harrow'd, never fails of bringing forth a plentiful Crop.

THE other Productions of this and the inland Country, are Saltpeter, Sal-armoniack, Borax, Opoponax, Asafoetida, Goat Bezoar, *Lapis tutie* and *Lapis lasuli*, and raw Silk, but not fine.

THEY manufacture in wrought Silks, which they call *Jemawaars*, in Cotton and Silk, called *Cuttenees*, and in Silk mixt with *Carmania* Wooll, called *Culbuleys*, in Calicoes coarse and fine, sheer and close wrought. Their Cloth called *Furries*, is very fine and soft, and lasts beyond any other Cotton Cloth that I have used. They make Chints very fine and cheap, and Coverlets for Beds very beautiful. They make fine Cabinets, both lack'd and inlaid with Ivory. And the best Bows and Arrows in the World, are made at *Multan*, of Buffalos Horns. They lack wooden Dishes and Tables, but not so well as in *China*. The Lack is clear enough, but always clammy, they export great Quantities of Butter, which they gently melt, and put up in Jars, called *Duppas*, made of the Hides of Cattle, almost in the Figure of a Globe, with a Neck and Mouth on one Side. They are made of all Sizes, from those that contain three hundred and twenty Pounds, to those of Five; and that Butter keeps, without Salt, the whole Year round, but, as it grows old, it becomes rank.

THE Wood *Ligna dulcis* grows only in this Country. It is rather a Weed than a Wood, and nothing of it is
P useful

useful but the Root, called *Putchock*, or, *Radix dulcis*. I never heard it is used in Physick, but is a good Ingredient in the Composition of Perfumes. There are great Quantities exported for *Surat*, and from thence to *China*, where it generally bears a good Price; for being all Idolaters, and burning Incense before their Images, this Root beaten into fine Powder, and an Incense-pot laid over smoothly with Ashes, and a Furrow made in the Ashes, about a Quarter of an Inch broad, and as much in Depth, done very artificially into a great Length, the Powder is put into that Furrow, and fired, and it will burn a long Time like a Match, sending forth a fine Smoke, whose Smell is very grateful, the Powder having the good Qualities of maintaining and delaying the Fire.

THE Religion, by Law established, is *Mahometan*; but there are ten *Gentows* or *Pagans* for one *Mussulman*. But the City of *Tatta* is famous for Learning in Theology, Philology and Politicks, and they have above four hundred Colleges for training up Youth in those Parts of Learning.

THE *Gentows* have full Toleration for their Religion, and keep their Fasts and Feasts as in former Times, when the Sovereignty was in *Pagan* Princes Hands. They burn their dead, but the Wives are restrained from burning with the Corpse of their Husbands. There is a very great Consumption of Elephants Teeth, for 'tis the Fashion for Ladies to wear Rings of Ivory from their Arm-pits to their Elbows, and from their Elbows to their Wrists, of both Arms; and when they die, all those Ornaments are burnt along with them.

THE River of *Sindy* would be hard to be found, were it not for the Tomb of a *Mahometan* Saint, who has an high Tower built over him, called *Sindy* Tower. It is always kept white to serve as a Land-mark. The Bar, going into the River, is narrow, and has not above two Fathoms and an Half, on Spring-tides: But this is only a small Branch of *Indus*, which Appellation is now lost in this Country that it so plentifully waters, and is called *Dwellee*, or seven Mouths; but it disembogues itself into the Sea thro' many more.

C H A P. XIV.

Gives an Account of the ancient Kingdom of Guzerat, now a Province annexed to the Mogul's Dominions; its Situations, Product, Manners and Religion; with some Account of the Pirates that inhabit Part of it, and some Observations on Diu, a Portuguese City on an Island appertaining to Guzerat.

THE next maritime Country to *Sindy*, is *Guzerat*. The *Indus* makes it an Island, by a Branch that runs into the Sea at the City of *Cambaya*. This Province, tho' Vassals to the *Mogul*, yet continue in their old Religion of *Paganism*, and, for the most Part, drive the old Trade of thieving and pirating, for they plunder all whom they can overcome, on both Elements: Nor can the *Mogul* restrain them, for their Country is secure from the Marches of Armies into it, by reason of the many Inlets of the Sea that overflow the low Grounds, and make it so soft and muddy, that there is no travelling but by little Boats, in many Places.

THE first Town on the South Side of *Indus*, is *Cutch-naggen*. It admits of some Trade, and produces Cotton, Corn, coarse Cloth and *Chonk*, a Shell-fish in Shape of a Perriwinkle, but as large about as a Man's Arm above the Elbow. In *Bengal* they are saw'd into Rings for Ornaments to Womens Arms, as those of *Sindy* wear Ivory Rings. They are in Fashion in many Countries in *India*. The Province and Town of *Cutch-naggen* are governed by a Queen, who is very formidable to her neighbouring States. The Reasons they give for choosing Governesses, are, that they'll be better advised by their Council than Men, who, by too large a Share of Power and Honour placed on them, become obstinate in their Opinions, and insolent in their Behaviour: But Ladies are esteemed complaisant and gentle.

THE next Province in *Cutch-naggen*, is *Sargania*, which is also governed by a Princess, for the above Reasons. Their Sea-port is called *Baet*, very commodious and secure. They admit of no Trade, but practise Piracy.

They give Protection to all Criminals, who deserve Punishment from the Hand of Justice. All Villains in the Countries about flock thither, and become honest Robbers, so that they are a Medley of Criminals, who flee their Country for Fear of condign Punishment due to their Crimes. This Province produces Cotton and Corn, as all the Kingdom of *Guzerat* does; but they admit of no Trade in their Country, as I observed before, for Fear of being civilized by Example. I had several Skirmishes with them.

IN the Year 1685, a small Ship of theirs, that mounted eight Guns, and well mann'd, was cruising on the Coast of *India*, between *Surat* and *Bombay*, and the *Phoenix*, an *English* Man of War of forty-two Guns, was bound for *Surat*. The *Sanganian* made towards her, and engaged her, but would fain have been gone again when they found their Mistake; but that was impossible. The *Phoenix* sent her Boats, well mann'd, to try if they could make them yield, in order to save their Lives; but they scorned Quarter, and killed and wounded many of the *English*; so that Captain *Tyrrel*, who commanded the *Phoenix*, was forced to run his lower Teer out, and sink them: And, after their Ship was sunk, and the Miscreants set a swimming, yet most of them refused Quarter, and only about seventy were taken alive.

IN the Year 1717, they attackt a Ship called the *Morning Star* in her Passage between *Gombroon* and *Surat*. She was richly laden, which they were apprised of, and two Squadrons were fitted out from two different Ports, to way-lay her, and accordingly she fell in with eight Sail of those Pirates. One was a large Ship of near five hundred Tuns, and three others were Ships between two and three hundred Tuns, and the other four were *Grabs*, or Gallies, and *Sheybars*, or half Gallies. They reckoned in all there were above two thousand Men in their Fleet, and the *Morning Star* but seventeen fighting Men, who were resolved to trust Providence, and fight for their Lives, Liberty and Estate. The first Attack was by the greatest Ship alone, but was soon obliged to sheer off again, with the Loss of some Men, and the Captain of the *Morning Star* was wounded in the Thigh, by a Lance darted at him,
that

that pierced his Thigh through and through. The Pirates were not discouraged by this first Repulse, but joined their Forces and Counfels together, and, after a Day's Respite and Consultation, they attack'd the *Morning Star* a second Time, the two largest Ships boarding, one on her Bow, and another on her Quarter, and three more boarded them two, and entred their Men over them. The Combat was warm for above four Hours, and the *Morning Star* had seven killed, and as many wounded; but kind Providence assisted her. Whilst she was on Fire in three Places, and had burnt through her Poop and half Deck, she was disengaged of them, and left five of the largest so entangled with one another, that they could not pursue her. So she pursued her Voyage to *Surat*, but having no Surgeon on board, she called at *Bombay*, to get her wounded Men dress'd and cured. In the Time of the Combat, while the Pirates were on board of the *Morning Star*, twenty one *Indian* Seamen went on board of them, and twenty six Merchants had gone to them, to try if they could persuade them to take a Sum, and not put it on the Hazard of a Battle. All those they detained, and carried along with them, and made them pay above six thousand Pounds for their Ransom, who gave an Account afterwards of great Slaughter done on the Pirates. And the Commodore lost his Head as soon as he landed, for letting so rich a Prize go out of his Hands.

In the Year 1698, one Captain *Lavender*, in the Ship *Thomas*, bound from *Surat* to *Mocha*, encountered four Sail of those Freebooters, and fought them bravely; but they burnt the Ship and all her Crew, because he would not yield. They are very cruel to those they can master, if they make Resistance; but to those that yield without fighting, they are pretty civil.

THE next Sea-port Town to *Baet*, is *Figat*. It stands on a Point of low Land, called Cape *Figat*. The City makes a good Figure from the Sea, shewing four or five high Steeples. It is the Seat of a *Fouzdaar* or Governor, for the *Mogul*. It is a Place of no Trade, and consequently little known to Strangers.

THE next maritime Town is *Mangaroul*. It admits of Trade, and affords coarse Calicoes white and died, Wheat,

Pulse and Butter for Export, and has a Market for Pepper, Sugar and Betlenut. It is inhabited by *Banyans*; and wild Deer, Antelopes, and Peacocks are so familiar, that they come into the very Houses without Fear.

THE next Place is *Poremāin*, a pretty large Town on the Sea-shore, and admits of Trade, producing the same Commodities as *Mangaroul*, and its Inhabitants are of the same Religion; but both Towns are obliged to keep *Rasspouts* to protect them from the Insults of the *Sanganiars*.

THOSE *Rasspouts* are Natives of *Guzerat*, and are all Gentlemen of the Sword, and are well trained in the Art of killing. They, like the *Switz*, employ their Swords in the Service of those who give them best Pay. They seldom give or take Quarter, and when they go on an Expedition, they carry their Wives and Children in Carts and Wagons along with them, and if they meet with a Repulse, their Wives will never suffer Cohabitation till they can regain their lost Honour by some noble Exploit.

Diu is the next Port, and is the southermost Land on *Guzerat*. It is a small Island of three Miles long, and two broad, belonging to the Crown of *Portugal*. The City is pretty large, and fortified by an high Stone Wall, with Bastions at convenient Distances, well furnished with Cannon to flank it, and a deep Mote hewn out of an hard Rock, to defend it on the Land Side, which is about one third Part of the City. The other Parts are fortified by Nature, having the Ocean thick set with dangerous Rocks and high Cliffs, who forbid any Approaches on that Side, and a rapid deep River, that affords a good Harbour, on the North-east Side. The Harbour, is secured by two Castles, one large, that can bring above one hundred large Cannon to bear on the Mouth of the Harbour, to forbid Shipping Entrance without Leave. The other is but small, and is built irregularly on a Rock in the Middle of the River, and Channels for Shipping to pass by it, within ten Yards of its Wall. It is made use of for a Magazine for Powder and other warlike Stores.

It is one of the best built Cities, and best fortified by Nature and Art, that ever I saw in *India*, and its stately Buildings of free Stone and Marble, are sufficient Witnesses

nesses of its ancient Grandeur and Opulency; but at present not above one fourth of the City is inhabited. It contains five or six fine Churches, which are great Ornaments to the City, which stands on a rising Ground of an easy Ascent from the great Castle; and the Churches, being built wide from one another, and standing gradually higher than one another, make the *Visto* from the Sea admirably pleasant, by shewing all their beautiful Fronts that Way. And within they are well decorated with Images and Paintings.

THERE is a Tradition, that the *Portuguese* circumvented the King of *Guzerat*, as *Dido* did the *Africans*, when they gave her Leave to build *Carthage*, by desiring no more Ground to build their Cities than could be circumscribed in an Ox's Hide, which having obtained, they cut it into a fine Thong of a great Length, and over-reach'd their Donors in the Measure of the Ground.

AFTER the City was built and fortified, it drew all the Trade from the King's Towns of Commerce thither, which made him heartily repent his Generosity; and he made Proposals to the *Portuguese* to reimburse all the Charge and Expence they had been at, if they would restore that Island again, but he could never persuade them to that Bargain, and since fair Means would not do, he designed to try what might be obtained by Force, wherefore he raised a great Army, and besieged it, but was soon forced to draw off again with Loss, for the *Portuguese* large Cannon from their Walls disturbed and distressed his Camp so, that he found but little Safety for himself, and much less for his Host.

THIS City came to such an Height of Trade and Riches in the sixteenth Century, that it drew a very potent Enemy from the *Red Sea*; for, about the Year 1540, the *Turks*, designing to have a Footing in *India*, cast their Eyes on *Diu*, as being conveniently situated, and well fortified for their Purpose, so they came in a Fleet of Gallies and Transports twenty five thousand strong, from *Aden*, and landed on the West End of the Island, and laid Siege to the City; but the *Portuguese* sent a Reinforcement from *Goa*, of twenty Sail, some of which were large Ships or Galleons, who carried heavy Metal, with which they

battered the *Turkish* Fleet, being small Vessels, that many *Turks* were sunk, and the Bashaw was forced to make off with great Loss and Shame, and leave their battering Artillery to the *Portuguese*, for which Misfortune and Disgrace, he lost his Head when he returned to *Aden*.

BUT about the Year 1670, the *Muskat Arabs* had better Fortune, for they came with a Fleet of Trankies, and took an Opportunity to land in the Night, on the West End of the Island, without being discovered, and march'd silently close up to the Town, and, at Break of Day, when the Gates were opened, they entered without Resistance. The Alarm was soon spread over the Town, and happy was he who got first to the Castle Gates, but those who had heavy Heels were sacrificed to the Enemies Fury, who spared none, so in a Moment that fair rich City and Churches were left to the Mercy of the *Arabs*, who, for three Days, loaded their Vessels with rich Plunder.

BUT the *Arabs*, like a Parcel of unsanctified Rogues, made sad Havock on the Churches Trumpery, for, besides robbing them of all the sanctified Plate and Cash, they did not leave one Gold or Silver Image behind them, but carried all into Captivity, from whence they never returned.

HOWEVER, before the *Arabs* had done plundering, they became secure and negligent, which the Governor having Notice of, proclaimed Freedom to all Slaves who would venture to sally out on the Enemy. Accordingly about four thousand Soldiers and Slaves made a Sally with Success, killing above one thousand *Arabs*, and made the rest flee from the Town, the Assailants losing but very few; and by that one Sally the Town was regained. The City still feels the dismal Effects of the Lois it then received. At present there are not above two hundred *Portuguese* both in the Castle and City. The rest of its Inhabitants are *Banyans*, of all Sorts. There may be about forty thousand, but few of them of Fortune or Figure, because the Insolence of the *Portuguese* makes it unsafe for money'd Strangers to dwell among them. The King of *Portugal* has about twelve thousand Pounds *per Annum*, of Poll Money paid into his Treasury, and the Customs and Land-tax may come to about six thousand Pounds more :

But

But if that Island were in the Hands of some industrious *European* Nation, it would be the best Mart Town on the Coast of *India*, for the River *Indus* being near Neighbours, both by *Sindy* and *Cambay*, those Commodities might be imported and exported to Advantage. And that Commerce has raised *Surat*.

ALL the Country between *Diu* and *Dand Point*, which is about thirty Leagues along Shore, admits of no Traffick, being inhabited by Freebooters, called *Warrels*, and often associate with the *Sangamans*, in exercising Piracies and Depredations. They have no Cities, and their Villages are small. The best of them stands about sixty Miles to the Eastward of *Diu*, and is called *Chance*. It is built about a League within the Mouth of a River, which has a small Island lying athwart it, about two Miles into the Sea. The Island has good Springs of fresh Water, but no Inhabitants. In the Year 1716, the *English* went to burn that Village, and their pirating Vessels, but were unsuccessful in their Undertaking. The *Warrels* occupy all the Sea-coast as high as *Goga*, which lies about twelve Leagues within the Gulf of *Cambay*. And the Coast, from *Dand Point* to *Goga*, is very dangerous, being thick set with Rocks and Sand Banks; and a rapid Tide runs amongst them of six or eight Miles in an Hour, in a Chanel that is twenty Fathoms Deep in some Places, which causes Anchoring to be dangerous also.

Goga is a pretty large Town, and has had some Mud Wall Fortifications, which still defend them from the Insults of their Neighbours the *Coulies*, who inhabit the North-east Side of *Guzerat*, and are as great Thieves by Land as their Brethren the *Warrels* and *Sanganians* are by Sea: Nor is there any Land Army that can come into their Country to chastise them, for there are so many Rivulets made by *Indus* and the Sea, that are so soft and muddy at the Bottom, that there is neither Passage for Men nor Horse to penetrate their Country, and their Towns are invironed with such thick Hedges of green *Bamboos*, which are not to be burned in a short Time, and the People so numerous and valiant, that it would be an hard Task to civilize them.

Goga has some Trade, admitting Strangers to a free Commerce in such Merchandize as are fit to be imported or exported to or from *Guzerat*. It has the Conveniency of an Harbour for the largest Ships, tho' they lie dry on soft Mud, at low Water; but the Tides rising four or five Fathoms perpendicular, afford Water enough at high Water. The Town is governed by an Officer from the *Mogul*, who commands about two hundred Men, who are kept there for a Guard to it.

C H A P. XV.

Gives an Account of the Cities of Cambay, Baroach and Surat; with several Occurrences that happened to them; and of the Sea-coast from Damaan to Bombay.

CAMBAY, or, as the Natives call it, *Cambaut*, about twelve Leagues from *Goga*, in the Bottom of the Gulf of *Cambay*, on a small River, that is sent by the Overflowing of the *Indus* into that Gulf or Bay, is a large City, with high Walls, and was formerly the Metropolis of a Kingdom that bore the City's Name; but *Eckbar*, great Grandfather to *Aurengzeb*, sent his Son, *Jehan Guire*, with a great Army in the sixteenth Century, and conquered it, and annex'd it to the Empire of the *Great Mogul*.

It is still a Place of good Trade, tho' not half inhabited, and it contributes very much to the Wealth and Grandeur of *Surat*, to which it is subordinate; and its Vicinity to *Amadabant*, from whence it is about one hundred and fifty Miles distant, makes it share the Advantages of that great City, which, in Magnitude and Wealth, is little inferior to the best Towns in *Europe*. What it exports by Sea, comes most to *Cambay*, and carried by the *Surat* Shipping all over *India*, except what *European* Ships carry for *Europe*.

THE Product and Manufactories of *Cambay* are inferior to few Towns in *India*. It abounds in Grain and Cattle, Cotton and Silk. The Cornelian and Agate Stones are found

found in its Rivers, and no where else in the World. Of Cornelian they make Rings, and Stones for Signets, and of the Agate, Cabinets, intire Stone except the Lids. I have seen some of fourteen or fifteen Inches long, and eight or nine deep, valued at thirty or forty Pounds *Sterl.* They also make Bowls of several Sizes of Agate, and Spoons, and Handles of Swords, Daggers and Knives, and Buttons, and Stones to set in Snuff-boxes, of great Value.

THEY embroider the best of any People in *India*, and perhaps in the World. Their fine Quilts were formerly carried to *Europe*. I have seen some worth forty Pound *Sterl.* and some Cornelian Rings, above double their Weight in Gold. The *Patanners* are their near Neighbours. They are mostly Horsemen, and bold Fellows, who borrow round Sums from the City, by Way of Compulsion, and the *Rasspouts* and *Coulies* make Inroads into this Province, and plunder even to the Gates of the City, and sometimes have surpris'd, and plundered the City itself, for which Neglect the Governors Heads answered.

In the Year 1716, they were very bold and presumptuous, so that there was a Stop put to all the Commerce of *Amadabant* and *Cambay*. The Governor of *Surat* got an Army of twenty thousand to chastise and restrain them; but they laid so many Ambuscades, that, in two Months, the Army was reduced to less than half of the Number, and the rest were obliged to get Home, with sorrowful Hearts, to *Surat*.

THE next Town of Note for Commerce, is *Baroach*, a walled Town, standing on a rising Ground, on the Banks of the River *Nerdaba*. Formerly it was a Place of great Trade, but in *Aurengzebs* Wars with his Brothers, about the Year 1660, this Town held out a great while against his Army. That Season proving a dry one, *Aurengzebs* Folks suffered much for Want of fresh Water and Provisions, but at last he took it, and put all to the Sword that had borne Arms against him, and raised Part of the Walls, and pronounced a Curse on them that should repair them again. But the *Sevajees* Incursions made him order the Rebuilding them himself, and he christened it *Suckabant*, or the *dry City*; but that new Name could not efface

efface the old one, which it yet retains. It is now inhabited by Weavers, and such Mechanicks as manufacture Cotton Cloth. And the *Baroach* Baftas are famous throughout all *India*, the Country producing the beft Cotton in the World. This Town is alfo subordinate to *Surat*; and formerly the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* had Factories fettled there, but of late have withdrawn them.

Surat is the next Sea-port. It was built about the Year 1660, on the Banks of the River *Tapta* or *Tappee*, which being difcommoded with Banks of Sand at *Rannier*, the then Mart Town on this River, the *Engliſh* removed about two Miles farther down the River, on the oppoſite Side near a Caſtle which had been built many Years before, to ſecure the Trade from the Inſults of the *Malabar* Pirates, who uſed to lord it over all the Sea-coaſt between Cape *Comerin* and *Cambay*. In a little Time after the *Engliſh* had fettled there, others followed their Example, ſo that in a few Years it became a large Town, but without Walls, and ſo it continued till about the aforeſaid Year, that *Rajah Sevajee*, who had never ſubmitted to the *Mogul's* Domination, came with an Army, and plundered it, except the *European* Factories, who ſtood on their Guard. Them he complimented with the Proffer of his Friendſhip, becauſe perhaps he apprehended, that he could not plunder them without Bloodſhed and Loſs of Time. However he carried away a very great Booty, which made the Inhabitants petition *Aurengzeb* to ſecure them for the future, by a Wall round their Town, which Favour he granted, enclosing about four Miles to build their City in; but Trade increaſing, the Town was too ſmall within the Walls to contain the People that came about Commerce, wherefore ſeveral large Suburbs were added to the City for the Convenience of Mechanicks. The Wall was built of Brick, about eight Yards high, with round Baſtions, two hundred Paces diſtant from one another, and each had five or fix Cannon mounted on them. And the rich Men of the Town built many Summer-houſes in the Fields, and planted Gardens about them, to ſolace themſelves and Families in the Heats, which are pretty violent in *April*, *May* and *June*.

THE City flourished in Trade till the Year 1689, that the *English* Company disturbed its Tranquillity by an unjust War they made on *Surat*, but pretended it was not with the *Mogul*, who had given them many Indulgences, which War I'll remark when I treat of *Bombay*, but that War was ended in the Year 1689, neither to the Profit nor Honour of that *East-India* Company. In the Year 1695, Captain *Every* a Pirate disturbed the Trade and Tranquillity of the Town with four small Ships, taking one of the *Mogul's* Ships, with a great Booty in Silver and Gold, and a *Mahometan* Lady, as I observed before on the Commerce of the *Red-Sea* and the Island of *Madagascar*. And since that Time this City has felt many Convulsions in its Trade.

In the Year 1705, when *Aurengzeb* began to be crazy with old Age, the circumjacent *Rajahs*, with an united Force of fourscore Thousand Horse, came and besieged *Surat*, and plundered all the Villages in the plain Country; but having no Artillery, they could do but little Harm to the City itself, besides straitning it a little for Provisions, but the City having their River and Sea open, that Difficulty was removed by plentiful Supplies brought them from *Guzerat*.

THESE Freebooters go under the general Appellation of *Gennims*, but they are composed of the aforementioned *Warrels*, *Coulies*, *Rasspouts*, *Patanners* and *Gracias*. These *Gracias* were formerly the landed Men of this Country, and upon their Submission to *Echar*, the then Emperor of *Mogul*, articted to have the Ground Rents paid to them and their Posterity; but the *Nabobs* often defraud them, and they, to put the Governors of Towns and Villages in Mind of the Contract, come in great Numbers, and plunder, or lay them under Contribution.

BUT whilst this rabble Army lay before the Town, the Citizens built Sconces in convenient Places, about half a Mile without the Wall, to protect the Suburbs, and all those Sconces had Cannon mounted on them, which kept the *Gennims* at a Distance; and, after the Sconces were finished, they built a good high Wall between each Sconce that encompassed the whole Suburbs, which Wall is about five Miles in Length from the Bank of the River above
the

the Town, to that Part that terminates below the Town; and all the Inclosure is well inhabited. The Inhabitants are computed at two hundred thousand Souls, and amongst them are many very rich, both *Mabometans* and *Gentiles*. *Abdul Gafour*, a *Mabometan* that I was acquainted with, drove a Trade equal to the *Engliff East-India* Company, for I have known him fit out in a Year, above twenty Sail of Ships, between three hundred and eight hundred Tuns, and none of them had less of his own Stock than ten thousand Pounds, and some of them had twenty-five thousand; and, after that foreign Stock was sent away, he behaved to have as much more of an inland Stock for the following Year's Market. When he died, he left his Estate to two Grandsons, his own Son, who was his Child, dying before him. But the Court had a Fling at them, and got above a Million *Sterl.* of their Estate.

THE Trade of *Surat* was, and still is very considerable, for, from the Year 1690, to 1605, the Revenues arising from the Custom house, Land Rents and Poll Money, *communibus annis*, came to one Million three hundred thousand Rupees, which is *Sterl.* one hundred sixty two thousand five hundred Pound. And the Revenue of *Amadabant* is generally reckoned ten Times as much as *Surat*. The Customs in the King's Books, are but two *per Cent.* for *Mabometans*, and five *per Cent.* for *Gentiles*. The Land pays three Quarters of its Product in Corn, and the Poll about a Crown an Head; but the Rich generally assist the Poor, some paying for ten, some for a hundred, and some for a thousand. This Account I had from an Officer, called the *Vaccanaviece*, who is obliged yearly to take in the Accounts of the Collections, and send them to Court.. Besides the current News that monthly occur in his District, he sends to the Vizier by Post.

THE Post in the *Mogul's* Dominions goes very swift, for at every Caravanfery, which are built on the high-roads, about ten Miles distant from one another, Men, very swift of Foot, are kept ready. The Letters are inclosed in a gilded Box, which he that carries holds over his Head when he comes near the Seray, and giving Notice of his Arrival; another takes it, and runs to the next, and so on, Night and Day, at five or six Miles in an Hour,
till

till it is carried where directed to, so that in eight Days, Advices are brought from the farthest Parts of that large Empire, to Court. And those Couriers are called *Dog Chouckies*.

In the City of *Surat* there are as many different Religions as in *Amsterdam*. That by Law establihed, is *Mahometan*, of *Hali's* Sect, and they are called *Moors*. Then there are *Persians* and *Turks*, and some called *Musey*, who observe *Moses's* Law as well as the *Alcoran*, and another Sect called *Molacks* who observe some ancient *Heathenish* Customs and Feasts; but all the others, reckon them *Hereticks*. They have a yearly Feast, but the Time of its Celebration is only known to themselves, wherein, after much Mirth and Jollity, each Sex withdraw to a Room. The Women take each an Handkerchief, (or some such Sign that may be again known) and go in the Dark promiscuously among the Men, and, without speaking, lie down together on Mats or Carpets spread for that Purpose, and enjoy one another's Company some Hours, then withdraw to their own Room, leaving their Signals with their Bedfellows who know whom they have been caressed by; but very often they find incestuous Embraces, which at that Feast are only lawful. *Aurengzeb* made it Death to be found at those Meetings, yet that execrable Rite is still continued and practised. And *Abdul Gafour*, the rich Merchant aforementioned, was a Disciple of that Sect

THE *Banyans* are most numerous in this City, and are either Merchants, Bankers, Brokers or Pen-men, as Accountants, Collectors and Surveyors, but few or none Handy-crafts, except Taylors and Barbers. They have eighty five different Sects among them, that do not eat with one another. The greatest Part of the eastern Religion is in Forms of Worship, and abstaining from certain Meats; and their Priests differ as much in those Points, and some others of Doctrine, as *Papists* and *Protestants* do, for the *Brabamans* or *Bramanies* are the Priests of the major Part of those Sects, who gull the People when any are dangerously sick, by persuading them to leave Legacies to their Church, as some pious *Christians* do among us, and when they obtain a Legacy, they gratefully acknowledge

lege the Receipt of it, by putting a Scroll of Paper into the dead Person's Hand, containing an Account of the Legacy, with a Bill at the Bottom, to receive ten Times the Value in the other World, from some eminent Saint that deals in such Bills of Exchange in Paradise. They have Patriarchs and Bishops to superintend the inferior Clergy, who, by Virtue of a divine Right, live splendidly and luxuriously on the Oblations of the People.

THE other Sects are taught by the *Talapoins*, who declaim against that *papistical* Polity, and preach up Morality to be the best Guide to human Life, and affirm, that a good Life in this World, can only recommend us in the next, to have our Souls transmigrated into the Body of some innocent Beast, or to rest in Paradise.

THEIR Priests indeed shew much Self-denial, for they live on Alms, and their *Pontificalia* is a white Sheet that covers their Bodies, from the Shoulders downwards, a black Staff about five Foot long in their Hand, and a small earthen Pot, with some powdered Saffron and Oil, to mark those on the Forehead that have received their Benediction that Day. When they go abroad, the old carries a Novice in his Company, to teach him Divinity and Morality by Example. They seldom speak in the Streets, but look gravely and demurely, and they extend their Charity even to Beasts and Birds. They suffer their Hair to grow as low as their Shoulders, and have no other Covering on their Heads, and keep their Beards shaved.

ANOTHER Sort of them are Doctors of Physick, who pretend to do great Cures by Amulets, Philtres and Prayers. They have some Skill in Simples and Minerals, which make them in great Esteem; but when their Skill in Physick produces not the promised Effects, then they persuade the Patient, that they lie under the Displeasure of some angry Deity, who must be appeased by Oblations and Penances, which they turn to good Account, by ordering the Offerings and Penance to be light; and when that Trick fails, they leave their Patients to work out their own Salvation the best Way they can.

THERE is another Sort called *Jougies*, who practise great Austerities and Mortifications. They condemn worldly Riches

Riches, and go naked, except a Bit of Cloth about their Loins; and some deny themselves even that, delighting in Nastiness and an holy Obscenity, with a great Shew of Sanctity. They never cut nor comb their Hair, and besmear their Bodies and Faces with Ashes, which makes them look more like Devils than Men. I have seen a sanctified Rascal of seven Foot high, and his Limbs well proportioned, with a large Turband of his own Hair wreathed about his Head, and his Body bedawb'd with Ashes and Water, sitting quite naked under the Shade of a Tree, with a *Pudenda* like an Ass, and an Hole bored through his Prepuce, with a large Gold Ring fixed in the Hole. This Fellow was much revered by Numbers of young married Women, who, prostrating themselves before the living *Priapus*, and taking him devoutly in their Hands, kiss'd him, whilst his bawdy Owner stroak'd their silly Heads, muttering some filthy Prayers for their Prolification.

THE Austerities of the *Jougies* are beyond Belief to those who have not been Eye-witnesses of them. Some stand on one Foot some Years, with their Arms tied to some Beam of an House, or Branch of a Tree over their Heads, and continue in that Posture, except when Nature calls for Exoneration, for others feed them whilst they stand. Their Arms in Time settle in that Posture, that ever after they become useless, and are not to be brought again into their natural Position. Some sit in the Sun-shine, with their Faces looking upwards, till they are incapable of altering the Posture of their Necks, their Gullet swelling almost as thick as their Heads; and they also take no Sustenance with their own Hands. Others clinch their Fists, and tie them in that Posture, till their Finger Nails come through the Back of their Hands. And their Fastings are as incredible. I saw a Woman of about thirty Years of Age, who made a Vow of fasting three Months, to avert some impending Calamity threatened by Heaven, that she pretended to foresee. The Governor of *Surat* being a zealous *Mahometan*, (who generally discourage *Gentilism*, and strive to detect their *Leger de main* Miracles) ordered the said Woman to be put into a Prison without Windows, without any other Sustenance

Q

than

than fair Water, and to be well guarded by *Mahometans*, to avoid Imposture. About eighty Days after she was imprisoned, I and several other *Europeans* paid her a Visit, and got the Door opened to observe her Aspect. We found her in Health, but very weak, and her Pulse beat very low. Her Keepers declared, that she had taken no Sustainance, but a very small Quantity of Water, all the while they had the Overseeing of her, nor did she ever desire any Food. She told us, that three or four Year before she had fasted sixty Days on the same Account.

YET in the Year 1721, the Governor detected a great Piece of Imposture of the *Jougies*, who paid pretty dear for their Impudence. One of those silly Zealots, who pretended to more Sanctity than his Neighbours, gave out, that he would be buried (in a Grave ten Foot deep) alive, and that he would appear at *Amadabant*, which is distant from *Surat* about two hundred Miles, within the Space of fifteen Days. The Grave was dug, and he went in, and had some Reeds placed about a Foot or two over his Head, to keep the Mould off that was to be thrown over him. There was a large Jar of Water standing under the Shade of a great Tree, about ten or twelve Yards from the Grave, where a good Number of *Jougies* had for some Time taken up their Quarters, they were Accomplices in the Imposture, and, by their pretended Sanctity, and great Interest with Heaven, had gull'd many poor People into a Belief of their Story, and many brought Presents to them. But the Governor of *Surat* ordered a Party of Soldiers to see the *Jougy* interred, and to see that no Imposture should be used about his pretended Resurrection, and to search well, that there should be no subterraneous Communication between the Grave and any Place that might be suspected above Ground, and accordingly searching narrowly, they suspected some Place about the Root of the Tree might afford a Passage, ordered the *Jougies* to remove a little out of their Way, which they did willingly, and, finding no Visto that might be suspected, they ordered the *Jougies* to remove their great Water Jar, which was near full of Water; but the *Jougies* clamoured loud against that Breach of their Privilege, in touching their Water: But their Noise made the *Mahometans* Suspicion grow

grow stronger, and the Jar was either removed or broken; and behold, where the Jar stood, they discovered a Mine that reach'd within two Foot of the Grave, which Cheat being thus detected, the angry Soldiers fell to Work with their broad Swords, to try if their Sanctity was Proof against sharp Steel, but found, by an Experiment of laying a Dozen or more dead on the Ground, and twice as many maim'd with Wounds, that they were as easily killed or wounded as other honest Folks. The poor Miracle-monger lost his Head in the Fray. That spoiled his Journey to *Amadabant*, and, which was worse, brought great Scandal on the whole Order.

I was one Day walking by the Side of a great *Tank* or Pond near *Surat*, in Company with an *Englifo* Lady, and seeing a young *Jouggy* sitting by the Tomb of a celebrated *Cutteree*, who are a Sect that bury their Dead, the Youth seemed to be very devout in Prayers; but, by the Lady's Order, I interrupted him, and, asking him why he prayed there, and to whom did he direct his Prayer, he answered that he prayed to God to make him as good a Man as he was who lay interred there. I ask'd him where God was, at which he seemed to smile, and ask'd me, where is he not? and so continued a little Space in Prayer, and, when he had done, he took some Flowers and Grain, with a little Water, and besprinkled the Tomb, and, making some decent Cravings towards the Tomb, took a formal Leave to go this Way.

THE great God, whom all adore, they call *Quedaa*; but they have many inferior Deities, and of them *Mobadow*, or, as they express it, *Muadow*, is the second in Place and Dignity. *Rama* is the third, and *Brabma* the fourth. And *Parvete* is a Goddess much venerated, and is supposed to be the Wife of *Muadow*. The inferior Deities or Saints are very numerous; but the Images of *Gunies*, *Jagarenat*, *Rustum*, and *Gopaljam* are most worshipped in their Temples, as reckoned to have most Interest with the superior Deities.

THE Marriages of the *Gentiles* in *India* are celebrated with much Pomp. They begin in the Forenoon to send a long Train of People with covered Dishes or Baskets on their Heads, with Presents from the Bridegroom to the Bride,

and, before the Present march Hautboys, Drums and Trumpets. After the Presents march some female Slaves for the Bride and Bridegroom's Use. After the Slaves comes an empty *Pallankeen* to transport the Bride from her House to her Husband's. At Night the Bride and Bridegroom are carried in State thro' the Town, with Torchlight and Musick before them, and Fireworks played off as they pass in the Streets, and the Parents of the married Couple send Presents to their Friends. They have no Choice in their Marriages, for that is left to the Parents or nearest Relations; and they are married before they can be capable either to choose or refuse, being often married at six or seven Years of Age; but they do not cohabit before the Bride be about twelve, and the Bridegroom sixteen. As to their Burials, some burn and some interr; but Children under four Years of Age are buried. And the Wives are not permitted to burn with their Husbands; but, when once she is a Widow, she never can marry again, but lives to bewail her Widowhood, and perhaps her Virginity, all her Days.

THEY marry but one Wife, except in Cases of Barrenness or Adultery, tho' there are no Laws against Polygamy. They abhor Buggery and Sodomy, and the *Mahometans* for that Account, because they use them. They eat twice a Day, but the Husband and Wife eat separate; and they wash before and after Meat. And the *Europeans* there follow that cleanly Custom.

THE *Parsees* are numerous about *Surat* and the adjacent Countries. They are a Remnant of the ancient *Persians*, who rather choose to be banish'd their Country than change their Religion; for in the seventh Century of the *Christian Era*, when *Mahometism* over-ran *Persia*, the Spirit of Persecution came there, and some four or five hundred Families were put on board of Shipping, and sent to Sea, without Compass or Pilot; and they, steering their Course Eastward (in the Southwest Monsoons) from *Jasques*, in about twenty Days, fell in with the Coast of *India* in the Night, and the first Thing they saw was a Fire ashore, which the Exiles steered towards, and accidentally steered into the River of *Nunfaree*, about seven Leagues to the Southward of *Surat*, and were welcomed to Land
by

by the Crowing of a Cock. *Zoroaster* was their Founder, and taught them to adore the Sun and Fire, that produced and maintained all sublunary Beings. Their seeing the Fire on their approaching the Land, confirmed their Belief, in the Opinion that Adoration was due to it, for which Reason they never extinguish Fire by its opposite Element Water; and even if their Houses are a burning, they'll use no Water to quench the Flames, but throw Earth or Dust to put it out. And because the Cock saluted them first, after they had past through a dangerous Sea, and were secure in a River, they will neither kill, nor eat the Flesh of Cock.

WHEN they came ashore, the charitable *Indians* flock'd about them, and there being some among them that could speak some *Indian* Languages, related what hard Usage they had met with in their own Country, and that Providence having directed them to the *Indian* Country, they begged Leave to settle among them, and by their Behaviour they would shew their Gratitude for relieving distressed Strangers, who were then become their Supplicants. The generous *Indians* granted their Request, and allowed them Land to manure, and Seed to sow the Ground, upon the same Conditions and Tenure they enjoyed their own Farms: And there they settled first, and remain in and about that Country to this Day. They never marry into foreign Families, which makes them retain their native fair Complexion, little inferior to us *Europeans*, only their often Washing and Anointing, which is a Part of the Exercises of Religion, takes away the beautiful fresh Ruddiness that adorns ours. Their Rites of Marriage are performed like the other *Gentiles*, in Ostentation and Expence; but their Burials are quite different, for they enclose a small Piece of Ground with a Wall about four Yards high, and place several Benches for the Corps to sit on, that the four Elements may each have a Share of the Matter their Bodies are composed of. The Sun or Fire exhales the putrid *Effluvias*. The Water or Rain carries the putrified Flesh and the Bones to the Earth, that gives Burial to them, and the voracious Fowls carry what they can pick into the Air in their Maws. They watch the Corps all Day, till one of the Eyes is pick'd out. If the Bird begins with the

right Eye, they rejoice and feast, but if with the left Eye, they mourn and lament for the ill Fortune of the De-funct's Soul, for they attribute future Happiness to the right Eye, and Misery to the left. They build these Charnel Places far from any Town or Village, lest the Stink should annoy them.

THEY are very industrious and diligent in their Vocation, and are bred to Trades and manuring Ground. They are good Carpenters or Ship-builders, exquisite in the Weaver's Trade and Embroidery, which may be seen in the rich *Atlasses*, *Bottadaars* and *Jemewaars* made by them, as well as fine *Baroach* and *Nunsaree Bastas* that come from their Manufactories. They work well in Ivory and Agate, and are excellent Cabinet-makers. They distil strong Waters, but that they do clandestinely, because that Trade is prohibited by the Government they live under; yet some of them get a good Livelihood by it.

THE Fields about *Surat* are all plain, and the Ground very fertil towards the Country, but, towards the Sea, it is sandy and steril. They have excellent Beef, Mutton and Fowl daily exposed to Sale in the City, reasonably cheap. Beef is about three Farthings a Pound, when the Bones are kept with the Flesh, and about a Penny with the Bones out. Mutton is about three half Pence, and good large Fowls at seven Pence half Penny apiece. They have some good Fish, not dear, and Pigeons at a Penny apiece, and live Hares at four Pence apiece.

THEY have Plenty of Wheat, as good as any in *Europe*, and some Pease, and *French* Beans; but neither Oats nor Barley. They have several Species of Legumen; but those of *Doll* are most in Use, for some Doll and Rice being mingled together and boiled, make Kitcheree, the common Food of the Country. They eat it with Butter and *Atchar* or Salt-fish. 'Tis a pleasant nourishing Food, and that which the famous *Aurengzeb* most delighted to eat. They have also Store of wild Fowl; but who have a Mind to eat of them, must shoot them. Flamingoes are large, and good Meat. The Paddy-bird is also good in their Season, and the Corn-bird is excellent in theirs. They have good Partridge, but bad Pheasants. Their wild

wild Geese, Duck and Teal are plenty and good; and several Sorts of Turtledoves, both beautiful and well tasted. They have few Deer, but great Plenty of Antelopes in their Forests. There are no fine Buildings in the City, but many large Houses, and some Caravanferays and Muscheits, and some fine Tanks, or large Cisterns to keep Rain Water, near the Town, particularly one a little without *Brampore* Gate. The *French* have a little Church near the old *English* Factory, which maintains a few Capuchins, who practise Surgery *gratis* to the poor Natives, of what Persuasion soever. They make some Converts; but they are generally of the loosest Morals of any Set in the Town. There are above an hundred different Sects in this City; but they never have any hot Disputes about their Doctrine or Way of Worship. Every one is free to serve and worship God their own Way. And Persecutions for Religion's Sake are not known among them. The *Mahometans* have the Law in their Hands, and distribute Justice best to those that pay best for it. The Judge's Fees are twenty-five *per Cent.* on all Sums that he pronounces due to the Party whose Plea is best supported with Bribes or Interest, for the Justice of a Cause seldom prevails. Many Examples I have seen between honest Men of low Fortunes and Villains clothed with publick Characters and good Fortunes; yet in some Cases I have seen Justice take Place. The *English* and *Dutch* Directors or Agents there make good Figures, because the Officers of State and Justice get yearly Presents or Pensions from them. The Governor of the Castle is not subordinate to him of the Town, and he dares not come out of his Nest but once in a Year, that he is permitted to go to Church, and then he must return before Sun set. None are suffered to pass the River whilst the Sun is down below the Horizon, nor dares any one that comes in Boats put their Foot ashore without a special Permission; and all Boats or Vessels must land at the Customhouse, and the Boat and Men are narrowly search'd. The Customs on *Mahometans* Goods are two in the hundred, on *Christians* three and three Quarters; but the *Christians* are exempt from paying Poll-money, but the *Mahometans* are not, nor *Gentows*, who pay five *per Cent.*

Customs on their Goods. The *Banyans* are Brokers even to *Mahometans*, who cannot well make Bargains without their Brokers.

THE *Mahometan* Women go always veil'd when they appear abroad. Their Garments differ but little from the Man's. Their Coats, which also serve both Sexes for Shirts, are close-bodied. The Mens are gathered in Plates below the Navel, to make them seem long waisted, and the Womens are gathered a pretty Way above, to make their Waist seem short. They both wear Breeches to the Ankle. The Men wear only Silver Rings on their Fingers, and generally but one for a Signet. The Women wear Gold Rings on their Fingers, and sometimes one on their Thumbs, with a small Looking-glass set in it, and often they wear Gold Rings in their Noses and Ears. The *Gentiles* again permit their Women to appear bare-faced, and their Legs bare to the Knee. They wear Gold or Silver Rings, according to their Ability, one in their Nose, and several small ones in Holes bored round the Rim of the Ear, with one large and heavy in each Lappet. They wear also Rings on their Toes, and Shekels on their Legs, of the aforesaid Metals, made hollow, and some Glass Beads loose in them, that when they move the Leg they make a Noise like a Rattle-Snake. The Men wear Gold Rings in their Ears, and often three or four in a Cluster, hanging at the Lappet. Some have a Pearl set in them. The *Mahometan* Men are known by their Garb, tho' the *Gentows* and theirs are of one Make, save only as they all overlap on the Breast. The *Mahometans* are tied on the Side, which, among them, is the Side of Honour, and the *Gentiles* tie theirs on the right Side. The *Mahometan* Turbans are likewise of another Dress or Make than the *Heathens*; and the different Sects of the *Heathens* are known by the Figure of their Turbans.

WHEN the *English* first settled a Commerce in this Country, which was about the Beginning of the sixteenth Century, they were held in great Esteem; but the *Portuguese* pretending a Right to that Trade solely, disturbed the *English* in theirs, murdering their People, and making Prize of all Ships and Vessels they could overcome. One Season

Season the *English* had eight good large Ships riding at *Swally*, which is about ten Miles from *Ranier*, where the President and his Council then resided; and *Swally* was the Place where all Goods were unladed from the Shipping, and all Goods for Exportation were there shipp'd off. The *Portuguese*, thinking it a fit Time to give a deadly Blow to the *English* Commerce, came with a Fleet of six large Ships, ten small, and ten or twelve half Gallies, and anchored to the Northward of the *English*, in a narrow Chanel, not Musket-shot wide, and a Tide generally of six or seven Miles an Hour. The *Portuguese* landed near three thousand Men, and seized some Carts laden with the Company's Goods. The *English*, who could not bear the Insults they daily received, held a Council, wherein it was resolved to land eight hundred Men out of the Ships, and attack the *Portuguese*, while they were lulled in Security of their own Strength and Numbers, and if they were overpowered, that those left on board the *English* should try if they could cut a *Portuguese* Ship's Cables that lay near them, and her driving on board of another, might, with the Force of the Tide, put them all a-ground on the Shore, or a Sand Bank that they lay very near to. Accordingly, by Break of Day, the *English* were all landed, and every Ship's Crew led by their own Commander. As they had conjectured, so it fell out, the *English* were among the *Portuguese* before they could get in a Posture of Defence, and put them in Confusion. Those on board had done as they were ordered, one being cut loose, soon made all the rest run a-ground, and most of them lost, especially the great Ships. The little *English* Army pursued the *Portuguese*, and killed many in their Flight; but at a Point of Land, about three Miles from the Ships, the *Portuguese* made a Stand, and rallied; but the little victorious Army soon made them take a second Time to their Heels, and so the *English* got an intire Victory, with small Loss, for there were not twenty killed on the *English* Side, but above one thousand five hundred of the *Portuguese*. In the Year 1690, I was on the Field of Battle, and saw many human Sculls and Bones lying above Ground. And the Story of the Battle I had from an old *Parsee*, who was born at a Village called

called *Tamkin*, within two Miles of the Field, and could perfectly remember the Action.

DAMAAN was, in former Times, a Place of good Trade, but at present reduced to Poverty. It stands at the Mouth of a River on the Sea-shore, and is naturally very strong, by a deep Marsh that almost surrounds it. The Town is about half a Mile long, and near as broad, walled with a good Stone Wall, as the rest of the Buildings of the City are built of; and it has a large Cathedral to adorn it, that is conspicuous a long Way at Sea. There are two or three other Churches, and a Convent, a Monastery, a Nunnery, and an Hospital, and there is a Castle stands on the opposite Side of the River, christened by the Name of *St. Salvadore*, and it is well secured by the Morass, as well as the Town. It has been for a long Time a great Eye-sore to the Governors of *Surat*, who have often pick'd Quarrels with the *Portuguese*, and laid Siege to *Damaan*, but without Success.

From *Damaan* to *Bassaim* is about eighteen Leagues along the Sea-shore. There are several Rivers and Villages by the Way, viz. *Danaw*, *Tarrapore*, *Mohim*, *Kellem*, and the Island *Vaccas*, but they are all of small Account in the Table of Trade.

BASSAIM is a fortified City belonging to the Crown of *Portugal*. It stands on a little Island, separated from the Continent by a small Rivulet. Its Walls are pretty high, and about two Miles in Circumference around the City, which has a little Citadel in the Middle of it. It contains three or four Churches, and some Convents and Monasteries, with a College and Hospital.

It is a Place of small Trade, because most of its Riches lie dead and buried in their Churches, or in the Hands of indolent lazy Country Gentlemen, who loiter away their Days in Ease, Luxury and Pride, without having the least Sense of the Poverty and Calamity of their Country. The Town is about half a League distant from the Island of *Salset*, which Inlet serves it for an Harbour for small Shipping, but there is not Water enough to accommodate great Ships. The Governor is stiled, by the *Portuguese*, *General of the North*, having *Diu*, *Damaan* and *Chaul*, with all their Territories, subordinate to him, but the Church

Church superintends, which makes his Government both uneasy and precarious.

SALSET is an Island about twenty five Miles long, and, in some Places, ten Miles broad. It is fruitful in Roots and Fruits, but not in Corn. It is stock'd with Villages and Churches, but has no City on it, but an old one, called *Conra*, hewn out of the Side of a Rock, but by whom I never could learn. It is near a Mile in Length, and many antique Figures and Columns curiously carved in the Rock, and has several good Springs of Water to accommodate it. At present it is inhabited only with wild Beasts, and Birds of Prey. The Island is almost cut in two by a narrow River that bisefts it at a Town called *Verfua*, which lies on the Sea-shore, and has a little narrow Harbour, deep enough to receive Ships of the greatest Burden, and is secured by a small Fort standing on the North Side, but the Town is on the South Side of the River. It drives a small Trade in dry Fish, made here, and transported to the inland Countries and Villages, that want the Benefit of Fishing. The Fishers here catch their Fish in long Nets, fastened to Stakes placed in the Sea, the outwardmost of which are driven in the Bottom on nine Fathoms Water; and they appear to Strangers like a Wood in the Sea. There are several Villages standing between *Verfua* and *Bombay*, on the Sea-shore, but *Bandara* is the most conspicuous, which fronts *Mabim* on *Bombay*, about a Mile distant. The *Portuguese* have some great Guns planted at *Bandara*, but they have no Trade; because the River belongs to the *Engliff*; and all Customs of Goods, either imported or exported, are paid to the Custom-house of *Mabim*. The Mouth of the River is pester'd with Rocks, that forbid Entrance to any Vessels of Burden.

In the Year 1694, the *Muskat Arabs* made a Descent on *Salset*, and committed great Depredations in plundering and burning Villages and Churches, killing the Priests, and carried about one thousand four hundred Captives into irredeemable Slavery. And about the Year 1720, the Priests of *Salset* disturbed the *Engliff* at *Mabim*, animating the People to Arms; but a Bomb or two thrown into the Church at *Bandara*, had no Respect to the Priesthood,
but

but sacrilegiously killed one or two, besides some Lay Brothers, which made them know that War was not their Trade. They were also troublesome to the *English* in the Year 1722, but the *English* surpris'd a Parcel that were about repairing an old Fort, contrary to Articles of Agreement, and killed a Score or two, which made the rest take to their Heels, and be quiet.

C H A P. XVI.

Gives a Description of Bombay, with some historical Remarks on its Wars, Government and Trade, till the Year 1687, when the Foundation of a War was laid, which proved the Ruin of the then English East-India Company.

BOMBAY comes next in Course, an Island belonging to the Crown of *England*. It was a Part of *Katharine* of *Portugal*'s Portion, when she was married to *Charles II.* of *Great Britain*, in the Year 1662. Its Ground is sterile, and not to improved. It has but little good Water on it, and the Air is somewhat unhealthful, which is chiefly imputed to their dunging their Cocoa-nut Trees with *Buckshoe*, a Sort of small Fishes which their Sea abounds in. They being laid to the Roots of the Trees, putrify, and cause a most unsavoury Smell; and in the Mornings there is generally seen a thick Fog among those Trees, that affects both the Brains and Lungs of *Europeans*, and breed Consumptions, Fevers, and Fluxes.

AFTER the Marriage, King *Charles* sent my Lord *Mulberry*, with four or five Ships of War, to take Possession of it, and the King of *Portugal* sent a Vice-roy to deliver it, and all its Royalties, to the said Lord, and Sir *Abraham Shipman* was ordered to be Governor for King *Charles*. They arrived at *Bombay* in *September*, 1663, but the Church withstood the Crown, and disobeyed the Order: Nor would they acknowledge the Vice-roy, unless he would come into their Measures, which, rather than lose his new Dignity, he did. And the *English* Fleet was forced to go to *Swally* to land their Men, and get Refreshments;

freshments ; but the Governor of *Surat*, in whose District *Swally* is, grew jealous of the Numbers and Bravery of the *English*, and threatened the Factory established in *Surat*, if they did not speedily re-imbark, which, to avoid Suspicion, they did, and the Governor allowed them the free Use of the Markets, so that they had no Want of Provisions and Merchandize whilst they stayed there. In *January* 1664, my Lord went back to *England*, carrying two Ships with him, and left Sir *Abraham* with the rest, to pass the westerly Monsoons, in some Port on the Coast, but being unacquainted, chose a desolate Island, called *Aujadiva*, to winter at. It is so far from an Harbour, that it is even but a bad Road for Shipping in those boisterous South-west Winds and turbulent Sea ; however he landed all the Land-forces, and built Huts to defend them from the Weather. The Island is barren, but has some Springs of good Water. It is about a Mile long, and three hundred Paces broad. Here they stayed from *April* to *October*, in which Time they buried above two hundred of their Men.

WHEN the Monsoons were over, the Squadron put to Sea, and put in to *Pombey*, to try if the Church had considered on the Obedience due to the King of *Portugal's* Orders, or if they had a Mind to draw the Arms of *England*, as well as their Sovereign's, upon them. Some of them having not forgot what Damages *Spain* and *Portugal* had sustained by the *English* Fleet in *Cromwell's* Time, advised the Church to obey the King, setting forth the Miseries they should be brought into in case of Noncompliance. At length their holy Zeal abated, and they were content to admit of a Treaty ; but, before the Treaty was concluded, Sir *Abraham* died, and one Mr. *Humphrey Cook*, who was next in Commission, continued the Treaty, and articulated, that the Inhabitants should enjoy their Lands and Religion under the King of *England*, but forgot to insert the Royalties appending on *Bombay*, which reach'd as far as *Versua* on *Salset*, which Omission has been a Bone of Contention for both Parties ever since.

MR. *Cook*, according to the Treaty, took Possession of the Island, in the King's Name, and forthwith began to fortify regularly, and, to save Charges of building an
House

House for the Governor, built a Fort round an old square House, which served the *Portuguese* for a Place of Retreat, when they were disturbed by their Enemies, till Forces could be sent from other Places to relieve them.

AFTER the Fort was lined out, and the Foundations laid, Sir *Gervas Lucas* arrived from *England* with two Ships, but Affairs being settled before he came, did not stay at *Bombay* longer than *January* 1666, and left the Government of the Island in the Hands of Mr. *Cook* and his Council, the Presidency for the then Company, residing at *Surat*. Their Trade flourished, and increased wonderfully; but, after the Fort was finished, the King finding, that the Charge of keeping *Bombay* in his own Hands would not turn to Account, the Revenues being so very inconsiderable, he made it over to the *East-India* Company in Fee Tail, which continues so till this Time.

IN building the Fort where it is, Mr. *Cook* shewed his Want of Skill in Architecture, where a proper and convenient Situation ought to be well considered, for it is built on a Point of Rocks that jets into the Sea, where there are no Springs of fresh Water, and it stands within eight hundred Paces of an Hill, called *Dungeree*, that overlooks it, and an Enemy might much incommode it from that Hill, as we found by Experience in the Year 1689, when the *Mogul* sent an Army on *Bombay*. As for the Magnitude, Figure and Materials of the Fort, there is no Fault to be found in them, for it is a regular Tetragon, whose outward Polygon is about five hundred Paces, and it is built of a good hard Stone, and it can mount above one hundred Pieces of Cannon; and that is all that is commendable in it: But had it been built about five hundred Paces more to the Southward, on a more acute Point of Rocks, called *Mendham's Point*, it had been much better on several Accounts. First, it had been much nearer the Road for protecting the Shipping there, it had been farther off *Dungeree Hill*, it would have had a Spring of pretty good Water, which served the Hospital that was afterwards built there, and the Shipping had been better secured that lay in the little Bay between the Point where the Fort now stands, and *Mendham's Point*.

THEY

THEY went about building several other little Forts and Sconces in convenient Places, to hinder an Invasion, if any of their Neighbours should have attempted one. At *Mazagun* there was one, at *Souree* one, at *Sian* one, at *Makim* one, and *Worlee* had one, and some great Guns mounted on each of them. Notwithstanding the Company was at so much Charge in building of Forts, they had no Thoughts of building a Church, for many Years after Sir *George Oxendon* began to build one, and charitable Collections were gathered for that Use; but when Sir *George* died, Piety grew sick, and the Building of Churches was grown unfashionable. Indeed it was a long while before the Island had People enough to fill a Chapel that was in the Fort, for as fast as Recruits came from *Britain*, they died in *Bombay*, which got the Island a bad Name.

THERE were reckoned above five thousand Pound had been gathered towards building the Church, but Sir *John Child*, when he came to reign in *Bombay*, converted the Money to his own Use, and never more was heard of it. The Walls were built by his Predecessors to five Yards high, and so it continued till the Year 1715, that Mr. *Boone* came to the Chair, who set about building it, and, in five Years Time, finished it by his own Benevolence, and other Gentlemen, who, by his Persuasions, were brought in to contribute. The Company also contributed something towards that pious End.

ABOUT the Year 1674, President *Aungier*, a Gentleman well qualified for Governing, came to the Chair, and, leaving *Surat* to the Management of Deputies, came to *Bombay*, and rectified many Things that were amiss, and brought the Face of Justice to be unveiled, which before lay hid in a single Person's Breast, who distributed her Favours according to the Governor's Direction. He erected a formal Court, where Pleas were brought in and debated; but that Method lasted but a few Years, when Sir *John Child* came to the Chair the Court was done. Mr. *Aungier* advised the Company to enclose the Town from *Dungeree* to *Mendham's Point*, for securing the trading People from the Insults of their troublesome beggarly Neighbours on the Continent; but his Proposals were rejected, and that necessary Piece of Work was reserved for

for Mr. *Boone* also. And happy it was for the Inhabitants that the Town was secured by a Wall, otherwise *Connajee Augarie* would have harassed them with continual Insults since his War with the *English* began.

THE Name of Mr. *Aungier* is much revered by the antient People of *Surat* and *Bombay* to this Day. His Justice and Dexterity in managing Affairs, got him such Esteem, that the Natives of those Places made him the common Arbitrator of their Differences in Point of Traffick: Nor was it ever known that any Party receded ever from his Award.

THERE are no Dangers in going into *Bombay* Road, but one sunk Rock that lies about half a League from the Castle. It is dry at low Water, and has a Chanel within it deep enough for the greatest Ships to pass. I never heard of any Damage done by that Rock, but to a small Ship called the *Baden*, which, by Carelessness, run on it at Noon-day, and was lost.

IN the Year 1673, the *Dutch East-India* Company having an Eye on *Bombay*, sent a Squadron of Ships, with a little Army, to try if they could take it in amongst their other Conquests of *India*, but, on their landing, met with so warm a Reception, that they were glad to get off with the Loss of two or three hundred of their Men, and so left the *English* to the quiet Possession of it.

THE Governors proved tolerable good, till 1682, that Sir *John Child* spoilt it. The *India* Company knowing how to make use of King *Charles's* Necessities, made him some Presents of Money, and he, in grateful Acknowledgments granted them Power to rob their fellow Subjects in *India*; but they used that Power to their own Destruction, for Mr. *Child's* Pride and Oppressions grew so intolerable, that even the Gentlemen in the Company's Service had not the free Exercise of Trade, and much less private Merchants. And he, trampling on the established Laws of *England*, by Advice of his Name-fake who governed the Company in *Europe*, by imprisoning and murdering their fellow Subjects, grew hateful to all.

IN the Year 1684, he made his Brother-in-Law Mr. *Ward* his Deputy of *Bombay*, who designed to fish in troubled Waters. Mr. *Child* being honoured with the Title of

of Baronet, by the powerful Motive of the Company's Money to the King, he, at the same Time, got the Commission of General, which put him up so, that he contemned all Laws human and divine. The military Gentlemen, who had made Contracts in *England* for their Salaries, tho' paid at twenty *per Cent.* Loss, yet to shew himself a good Oeconomist for his Master's Interests, sent his Deputy Orders to reduce their Pay to thirty *per Cent.* less than it was before, tho' it was so small, that they could hardly bring both Ends to bear at the Month's End. That hard rule the Sons of *Mars* could not swallow, and so bent their Minds on a Revolution: And having come to some Knowledge of Mr. *Ward's* tampering with the *Sevajee* to land on the Island, they detected some Letters of his to that Purpose, which gave them a Ground for a Revolt. The *Sevajee* indeed sent a Fleet of eighty Sail of small Vessels to land on the back Bay, which faces the Ocean; but, on their trying to land some Forces, they were warmly repulsed, and lost many of their Men, which made them draw off again in Confusion, and Mr. *Ward*, being confronted with his own Letters, and having little to say in his own Defence, was made a Prisoner; and General *Child's* Faction was sent to *Surat* to him. The Islanders, taking the Government of the Island into their own Hands, chose Captain *Kegwine* Major of the Military, to superintend military Affairs, and one Captain *Thorburn* to oversee the civil.

GENERAL *Child* soon dispatch'd Letters to *England*, and gave an Account of the Rebellion, and King *Charles* dispatched a Frigate called the *Phoenix*, for *India*, to demand the Restitution of the Island, and put it again into the Company's Hands. They arrived at *Bombay*, in September 1685, and shewed the King's Orders, with a full Pardon to all who yielded Obedience, which unanimously the Islanders did; but, for their own Security, drew up some Articles to be signed by General *Child* and Captain *Tyriel*, who commanded the *Phoenix*, one of which Articles was, *That any Person that had a Mind to go for England, should have free Liberty, and a Passage on board the Company's Shipping*, which being agreed to and signed, Captain *Kegwine* took his Passage on board the first Ship; but

Thorburn being a married Man, and having a small Estate, as well as a Family on the Island, could not so easily remove, but trusted to the Act of Grace, and the Treaty they had made.

AFTER General *Child* had gotten the Reins of Government again into his Hands, he became more insupportable than ever. He erected a Court of Inquisition, and made an old *Greek*, one Captain *Garey*, Judge, who had condemned a Man to be hanged on a *Tuesday*, and the Man suffered according to Sentence; but, on *Friday* after, the poor dead Fellow was ordered to be called before the Court, but he would not comply with the Orders.

CAPTAIN *Thorburn* was the first that felt the Weight of Mr. *Child*'s Displeasure. He got some Fellows to swear him out of his little Estate, who brought in forged Bonds for Sums borrowed from one *King*, whom he never had any Dealings with, and found Witnesses to attest them. All that *Thorburn* had, was too little to pay the Sums, for which his Estate was taken from him, and himself put in Prison, without the Permission of one Slave to attend or serve him in Prison. His own Wife was not permitted to visit him, which hard Usage brought him into a violent Fever, that soon put an End to his Life. About two Days before he died the Goaler acquainted his Lady of his Danger, and she, with two small Children, went to the General, and, on their Knees, begged that a Doctor might be permitted to visit her Husband, but he was inexorable, and would allow no such Favour, only granted her Leave to be in Prison with him till he died, and she stayed but one Day and a Part of a Night till he expired. When the Tragedy was over, she was going Home to her distressed Family, but found her Slaves and Children removed into a little Out-house of hers, and the Doors of her Dwelling-house shut against her. The Lady had two Sisters married on the Island, and she, hoping to find Relief from them, went to visit the eldest, but she met her at the Door, and told her she could have no Admittance, her Husband being liable to Proscription, if he admitted her into his House; and she believed the other Sister's Husband durst not entertain her in his House. The poor Lady, full of Sorrow and Grief, being abandoned of all her

her Friends and Relations, went back to her distressed Family, and, having no visible Way of Support, had once some Thoughts of putting an End to her Miseries; but her Sisters, unknown to their Husbands, sent her some Relief by a trusty female Slave in the Night, and a Letter, (that they desired her to burn as soon as she had read) wherein they promised to be assisting in the Maintenance of her and her Children, till the Almighty should think proper to deliver her out of the Persecution.

THE poor Lady had both Beauty and Discretion enough to recommend her to the virtuous Part of Mankind; but none of the Gentlemen that wish'd her well, durst make Addresses to her, only one, who had the Command of a Ship in the *Indian* Merchants Service, as he had no Dependence on the General, nor his Masters in *England*, thought he could not well come within the Reach of their Persecution, so he courted her, and married her, but that was thought a capital Crime, and the General acquainted his *Indian* Owners, that without they discharged him their Service, they should also find the Weight of his Displeasure; and accordingly, to avoid Contests with his Excellency, he was discharged: But Grief put an End to his Troubles, for he died within a Year after his Marriage, and left the poor Lady another Child to take Care of, but left her above one thousand Pounds *Sterl.* of Stock for her and her Family's Support.

As the *Phenix* was in her Way to *India*, she called at the Island of *Johanna*, and there found an *English* Ship, called the *Bristol*, stopping some Leaks in her Bottom. Captain *Tyrrel*, by a dispensing Power from the King of *England*, seized her, and designed to have carried her to *Bombay*, in Company of a small Vessel that he had seized on the Coast of *Madagascar*. The *Bristol* sunk the third Day after they put to Sea, but the other came safe. The *Bristol's* Men were looked on as Pirates, and one Mr. *Mews* a Supercargo was arraigned before the General's Tribunal, where he himself sat Lord Chief Justice, and, after his usual Manner of bestowing opprobrious Names, he condemned Mr. *Mews* to lose all that he had in the World, and one thousand Pounds beside, and to lie in Prison, at his own Charges, till the Fine was paid; but

Mr. *Vaux*, who was Judge of the Island in petty Affairs, shewed him the Weakness of his Sentence, and persuaded him to set the poor Man at Liberty, and order him a Passage for *England*.

WHEN Mr. *Child* first got his Commission to plunder, there were two of his own Council at *Surat* that were great Eye-fores to him, viz. Messieurs *Petit* and *Boucher*. They were Gentlemen of good Interest in *England*, and had great Remittances of Monies on the Company's Shipping coming yearly to them, to buy up Diamonds and send Home. General *Child* let them know, that he expected half of their Commissions as a Perquisite to his Post, but they could not be brought to think so: However they condescended, that if he would join his Commissions to theirs, which are much greater than his, they would be content to make an equal Dividend in the Commissions; but that Proposition he rejected, and was resolved to carry his Point by Fraud, and wrote to the Company in *England*, of those two Gentlemen's ill Services relating to the Company's Affairs, tho' none knew of any, but Mr. *Child* himself. Those Gentlemen's Friends in the Committee of the Company in *England*, acquainted them, by Letters over Land, of the Danger they were in, and gave them Warning to be on their Guard; and they accordingly took an House contiguous to the Factory, and, by Degrees, conveyed what they thought fit into their new Lodgings, but retained their old ones in the Factory. When the Shipping arrived, and the Company's Packet was opened, and read at the Council Table, Mr. *Petit* sat in his Place as second, and Mr. *Boucher* in his as fourth. When some few Paragraphs were read, one was to dismiss those Gentlemen from the Company's Service, and were forthwith ordered to withdraw, which accordingly they did, and went to their new Lodgings without the Factory. As soon as the Council broke up, Mr. *Child* sent Orders to confine them in their Factory Rooms; but Word being brought that they were not in the Factory, but their Doors were lock'd, he gave Orders to break them open, and secure all that was found in them for him, especially their Papers and Books; but they found nothing but a Bed-furnished, and some empty Trunks. When Mr.

Child

Child understood that their Effects and Papers were removed, he raved like a mad Man, but to no Purpose, so he perpetrated their Destruction by Fraud; but the Proscribed being well beloved by the Brokers, who were always of Mr. *Child's* Cabinet Council, were timely advertised of his Plots, and prepared to counterplot him. He was the first that bribed the *Mogul's* Governors to join in Villany with a President; but 'tis now a very common Piece of Policy at *Surat*, and has been often made use of against the *English* Company, since Mr. *Child's* Time: However, for a Sum of about four thousand Pound *Sterl.* he got the Governor of the Town to stretch his Commission, in pretending to distribute Justice, which is only the *Cadjee's* Place to do. He got the Governor to command the two Victims to meet at a Garden near the Town, and to deliver them up to the General, who was there with a Dozen of Grenadeers to receive them, and carry them on board of a Ship that lay ready to transport them to *Bombay*, and there to feed on the Bread of Affliction as long as they lived. He had suborn'd a Gentleman to draw up an Account, wherein the Delinquents were brought in Debtors to the Company one hundred and fourteen thousand Rupees, or, fourteen thousand two hundred and fifty Pound *Sterl.* and that Gentleman swore to the Account. The two Defendants being forewarned of the Plot, had given Bonds to their *Alabometan* and *Heathen* Friends, for above double the Sum that the honest General demanded; and it is against their Law to force any Person out of the *Mogul's* Dominions, who is indebted to his Subjects; but when Mr. *Harris* had sworn to the Account, (for that was the Gentleman's Name) the Governor ordered the two Gentlemen Defendants to be put in Irons, and to be delivered to Mr. *Child*; but their Friends protested against their going, till they had satisfied their Creditors, and declared the Governor liable to make good all the Sums contained in their Bonds, if by Violence they were sent away. That Protest startled the General and Governor both; so the Gentlemen were delivered to their Friends, and the Governor was no Loser by the General's Honesty: However they could not live in Quiet; so Mr. *Petit* bought a Ship to go a trading,

whilst Mr. *Boucher* went to the *Mogul's* Court, or rather his Camp, to try if he could procure a *Phirmaund* or Charter to be under the *Mogul's* Protection; but the Company's Money had crept into the Secretary of State's Purse, that retarded Mr. *Boucher's* Affair some Time: But the General, being afraid of his Success, sent a *Banyan* from *Bombay* to poison Mr. *Boucher*. This *Banyan* being often about his Tent, got acquainted with his Cook, thinking him to be the properest Person to make use of that Affair; and, after some Discourses about General *Child* and Mr. *Boucher's* Quarrel, he told the Cook, that he had a Commission from the General to settle a Salary on him during Life, and the Sum of 500 Rupees in Hand, if he would poison his Master. The Cook seemed to like the Proposals, and bid the *Banyan* bring him the Poison and the 500 Rupees, and accordingly the next Day he did, and, on the Delivery of the Money, he gave him a Paper with some Powder of white Arsenick to mix with his Master's Rice, which is a common Dish there. The Cook gave him large Promises of performing what he would, and so left him, and went to his Master with the Bag of Money and the Paper of Arsenick, and told him, that he had made a Bargain with General *Child's* *Vakeel*, or Attorney, to poison him, and told him the Terms he had agreed on, and shewed the Money and Poison. Mr. *Boucher* commended the Cook's Fidelity, and told him, that he would give him 600 Rupees to be honest, and a Maintenance during Life. And Mr. *Boucher* being bred a Druggist in his Youth, presently knew the Poison, and carried it to the *Cautwal* or Sheriff, and shewed it. The *Cautwal* used his utmost Endeavours to catch the *Banyan*, but he could never be found there.

Mr. *Boucher* had been fourteen Months soliciting to procure his *Phirmaund*; but his repeated Petitions to the Secretary had no Effect: But he had an *English* Man, one *Swan*, for his Interpreter, who often took a large Dose of Arrack. *Aurengzeb* one Day had ordered his Camp to remove to another Place, and had got on Horse-back. *Swan* took hold of that Opportunity, and got pretty near the King, holding his Petition or *Roca* above his Head, and cried with a loud Voice in the *Persian* Language, that

that his Master wanted Justice done him. The *Mogul* seeing him in an *European* Garb, ordered him to be brought to him, and ask'd the Cause of his Complaint. He answered, that his Master had been so long at Court about procuring a *Phirmaund* to become a Subject of his Majesty's, to be freed from the Oppressions of the *English* Company, who were grown intolerable by the Connivance of his Majesty's Governors of *Surat*, and therefore conjured his Majesty, as he should answer before God at the great Day, to do his Master Justice, and grant him a *Phirmaund*. The King was startled at the bold Expressions, ordered his Secretary to get one ready for the Seal against the next Day, which was accordingly done, and Mr. *Boucher* had it delivered to him as soon as it was signed, and then took his Leave of the Court.

WHILE Mr. *Boucher* was at Court, Mr. *Petit* made some Voyages into the Gulf of *Persia*, and going thither once, met with some *Sanganian* Pirates, who attack'd him. He defended himself bravely, and beat them off; but his Gunner firing a Blunderbuss out of one of the Gun-room Ports, blew the Ship up, and the *Sanganians* took up those that were saved by Swimming, among whom was Mr. *Petit* himself.

THE *Sanganians* carried their Prisoners to *Baet* on *Guzerat*, and laid a Ransom on them, which Mr. *Petit* agreed on, and sent Letters to his Friends at *Surat* to pay the Money: But General *Child* hearing of Mr. *Petit's* Misfortune, and where he was, dispatch'd a *Banyan* to *Baet*, to persuade the Pirates not to part with their Prisoner under twenty-five thousand Pounds, *Sterl.* and so they, hearkening to the *Banyan*, would not stand to the stipulated Ransom of five thousand Pounds. Mr. *Petit* stayed about six Months their Prisoner, and then died through Grief, and the ill Treatment he had received by Mr. *Child's* Persuasion; but the Pirates getting no Ransom, curst the General for his Counsel.

In the Year 1683, the *Dutch* dispossessed the *English* Company of their Factory of *Bantain*, on the West End of *Java*; and the *English* having a Mind to regain it by Force of Arms, built several Ships between sixty and seventy Guns, so that in the Year 1685, they had a Fleet

ready victualled, and mann'd with seven or eight thousand Men, to the Number of twenty three Sail of Line of Battle Ships, which Expence, and the continual Craving of the Court, brought their Stock very low; yet since the Maw of the Court was not enough crammed, the King laid Embargoes on the Fleet from Time to Time, for nine Months, and then the *Dutch* Ambassador had Orders to present his Majesty with one hundred thousand Pounds, if he would command the Company not to use Violence. He snapp'd at the Bait, and defeated the Design to all Intents and Purposes.

THE Company having such a Number of great Ships on their Hands, were obliged to send them abroad; but having no Stock to employ them, ordered the General and Chiefs of their Factories in *India* to borrow what Sums they could on the Company's Credit, from the *Indian* Merchants, to lade their Ships Home, which accordingly they did, and what they could not lade Home, they were to employ by Freights in *India*. And I saw a Letter from the Governor of the Company in *England*, intimating, that when they had got as much Credit of the *Mogul's* Subjects as they could, then they would pick Quarrels with the Creditors, and put a general Stop to their Trade, which was accordingly done; for, in 1686 and 87, the *Surat* Merchants traded briskly by Sea to *Mocha* *Persia* and *Bassora*, to the Westward, and to *Bengal*, *Alcheen*, *Malacca* and *Siam*, to the Eastward. The General granting Passes to all who required them, then, about the latter End of the Year 1687, he laid down a Complaint and Grievance before the Governor of *Surat*, and demanded Redress and Satisfaction. The Articles of his Grievances I saw in a printed Copy, and were as follows, in thirty-five Articles.

- I. "LAST Year a Ship of *Molab* *Abdul Gafour's* coming
 " from *Juddah*, in her Return met with two *Danish*
 " Pirates, who made a Prize of her. The News coming
 " to *Surat*, the said *Molab Abdul Gafour*, by Persuasions of
 " *Meir Nazam*, and other Merchants, made their Com-
 " plaints to *Salabat Caun* (then Governor) and other Of-
 " ficers of *Surat*; saying, the *English* belonging to *Surat*,
 " had taken his Ship, at the same Time sending his At-
 " torney

“ torney to Court, to complain to the King, who ordered the Governor, &c. Officers of *Surat*, to enquire into it, and do Justice accordingly. In this Affair, by Bribery, and disgracing me to the King and his Subjects, as also the *Dutch*, *French*, and other Nations, making them believe it to be true, for which Disgrace I am not able to trade in these Parts; but I hope the Disgrace will light on him, that hereafter no such Scandal may be put on me, or any other, we having traded here these eighty or ninety Years, but never before accused as Robbers, but daily enriched the Port of *Surat*.”

II. “ THE Complaints of *Mulab Abdel Gafoar* have been much to my Prejudice, by reason I could not clear my Money out of the Custom-house, nor ship my Goods for *Europe*, which were seized and hindred, which hath made me leave the Port and Trading, and retire to *Bombay*. I have by me thirty or forty Lack of Rupees in Money and Goods in a Readiness; if you please to send any Body, you may be certified of the Truth. Consider the Loss I am at in the Use of my Money, Damage of my Goods, and detaining my Ships a Year. I desire your Answer.

III. “ *Mulab Abdel Gafoar*’s disgracing me, makes People afraid to trust me, my Credit being lost by his false Reports, having twelve Ships laden with Goods, which I designed to have sent to *Surat*, there to have provided Goods, and relade for *Europe*; but his disgracing me is the Occasion of the great Charges I am at, my Ships wintering in these Parts, and my Goods lying on my Hands, we Merchants trading for Profit; which Hindrance hath not only been a great Loss to the King in his Customs, but to me, which I must answer to my Masters.

IV. “ MR. *Petit* and Mr. *Boucher* being indebted to the Company several Sums of Money, I would have called them to Account for the same; but they, like Traitors, went to the Governor *Cortalab Caun* for Protection. As for Mr. *Petit* he is dead, and gone to the Devil. Mr. *Boucher* still remains at *Surat*. I demand him, his Wife, Child, or Children, Family, and all *English* Men belonging to him, with their Effects, that they be
“ delivered

“ delivered to me, and that he may not make his Escape
 “ from *Surat*.

V. “ FORMERLY such Goods as we brought from the
 “ *Malabar Coast*, *Mocha*, and other Parts, which were
 “ for *Europe*, and not to sell here, we had Liberty to
 “ bring them ashore at *Swally*, to clean them, and ship
 “ again, without paying Custom; but the Governor
 “ *Cortalab Caun*, in his Time, forced us to pay Custom
 “ for those Goods. My Desire is, that what he took
 “ more than the former Customs, may be restored, and
 “ he do not the like again.

VI. OF late Years we bring more Money than formerly, which hath much enrich'd the Port, of which the Governor did acquaint the King, who was pleased to take no more than two *per Cent*. we paying no more for many Years. Of late the Governor of *Surat* did write to the King, to make us pay three and one half *per Cent*. for Money as well as Goods, which has been a great Prejudice to our Trade. My Desire is, that we may pay no more than formerly, that the former Overplus may be repaid. Which Exactings made *Salabat Caun* over-rate our Goods in the Custom-house, to our great Damage.

VII. “ FORMERLY we never paid Custom for Apparel or Provisions, but of late *Salabat Caun* forced us to pay Custom for them. My Desire is that may be repaid, and, for the future, no more Trouble on that Account.

VIII. “ WHEN our Goods came out of the Country, if robbed by Thieves or otherwise on the Road, it is the King's Order, that the Governors and Officers make good all Damages, or else the King to satisfy us himself. Few Years since our Goods coming from *Amadabant* and *Durrimgun*, were robbed in the Way to *Surat*. We have petitioned the Governor of *Surat* for Satisfaction, but never obtained any. My Desire is, that the King order Satisfaction to be made for the Loss we sustained, being great and considerable.

IX. “ SEVERAL of the Natives are indebted to us, of whom we can get no Satisfaction, having several Times made Complaints to the Governors, where they reside,
 “ for

“ for their Assistance, but, as yet, could have no Redreſs
 “ from them. Our Deſire is, that all Governors and
 “ their Officers may be aſſiſtant to us in recovering our
 “ Debts.

X. “ WE bring more Treafure into the Country than
 “ any other Nation, which is carried to the Custom-houſe,
 “ when cleared from thence, we ſend it to the Mint to
 “ be coined; but the Officers, for their own Intereſt, de-
 “ lay the Coining, to the Hindrance of the Diſpatching
 “ our Buſineſs; for, if our Caſh was coined in Time, we
 “ could have our Investments out of the Country, and
 “ lade our Ships according to the Monſoons or Seaſon of
 “ the Year. Our Requeſt is, that, for the future, the
 “ Coiners may not delay the Coining, and that our Trea-
 “ ſure may be coined apart, for its more ſpeedy Perfor-
 “ mance.

XI. “ AT the Arrival of our Ships, when unladen, we
 “ carry our Goods to the Custom-houſe, where they are
 “ thrown up and down very careleſſly, where they are brok-
 “ en, damaged and ſtolen. Our Requeſt is, that we
 “ may have a Ware-houſe apart by that of the *Dutch*, to
 “ put our Goods in, that we may be no further Sufferers,
 “ that, when we diſpoſe of our Goods, or ſend them to
 “ our Factory, that the Customer take Account of the
 “ King’s Customs, clearing them without farther Mo-
 “ leſtation.

XII. “ FORMERLY when we cleared our Treafure,
 “ &c. Goods from the Custom-houſe, we uſed to make
 “ up the Account of our Customs at the latter End of the
 “ Year, and then paid it. Of late Years the Officers of
 “ the Custom-houſe daily and monthly ſend to our Bro-
 “ ker, demanding the Custom, for which Reaſon we are
 “ forced to ſee the Officers not to affront our Broker,
 “ which has been much to our Prejudice. Our Requeſt
 “ is, that they demand not the Customs till the End of
 “ the Year, as formerly accuſtomy.

XIII. “ WHEN *Gaffadean Caun* was Governor of *Surat*,
 “ by Order of the King, the City was walled, at which
 “ Time we had a Garden near *Bramapore* Gate, about
 “ which we built thirty-four Shops, Stables for Horſes,
 “ a Summer-houſe, and ſeveral other convenient Places,

“ all

“ all firm Buildings, which cost to the Amount of twenty-five thousand Rupees; when the Wall came near our Garden, our Buildings were broke down, and our Garden spoiled. We petitioned the Governor for Satisfaction; he promised to allow us the Charges out of the King’s Treasury; but we have not received any Satisfaction. We demand Satisfaction for the said Charges.

XIV. “ FORMERLY, when our Goods came from other Parts to *Surat*, we paid no more than due Custom, and shipped them for *Europe*, or other Places, without any farther Trouble. Of late Years the Officers of those Places, from whence our Goods come, put us to much Trouble in demanding the Governor’s and Officers of *Surat*’s Receipts of us, and many times detain our Goods on that Account, by which their Proceedings our Ships sometimes return empty, and sometimes are forced to remain in the Country, which is a great Loss to the King in his Customs, as well as to us. Our Request is, that, for the future, such Receipts may not be demanded of us, but that we may have the same Liberty as formerly.

XV. “ WHEN our Goods are in a Readiness, we send them to the accustomed Place to be shopp’d, with a true Invoice of the Contents of the Bales. Formerly they used to make Choice of one or two Bales, and if they found them according to Invoice, then to shop and clear the rest, without any farther Trouble. Of late the Customer, &c. Officers, for their Interest, and to delay Time, open most of our Goods, which is not only a great Charge to us in repacking our Goods, but also our Goods are damaged. Our Desire is, that they may be shopp’d and shipped according to Invoice, without any farther Trouble, as customary.

XVI. “ OUR Sloops and Boats coming from *Swally* to the Custom-house, the *Meerbar* used to search them, if empty, cleared them, without any farther Trouble. Of late Years the *Meerbar*, &c. Officers will not clear them in three or four Days, which is a great Hindrance to us in the Dispatch of our Business. Our Desire is,
“ they

“ they may be search’d and cleared as formerly, without
“ Delay.

XVII. “ SOOMETIMES Merchants that buy our Goods,
“ break, plead Poverty, that they have not wherewithal
“ to pay us; applying ourselves to the Governor, &c.
“ Officers for Justice, and their Assistance, we can have
“ no Redress. Our Desire is, either that the Governor,
“ &c. Officers order Payment to be made, or to satisfy
“ us out of the King’s Customs, that we may be no
“ longer Sufferers by his Subjects.

XVIII. “ SOMETIMES we send our Brokers or Servants
“ to the Governor, &c. Officers, as our Affairs require,
“ who cannot be admitted without bribing the Servants
“ of said Governor, &c. Officers. We desire it may be
“ remedied for the future.

XIX. “ OUR Horses that come from *Persia, Bassora,*
“ &c. at their Arrival we used to send them to our Stables,
“ without farther Delay. Of late Years at their Land-
“ ing are carried to the Governor, his Seal put about their
“ Necks, and ourselves not trusted to use or dispose of
“ them. Our Desire is, that we may either ride them,
“ or dispose of them as formerly.

XX. “ THE Governor, &c. Officers often send to us
“ for broad Cloth, Sword-blades, &c. in Civility we
“ cannot deny them, but when we send for the Money,
“ they deny the Payment, and abuse our Servants, by
“ which we are Sufferers. Our Desire is, that, for the
“ future, if the Governor, &c. Officers desire any Goods,
“ they may pay for them before they carry them away.

XXI. “ GOODS provided at *Agra, Amadabant, &c.*
“ coming to *Baroach*, the Governor forces us to pay
“ eighteen *per Mill.* Custom, which is contrary to the
“ King’s Order, for we ought to pay but in one Place,
“ as the *Moors* and *Banyans*. Our Desire is, to be cleared
“ of that Custom, that at the Arrival of our Goods at
“ *Surat*, they may be sent for out abroad, without farther
“ Trouble, paying the King his due Custom. We desire
“ the same Goods shipp’d at *Baroach, Cambay, &c.* that
“ our Ships may not lose their Passage to *Europe*.

XXII. “ AT the Arrival of our *European* Ships, we
“ send our Goods to the Custom house, when cleared,
“ carry

“ carry them to the Factory ; sometimes we have present
 “ Vend, and sometimes we send them to other Places, as
 “ we think convenient, and for our Interest ; in case we
 “ send our Goods to any other Place, within the Term of
 “ six Months, then to pay half Custom for the said
 “ Goods, but, if kept a full Year, then to pay full
 “ Custom. Sometimes we send to *Swally* more Goods
 “ than will lade our Ships, the Remainder we dare not
 “ keep there, for Fear of Fire or Thieves. Our Request
 “ is, that for all such Goods as have paid Custom, we
 “ may freely bring them to *Surat*, keep them there for
 “ our next Shipping, and ship them off without farther
 “ Trouble or Demands.

XXIII. “ OUR Servants, *English*, *Gentows*, and others,
 “ many times we send up the Country, for the speedier
 “ dispatching of our Affairs. When we send to them
 “ for our Accounts, being at a Distance, and out of our
 “ Reach, like to Mr. *Petit* and Mr. *Boucher*, they go
 “ to the Governors for Protection, by which Means we
 “ cannot call them to an Account, to our great Loss,
 “ and farther Proceeding against them. Our Request is,
 “ that whatever *English* Man, employed in your Service,
 “ without our Leave and Discharge, that they, with their
 “ Effects and Estates, be delivered to us, that they may
 “ not be protected, but that we may proceed against
 “ them, as we think convenient.

XXIV. “ IT is near ninety Years that we have traded
 “ here. At our first Coming, the King granted us a
 “ Piece of Ground for a *Bunder* to repair our Ships and
 “ Vessels. Of late Years *Meer Nassam* hath forced it
 “ from us, and made it a Garden. We are destitute of a
 “ Place for repairing our Vessels, and other Conveniencies.
 “ Our Request is, that we may have the same Ground as
 “ formerly, or some other, near the Water Side, fitting
 “ our Occasions.

XXV. “ FORMERLY we used to pay for each Bale of
 “ Indigo, two and an half Rupees *per* Bale, without
 “ opening it. Of late Years the Officers open it, valuing
 “ it at their Pleasure, damaging the Goods, which is a
 “ great Loss and Charge to us in repacking it. Our
 “ Desire

“ Desire is, that, for the future, it may not be opened,
 “ paying the Custom as formerly.

XXVI. “ THE Governor, &c. Officers buy of us, for
 “ the King’s Account, Iron, Guns, Lead, giving us some
 “ Money in Hand. When they are turned out, and o-
 “ thers come, when we demand the Remainder, they de-
 “ lay the Payment of the Money, saying the King did not
 “ want our Goods, that we may take them again, some-
 “ times after they have kept them one or two Years.
 “ Our Request is, that whatever they buy of us for the
 “ King’s Account, we may be paid before they take them
 “ from us, and whatever Goods we have that the King
 “ has no Occasion for, we may dispose of them at our
 “ Pleasure.

XXVII. “ As to the Island of *Bombay*, it produceth no
 “ Corn. The *Mogul’s* Fleet often winters there, which
 “ makes Provisions scarce and dear. We are in Want of
 “ Supplies from *Surat*, and other the *Mogul’s* Ports.
 “ When we send to these Places, the said Governor and
 “ Officers will not let us have any without giving them
 “ one and one Fourth *per Cent*. Our Request is, to be
 “ free of this Tax, that we may have Liberty of sending
 “ what is necessary for Supply of the King’s People and
 “ said Island.

XXVIII. “ A Ship, with her Cargo, to the Amount of
 “ two hundred fifty-four thousand Rupees, came out
 “ of *England* without our King’s Licence, which came
 “ to *Surat*. Our King’s Orders came to us to seize Ship
 “ and Cargo, which accordingly we did; but *Salabat Caun*
 “ then being Governor, forced her from us, and deliver-
 “ ed her to Mr. *Boucher*. Our Desire is, the said Ship
 “ may be re-delivered us, that Mr. *Boucher* and his
 “ Broker give us a just and true Account of the Re-
 “ mainder of the Cargo, and that the Governor take Care
 “ it be not squandred away by them.

XXIX. “ Tis the King’s Grant, that Merchants pay
 “ but one Custom for their Goods, without farther Mo-
 “ lestation, and, when they pay it, to take a Discharge.
 “ Of late Years, the Officers have forced us to pay double
 “ Custom, besides their Perquisites which they have de-
 “ manded, which has been a great Hindrance to the
 “ timely

“ timely Arrival of our Goods. We desire we may not
 “ be forced to pay more then accustomary.

XXX. “ WE formerly rented a Piece of Ground for
 “ Stables, on which we were at considerable Charges in
 “ building and Reparations. *Meer Nassam*, by buying
 “ it, deprived us of it. We desire he may satisfy us the
 “ said Charges.

XXXI. “ SOME Years since we lost an Anchor at the
 “ River’s Mouth, which *Mirza Moysim’s* People took
 “ up. We have often demanded it, offering to defray
 “ the Charges he was at, but cannot get it. Our Re-
 “ quest is, that his Son *Mirza Mahmud Araff* deliver
 “ the same, we paying the Charges they were at.

XXXII. “ AT the Arrival of our Ships, they send
 “ the Boat up with News. At the Custom-house they
 “ stop her a whole Day before they will let our People
 “ come ashore with Letters, which is a great Impediment
 “ to our Affairs. Our Request is, that they may not be
 “ hindered for the future, but suffered to land as soon as
 “ they come to the Custom-house.

XXXIII. “ As concerning my *Bengal*, we hear several
 “ Ships have been taken and burnt, in which Affair we
 “ are not concerned, neither do we know whether Peace
 “ be concluded there or not. Our Request is, that the
 “ King issue out his Orders, that no Person question us,
 “ or make Demands on us on that Account.

XXXIV. “ SOME Years ago the *Sedee*, with the King’s
 “ Fleet, wintered at *Bombay*, in which Time some of his
 “ People murdered two of our *English* Men, which made
 “ our Men resolutely resolve to revenge their Death, but,
 “ with great Persuasions were pacified, being promised
 “ Satisfaction. We acquainted the Governor of it, who
 “ ordered the Murderers to be imprisoned; but, three
 “ Days after, they were cleared by the *Sedee*. Our Re-
 “ quest is, they may be delivered, that we may profe-
 “ cure them, and that Justice may be done.

XXXV. “ WHEN we are minded to take our Pleasure
 “ out of the City, altho’ we return before the usual Time
 “ of shutting the Gates, the Porters shut them against us,
 “ demanding Money before they will let us enter the
 “ City. Our Request is, that Order be given by the
 “ Governor,

“ Governor, that we be no more affronted by those People.”

THESE Grievances were the Foundation on which General *Child* built a War with the *Mogul*, without ever sending them to Court to know the King’s Pleasure, but, without declaring War, seized his Subjects Ships wherever they were found, altho’ they had the Sanction of his own Passes. If the fourth Article be *Christians*, the *Mahometans* and *Heathens* abhor it. The seventeenth and twenty third are unjust, as well as the twenty eighth; and the thirty and thirty first were but weak Arguments to help to support his Complaints and raise a War, that cost his Masters above four hundred thousand Pounds before they could lay it, besides the Loss of their Credit with the *Mogul* and his Subjects, which, to this Time, is not quite recovered. Or by what Rule in Policy could Sir *Jessab* or Sir *John Child* think to rob, murder and destroy the *Mogul’s* Subjects in one Part of his Dominions, and the Company to enjoy a free Trade in the other Parts? or how they could expect that he would stand neuter, let Politicians answer them, and I’ll proceed.

THE General having such a Number of great Ships on his Hands, and little Employment for them, sent them to *Mocha*, *Persia* and *Bengal*, where the *Suraters* had sent theirs under the Protection of his Passes. Captain *Andrews* in the *Charles II.* went to *Mocha*, and set up the King of *England’s* Flag on his Factory, and there he seized two *English* Ships, one from *England*, called the *Streights Merchant*, commanded by Captain *Bear*, and another belonging to Mr. *Samuel White* at *Siam*. She was commanded by one Captain *Wren*, whom they killed in his Cabin, because he would not deliver his Ship up voluntarily. There was but little of their Cargoes on board of the Ships, so they might as well have let them alone: However such Doings displeased the Governor and Merchants of *Mocha*, and they had a Design to force Captain *Andrews* to restore the Ships, but he suspecting as much, fled on board, and left his Colours flying on his Factory.

HE soon after left *Mocha*, and carried his two Prizes with him, and Mr. *Clive*, Supercargo of the *Streights Merchant*, got Bills for his Stock, payable at *Grand Carro*,

except about sixty Bales of Coffee that he carried with him to *England*, where it sold very well, and the Company were obliged by the Law to make good all the Ship's Cargo *pro rata*, as those sixty Bales sold for, which amounted to thirty two thousand Pounds. The *Bristol's* Cargo was also made good to her Owners, with the Ship that was taken at *Johanna* by the *Phoenix*, which came to sixty thousand Pounds. And the *Little Betty*, that was also taken by the *Phoenix* in her Way to *India*, cost them twelve thousand Pounds, tho' she and her Cargo were sold at *Bombay* for less than six hundred Pounds. The Owner of that Vessel was one Mr. *Hastwell* a Quaker, and a substantial Merchant in *London*, who arrested Captain *Tyrrel* going off the Exchange. The Captain proffered King *James* for Bail, but the Quaker would not accept of him, but was content to accept of Sir *Joseph Herne*, who became Bail.

THE *Charles*, *Cesar*, and *Royal James* and *Mary* way-laid the *Surat* Shipping, and brought in fourteen Sail to *Bombay*, where I saw them lying in the Year 1688, and yet no War with the *Mogul*, only with the Inhabitants of *Surat*, whom he threatened to humble.

IN October 1688, he went to *Surat* Road, in the *Royal James* and *Mary*, with three or four other Ships of Countenance, to try if he could bully the Governor, and frighten the Merchants into a Compliance of losing their Estates, but was disappointed in both. He staid there till the Beginning of *January* 1689, and then left *Surat* in an Huff, and brought all the *English* Ships along with him, except the Ship *Adventure*, whom the *Phoenix* had forced over the Bar, when she was lying at the River's Mouth, taking in a Cargo for *England*, under the Protection of Mr. *Boucher's* *Phirmaund*, which was the Grievance complained of in the 28th Article: However, her Supercargo dying, the Ship's Bottom was eaten up with Worms in the River, and Part of the Cargo remained many Years in Mr. *Boucher's* Possession.

ON the General's Passage to *Bombay*, he met with a Fleet of Vessels that were carrying Corn to an Army of the *Mogul's* that lay at *Dunda Rajab-pore*, about fourteen Leagues to the Southward of *Bombay*. That Fleet he also seized,

seized, and carried to *Bombay*, tho' against the Opinion of most of his Council. Before this Seizure he ask'd the Opinion of some Sea-officers, and one Captain *Hilder*, being the eldest, advised him not to meddle with the Corn Fleet, because it would straiten the Army, and force them to look abroad for Provisions, where it might best be procured, and perhaps might affect *Bombay*, which was in a great Measure beholden to their Neighbours for Sustenance and Fire-wood. The General took him up with scurrilous Language, called him Coward and Fool, and bragg'd, that if *Sedee Yacoup* (which was the *Mogul's* General's Name) should dare to come with his Forces on *Bombay*, he would blow him off again with the Wind of his Bum.

COWARDS are generally stout when Dangers are at a Distance, and so was our General, who had never seen a Sword drawn in Anger, and consequently very ill acquainted with War; and when it came to his Door, none was ever so confounded and dejected as he was, as appeared by his Conduct in that War that he so foolishly brought on himself and his Country.

WHEN the News came to *Sedee Yacoup*, that his Fleet, with his Provisions of Corn and Cloth, were seized and carried to *Bombay*, he sent a civil Letter to our General to discharge his Fleet, protesting, that as he had not meddled in the Affairs between him and the *Saraters*, he would continue neuter, unless he was forced to do otherwise: But our General gave him an insolent Answer, and the Fleet was unladed at *Bombay*.

*SEDEE YACOU*P sent again to desire the Delivery of his Fleet in fair Terms, otherwise he would be obliged to come with his Army, and quarter on *Bombay*, where his Provisions were detained, and that if his Fleet was not set at Liberty before the 11th of *February*, which was near at hand, he would certainly be on *Bombay* the 14th, but still received uncivil Answers, he performed his Promise to a Tittle, for that very Night he landed at a Place called *Souree* (about four Miles distant from the main Fort) with twenty thousand Men at his Back.

Our General's Security had made him neglect providing for receiving such Guests, trusting to the Reputation

of his Forces, who were greater then than ever they had been before, or ever were since that Time, and he had small Ships enow, had they been placed in proper Places, that might certainly have hindred his Landing, and forced him Home again; but all those necessary Preparations were neglected, and the *Sedee* landed at Mid-night, and the Redoubt where he landed, fired a great Gun to give the Alarm, and so deserted their Post, and the *Sedee* took Possession of it. At One in the Morning the Castle fired three Guns to give the general Alarm, which brought such Fear on those that lived securely in their Houses without the Castle, that the poor Ladies, both white and black, ran half-naked to the Fort, and only carried their Children with them; but they were all obliged to wait without the Wall, till Day-light relieved them.

NEXT Morning the *Sedee* marched to *Mazagun* a small Fort of fourteen Guns, and about a random Shot distant from the Castle. On the Enemy's Approach, that Fort, tho' situated on a Point of Rocks, where the Sea descended three Quarters of it, was also deserted in such precipitancy, that eight or ten Chests of Treasure, which generally contain one thousand Pounds each, and four Chests of new Arms, were left behind, tho' the Seamen that were sent in Boats to bring them off, proffered to carry them along with them; but the commanding Officer thought them not fit to be trusted with Money and Arms, and so they were left for a Present to *Sedee Yacoup*, with fourteen Cannon, two Mortars, with some Powder, Shot and Shells: But why that Treasure, and those Arms and Ammunition were deposited in *Mazagun*, few could account for, and the Reasons why they were left to the Enemy were as wonderful; but it was plain, that the old Way of Fishing in troubled Waters was known at *Bombay*, and the Officer was never called to account for his Overfight.

SEDEE YACOUN finding no Opposition, sent a Party of Men towards *Mahim*, to plunder the poor Peasants, and to take that Fort, which, he thought, might be deserted as the rest had been, and was not in the least out in his Conjecture, for the Garrison had embark'd in Boats, and came by Sea to *Bombay*, before they saw an Enemy.

The

The *Sedee* taking Possession of *Mazagun*, hoisted his Flag there, and made it his head Quarters.

THE following Day some of the Enemy appeared on *Mazagun* Hills, which grieved our General's righteous Soul to see Infidels come so near him in an hostile Manner. He called a Minion of his own, one Captain *Pean*, who was no better Soldier than himself, and ordered him to take two Companies, each containing about seventy Men, and march to those Hills, and drive the Enemy out of his Sight. He ordered one *Monro*, who had been a Soldier at *Tangier*, to be his Lieutenant. In *Tangier* he had received a Wound in his Heel, that spoiled his Running, and accordingly they marched in good Order within Shot of the Enemy, who shewed their Heads above the Surface of the Hill, but did not offer to advance or expose their Bodies. Several Gentlemen Volunteers took their Arms, and accompanied the little Army.

THE Lieutenant advised the Captain to march up the Hill in Platoons, to separate the Enemy's Forces. The Captain took it as an Affront to be advised, told his Lieutenant, that, when he had the Command in his own Hands, he might use it as he thought fit, but, as it was intrusted to him, he would use it according to his own Mind, and so ordered his Men to spread as much as they could, and when they saw the Enemy open in the Plain, to discharge all at once amongst them, which, he said, would terrify them. *Monro*, opposed his Scheme, and told him of the Danger he would bring himself and them into, if the Enemy should attack them whilst their Arms were reloading; but nothing could dissuade him from his Project, and so commanded his Men to fire as he had directed. The *Sedee*'s being ten to one in Number, and better Runners than our Men, and better acquainted with close Fighting with Sword and Target, took hold of the Opportunity, and advanced with all their Speed, which the Captain perceiving, betook himself to his Heels, and was the foremost Man to the *Portuguese* Church, where he took Courage to look behind him, to see what was become of his Men. Poor *Monro* thinking to stop the Enemy's Carreer by a Part of the Wing that he commanded, found himself deserted by all, but thir-

teen or fourteen stout Fellows, who were soon surrounded by the Enemy, and cut to Pieces.

PEAN had not stopt at the *Portuguese* Church, had he not found a Party of one hundred Men that lay there ready to support or receive him, as his Case should require. He was a Fellow as well made for running as any I ever saw, and was so much in the General's Favour, that he had not so much as a Reprimand for his Cowardice and Misbehaviour. This Relation I had from a Gentleman Volunteer, who kept always near the Captain while he could keep Pace with him.

WHEN the General left *Surat*, there were several Gentlemen in it, some in the Company's Service, and some private Persons, who were all imprisoned, and put in Irons, except Mr. *Boucher* and his Dependants, who were protected by his *Phirmand*. Those imprisoned were scurvily used, being obliged to pass thro' the Streets with Irons about their Necks, for Spectacles to please the Mob. Captain *Johnson* and Captain *Yeaman*, tho' particular Merchants, were obliged to act their Parts in the Tragi-comedy, and continue Prisoners, where Captain *Johnson* died, but Captain *Yeaman* got his Liberty at the End of the War, which was about the Beginning of *June* 1690.

I WILL now return back to the Year 1686, when Sir *John Weyburn* was sent from *England*, with a Commission of Judge Admiral from the King, and he had likewise another Commission from the Governor of the Company (which they made him believe was also from the King) to condemn and hang thirteen of the Inhabitants of *St. Helena*, where, in a Tumult caused by the Oppressions of the Governor of that Island, one *Johnson* the Second was killed. Sir *John Weyburn* took his Passage to *India* on board the Ship *London*, and, in his Way, called at *St. Helena*, and hanged up the thirteen proscribed Persons, without Form of Process, for which the Company paid dear afterwards, and so had Sir *John*, had he lived; but he finding the illegal Proceedings of Mr. *Chill* to be insupportable, and meeting with many Affronts (from that Man without Manners) died at *Bombay* about two Months before the *Sedee* came on it. He was much lamented by all honest Men that knew him. He was Captain of the

Happy

Happy Return who accompanied the *Gloucester* when she was bringing the Duke of *Tork* to *Scotland*, and lost by the Way. It was Captain *Weyburn* that sent his Barge to wait on the Duke, and brought him safe on board of the *Happy Return*, who carried him forward to *Scotland*, for which good Service he was knighted. He was ever after a great Favourite of King *James*, who seeing he could not be brought into his Measures, put that Employ on him, to dismiss him with Honour.

AND now the *Sallee* being Master of the whole Island, except the Castle and about half a Mile to the Southward of the Castle, he raised Batteries on *Dungeree Hill*, which overlook'd the Fort Wall, and disturbed the Garison very much; then he put four great Guns in the Custom-house, commonly called the *India-house*, and raised a Battery at the *Moody's House*, within two hundred Paces of the Fort, and another in the *Lady's House* that he had been so unkind to, so that it was dangerous to go out or in at the Castle Gate, till we got up an half Moon before it. All Men were then prest into the Company's Service, and I amongst the rest. We past the Months from *April* to *September* very ill, for Provisions grew scarce by the Addition of three thousand *Servajces* that were employed as Auxiliaries in the military Service of the Company. When the Winter Months were over, at *September* we went to Sea with our small Ships, to cruize on the *Mogul's* Subjects, and had pretty good Success. I was employed in that Service, and had the Command of a small Privateer of seven or eight Tuns, with twenty fighting Men, and sixteen Rowers. In three or four Months I brought nine Prizes into *Bombey*, laden most with Provisions and Clothes for the Enemy's Army, which was now increased to forty thousand, but we were not allowed any Plunder, but were rather plundered ourselves, for when we brought our Prizes in, our Chests were severely search'd, and if we had saved any of our Pay, it was seized for the Company's Use, as Money we had found in the Prizes, which made us careless in pursuing the Enemy at Sea. Except when Hunger pinch'd we never look'd out for Prizes, by which Indifference of ours many of the Enemy escaped that we could have taken.

THE ill Success we had ashore with the Enemy, made our General sick, and, in *December*, he dispatch'd two Factors to the *Mogul's* Court, with a *Surat* Merchant, called *Meer Mezamie*. He was our Friend, and had some Interest at Court. They went under the Name of the *English* Ambassadors. Mr. *George Weldon* was first in Commission, and *Abraham Navaar* a *Jew* was second. In fifteen Days they arrived at Court, being then at *Jebana-hant*. They were received but coldly; but, about the Middle of *April*, by the special Assistance of Presents to the Officers at Court, they were admitted to Audience, but were brought to *Aurengzeb's* Presence after a new Mode for Ambassadors, their Hands being tied by a Saff b f re them, and were obliged to prostrate. The King gave them a severe Reprimand, and then ask'd their Demands. They first made a Confession of their Faults, and desired Pardon, then that their *Phirmaund* which was forfeited, should be renewed, and that the *Sedce* and his Army should be ordered off *Bombay*. Their Submission he accepted of, and pardoned their Faults, on Condition that Mr. *Child* should leave *India* in nine Months, and never come back again, the *Phirmaund* to be renewed, on Condition that Satisfaction should be given his Subjects on account of Debts contracted, Robberies committed, and Losses and Damages made good, and, on Security given for the due Performances of these Premises, the *Sedce* and his Army should be ordered off the Island. In *January* General *Child* died, which much facilitated their Affairs, but it was kept secret at Court, till they knew how the King would order the Affair about him. In *March* *Meer Mezamie* died also, and, it was supposed, was poisoned by some Enemies, contracted by his good Services to the *English*. When he was given over by Physicians, our Ambassadors, sent to know what he had done with fifty thousand Rupees, he had received for secret Services. He answered, that he was sorry that ever he had meddled in their Affairs, for he had served them even with his Life, and yet they were not contented, for what Use that Sum was put to, he durst not divulge.

WHEN our Affairs were in so bad Circumstances at the *Mogul's* Court, the *Dutch* Company had one Mr. *Baroon* their

their Ambassador there, who designed to impose on *Aurengzeb*, who, he thought, was ignorant of *European* Affairs. The News of the Revolution in *Britain* being arrived in *India*, when he had an Audience of *Aurengzeb*, he began to magnify the Power and Grandeur of his Country, and villify the *English*. The *Mogul* seemed to be pleased with his Discourse, to encourage him to go on. He told, that the *English* were but contemptible in Comparison of his Sovereigns, for they were forced to send the *English* a King to rule over them, and that if his Majesty would exclude the *English* from the Trade of his Dominions, the *Hollanders* would carry it to a much greater Height, and enrich his Treasury, and the *English* would not know where to get Bread. The *Mogul* gravely answered, That if his Masters were so much superior to the *English* in Power and Riches, they might easily drive them out of *India*, and engross all the Trade of his Countries to themselves, and commanded him to tell his Masters, that he expected it from them. Then the Ambassador excused himself, and told, that he could act nothing in that Affair till he received Orders from *Holland*. *Aurengzeb* then reprimanded him, and shewed him wherein he had lied, for, says he, about seventeen Years ago, the King of *France* conquered most of your Country in a few Days, and that it was the *English*, and not the Power of *Holland*, that repelled him, and that if *England* did not hold the Balance of Power, either the Emperor or the King of *France* could conquer it in one Campaign.

THE Ambassador knew not how to answer to those Truths: But, being sent to solicit some Indulgence in their Trade, he could obtain none, and so left the Court dissatisfied.

AFTER our Ambassadors had obtained Pardon, they began to be respected, and had Liberty to take their Diversion abroad, till a new *Phirmaund* was drawing up, which, according to the Method of the eastern Courts, took up some Time: However Orders were sent to the *Sedee* to forbear Hostilities, and the *English* had the same Orders, so that frequent Visits past between the *Sedee*'s People and ours. And, during the War, about sixty *Europeans* of several Nations, had deserted from us, and took

took Pay of the *Sedee*. The Reason they gave for their Desertion, was ill Usage they had received from some *Irish* Officers; yet most of them returned after the War, on Promise of Pardon.

The *Phirmaund* being ready, and the required Security given, *Sedee Tacoup* left *Bombay* the 8th of *June*, 1690, but he also left a Pestilence behind him, which, in four Months Time, destroyed more Men than the War had done, and, for Joy, made a malicious Bonfire of his head Quarters *Mazagun* Fort.

Now we may see the *Mogul's* Stile in his new *Phirmaund* to be sent to *Surat*, as it stands translated by the Company's Interpreters, which runs thus in the printed Copy annex to Sir *John Child's* thirty-five Articles of Grievances.

THE Occasion of your writing to me, was your being in Fault of all these Troubles, that you have repented of what you have done, that you made several Complaints against former Governors, all which I have here from several of my Umbras, and the several Abuses received from them, and their Officers, all which you should have acquainted me with, before you proceeded so violently. Having acknowledged your Error, and desired Pardon, I do not only grant your Request, pardoning what is past, but granting you a *Phirmaund* according to your Desire, and have ordered *Affit Caun* to forward it to the Governor of *Surat*, with such Particulars as he will acquaint you with.

At the Arrival of my *Phirmaund*, receive it with great Respect, acknowledging the great Glory you have got in obtaining the same, that you may trade as formerly at your Pleasure, and as accustomed. That you deliver the Merchants, that have complained against you, their Ships with their Effects. That, for the future, you do not commit the like Error, in doing as you have done, and proceed according to my Will and Pleasure, and be not forgetful of the same.

If you receive any Affronts from my Governors, or their Officers, or any of my Subjects, be not negligent in acquainting me of the same I have ordered *Affit Caun* to write accordingly.

What you write concerning former Governors, protesting Mr. Boucher, that you have several Demands of him, that you cannot call him to an Account, desiring that he may be delivered

livered to you. My Order is, that you prove your Demands according to Law, that Justice may be done accordingly.

Dated the 31st Year of *Aurengzeib's* Reign.

It seems the King was not ignorant of the hard Usage his Subjects had met with, nor was he desirous to use Severity in punishing Offences and Affronts; but, like an indulgent Prince, only told them of their Faults, and prudently admonished them not to be guilty of falling into such like Errors, and, in a majestick Style, advised them to receive his Favours and Graces with great Respect, and that they ought to make the Law the Standard of Justice, and, in all his Words and Actions, used a *Christian* Moderation.

GENERAL *Child* being dead, Mr. *John Vaux* succeeded him in the Government of *Bombay*; but Mr. *Bartholomew Harris*, who had been Prisoner at *Surat* (all the Time of the Rupture) had the Seigniority in the Company's Service; but it being not the Custom, for one that had been the *Mogul's* Prisoner (for any Crimes judged to be capital) to receive publick Marks of Esteem from the State, without a singular Amneity from the King, Mr. *Vaux* was obliged to go to *Surat* and receive the *Phirmaund* and the King's *Serpaw* or Present, which, on such Occasions, is generally a fine Horse, and a Suit of Cloaths from Head to Foot, made of rich Atlasses or *Zeerbastas*. Those are Sattins or Taffataes full of Gold or Silver Flowers wrought in them. The Horse must never after be sold, on no Account whatsoever. They have also a fine Turband, embroidered Shoes, and a Dagger of Value, stuck into a fine *Cummerband* or Sash; and, being equipp'd in that Habit, the *Phirmaund* is presented (by the *Goosberdear* or *Hofbalhouckain*, or, in *English*, the King's Messenger,) and the Governor of the Province or City makes a short Speech adapted to the Occasion, setting forth the great Honour conferred upon him by the greatest King in the World, with an Admonition to make future Actions deserve the Merit of such Favours.

AFTER the aforesaid Manner Mr. *Vaux* received the *Phirmaund* in a gilded Box, and, according to Custom,
put

put it on his Turband for a little while, and, by an Interpreter, returned the Governor's Compliment, acknowledging the King's Favours and the Governor's Civilities; and then the Governor conducted him from the Garden (where the Ceremony was performed) into the City, through a great Concourse of People, who welcomed him with Shouts of Joy as he past thro' the Streets to the *English* Factory.

AFTER Mr. *Vaux* had staid in the City about a Week, he sent to acquaint the Governor of the Necessity he lay under to return back to his Government of *Bombay*; but the Governor sent him Word, that none but he could be trusted by the King to see the Performance of the Contract accomplished, and begged, that he would not think of leaving the City, lest the King should take it amiss, and repent him of the Favours he had shewed to the *East-India* Company; and so Mr. *Vaux* was detained an Hostage for his Master's future good Behaviour.

MR. *Harris*, according to that Company's ordinary Custom, demanded the Presidency from Mr. *Vaux*, who, to save Contention, gave it to him, tho' his Mind was so debilitated, that he was but few Degrees wiser than an Idiot, and, in two Years Time, Mr. *Vaux* was suspended the Company's Service, and to remain their Hostage at his own Charges, and so he continued till the Year 1697, that he, by Accident, was drowned in *Surat* River, by a Pinnace's oversetting, in which he and his Lady had been taking a Pleasure on the Water.

THIS Mr. *Vaux* had been Book-keeper to Sir *Josiah Child* in *England*, and, for his good Services and Behaviour, was preferred by his Master to a Supercargo's Post in a Ship to *China*, which Trade, in those Times, was the most profitable of any within the Limits of the Company's Charter. In the Year 1684 he was sent thither on board a Ship called the *Carolina*, commanded by one Captain *Harding*; but, Mr. *Vaux* and *Harding* disagreeing in their Passage to *China*, Mr. *Vaux* laded the Ship, and sent her back to *England*, while he himself went Passenger on board a *Surat* Ship for *Bombay*, where he was entertained in the Company's Service as a Factor, and wrote to Sir *Josiah Child* the Reasons he had for leaving the *Carolina*,
and

and his Resolution of staying in *India*. Sir *Josiah* continued his Esteem for Mr. *Vaux*, and procured him several profitable Posts at one and the same Time in the Company's Service, and, amongst the rest, constituted him Judge in civil Affairs, which brought him both a good Salary and Perquisites. After he was installed in that Office, Sir *Josiah* wrote him a Letter of Admonition and Reminiscence, wherein, after many Postulates, put him in Mind of the many Favours he had done him, and that now, having the Power of condemning the Company's Enemies, or such as should be deemed so, particularly those who should dare to question the Company's Power over all the *British* Subjects in *India*, and that he expected his Orders, from Time to Time, should be observed and obeyed as Statute Laws.

MR. *Vaux* gratefully acknowledged Sir *Josiah*'s Favours in his Answer to that Letter, and promised, that, as he had put him into that Post of Honour and Profit, he would strive to acquit himself with all the Integrity and Justice he was capable of, and that the Laws of his Country should be the Rule he designed to walk by.

IN Answer to that Letter, Sir *Josiah* seemed to be angry, and wrote roundly to Mr. *Vaux*, that he expected his Orders were to be his Rules, and not the Laws of *England*, which were an Heap of Nonsense, compiled by a few ignorant Country Gentlemen, who hardly knew how to make Laws for the good Government of their own private Families, much less for the Regulating of Companies and foreign Commerce,

I AM the more particular in this Account, because I saw and copied both those Letters in the Year 1696, while Mr. *Vaux* and I were Prisoners at *Surat*, on Account of Captain *Evory*'s robbing the *Mogul*'s great Ship, called the *Gunsway*.

HAVING given an Account of some Part of Sir *John Child*'s Reign, I must also remark a few Slips in the Government of some of his Successors, and of the Ways that they took to get into the Chair of *Bombay*.

I REMARK'D before, that Mr. *Harris* was a very weak and indolent Person, very unfit to govern a Colony and the Factories subordinate to *Bombay*, and, by that Means, a cunning designing Fellow, one Mr. *Samuel Annesley*, had
the

the Reins of the Government wholly in his Management, who shewed, that he had malicious Wit and Avarice enough to embroil both his Masters and the private Merchants Affairs in *Surat* in *Harris's* Time, and, on *Harris's* Death, got into the Presidency, or rather Tyranny.

THE *Mogul's* Subjects have a good many fine large Ships that trade all over *India*. The Owners of those Ships had a very great Regard for the Courage, Conduct, and Art of Navigation of the *English*, above any other *European* Nation in *India*; and, for those Qualifications, the *Indian* Owners procured *English* Officers to go in their Ships, and allowed them very handsome Salaries and Indulgences. The Captains had from ten to fifteen Pounds *per* Month, Mates from six to nine Pounds, and the Gunners and Boatswains had also good Salaries, besides the Privilege of carrying some Goods and Merchandizes, Freight free.

MR. *Annesley* thought those Salaries and Indulgences were too great for Scamen, so he went about to reduce them to about one Half, and the other Moiety he look'd on as his own Due by virtue of his Post.

SOME through Fear or Necessity complied, others again, who despised both his Power and Tyranny, would, by no Means, come into his Measures, and those he look'd on as Rebels, and persecuted them to the utmost of his Power, bribing the *Mogul's* Governor to plague us; so some were ruined by his Villainy, whilst others bade him open Defiance: And we were not wanting on our Side to expose him and his Masters to the *Mogul's* Subjects, which in the End was the Loss of both their Esteem and Credit amongst the trading People of that Country. The poorer Sort, whose Maintenance depended on their Labour and Industry, losing their Employ in the *Moorish* Merchants Service, were obliged to fall on new Schemes to support themselves, not very well suited to the Company's Interest, for some went and joined themselves with the Pirates.

THE Company in *England* received Accounts from every one that came from *India*, of *Harris* and *Annesley's* Maladministration, sent out Sir *John Gayer* to take Care of their Affairs. He arrived in the Year 1694, with the
lotry

lofty Title of General of all *India*. He continued *Annesley* in the Company's Service till the Year 1700, but divested him of all Power of doing more Mischief; but, in the End, he dismissed him the Company's Service.

SIR *John Gayer* was a Man not vicious in his Temper, yet he had some Slips in his Government that proved prejudicial to his Character, tho', in Matters of common Commerce, he acted pretty regularly, till a young Lass of three thousand Pounds Portion made him dispense with the common Methods of Matrimony. This young Gentlewoman was a Daughter of Mr. *Ward's* before mentioned. She had no Relations alive, and unadvisedly married one Mr. *Solomon Lloyd* a Factor, and the Marriage was clandestine, which was positively against the Statute Law of *Bombay*, where no Marriage is binding but when the Governor's Consent is tack'd to it. This Law Sir *John* had got by Heart, and unmarried the poor Factor after Consummation, and married her to his own Son; but the second Marriage was attended with ill Consequence, for, whilst her Husband was at *China* one *Coleman* was ordered to teach her to write good *English*, but, neglecting those Orders, he taught her something else, and was discovered in the Practising, by a watchful Mother-in-Law. The poor School-master was sent, in Irons, on board of a Ship for *England*. And the poor Husband's Head ached as long as he lived.

ANOTHER Piece of ill Conduct was in forcing the *Mocha* Frigate's Men on board, against their Wills, to proceed on a Voyage to *China*, notwithstanding their just Complaints against *Edgecomb* their Captain, whom the Mutineers shot in his Cabbin, and then turned Pirates, and infested the Streights of *Malacca*, robbing and plundering all Ships that they could overcome. Captain *Hide*, in the *Dorrel*, met her there in her Passage to *China*, and had a sharp Engagement with her, but got clear with the Loss of sixty Men killed, and some wounded, which disabled the *Dorrel* so, that she proceeded no farther than *Malacca*.

AND another Fault of Sir *John's* was in suffering himself and his Lady to be taken Prisoners at *Swally*, by the Governor of *Surat's* Order, when he might either have avoided

avoided that Disgrace by Force or Flight; but it was generally believed, that was only a Piece of Policy to get to *Surat*, in order to employ his Money, which he could do much better there than at *Bombay*.

SIR *Nicholas Waite* supplanted Sir *John* in the Government of *Bombay*, and in the Presidency. He was a Man of very loose Morals; and his bare-fac'd Injustices and Prevarications irritated the Inhabitants and Soldiery of *Bombay*, that they seized him, and sent him Prisoner for *England*. Tho' his Reign was short, it was very pernicious to his Masters, as well as to particular Merchants under his Jurisdiction. But, to return from this Digression.

BOMBAY was governed by a Deputy, since the President was obliged to stay at *Surat*. And of seven or eight hundred *English* that inhabited before the War, there were not above sixty left by the Sword and Plague, and *Bombay*, that was one of the pleasantest Places in *India*, was brought to be one of the most dismal Deserts; but the Spirit of Injustice still resided in it, for those who had ventured thro' the War and Plague in Defence of the Island, had not the Liberty of returning Home to their own Country, nor to raise their Fortune by private Trade, but all were continued prest Men in the Right Honourable Company's Service, without the Hope of Preferment, which made some Discontents.

AND, even in the Time of War, when Strangers should have been encouraged to bring Provisions on the Island, the Company's Taxes of five *per Cent.* were exacted with great Severity, for I have seen the *Portuguese* Subjects bring twenty or thirty Poultry to the Market, and have had five of the best taken for the Custom of the rest.

Two Leagues from the Castle is a small Island belonging to the Company, called *Butcher's Island*, but of no Use, besides hauling Ships ashore to clean, and graze a few Cattle. And, a League from thence, is another larger, called *Elephanto*, belonging to the *Portuguese*, and serves only to feed some Cattle.

THERE is a pretty high Mountain stands in the Middle of the Island, shaped like a blunt Pyramid, and, about the Half of the Way to the Top, is a large Cave, that has

two large Inlets, which serve both for Passage into it and Lights. The Mountain above it rests on large Pillars, hewn out of a solid Rock, and the Pillars curiously carved. Some have the Figures of Men, about eight Foot high, in several Postures, but exceedingly well proportioned and cut. There is one that has a Giant with four Heads joined, and their Faces looking from each other. He is in a sitting Posture, with his Legs and Feet under his Body. His right Hand is above twenty Inches long. There are several dark Rooms hewn out of the Rock, and a fine Spring of sweet Water comes out of one Room, and runs thro' the Cave out at one of the Inlets. I fired a Fuzee into one of the Rooms, but I never heard Cannon nor Thunder make such a dreadful Noise, which continued about half a Minute; and the Mountain seemed to shake. As soon as the Noise was over, a large Serpent appeared, which made us take to our Heels, and got out of the Cave at one Door, and he, in great Haste, went out at the other. I judged him about fifteen Foot long, and two about. And these were all that I saw worth Observation on that Island. I ask'd the Inhabitants of the Island, who were all *Gentows*, or *Gentiles*, about twenty in Number, if they had any Account, by History or Tradition, who made the Cave, or the *Quadrupeds* carved in Stone; but they could give no Account. About a League from *Elephanto*, is an Island called *Salvageo*. It affords nothing but Fire-wood, with which it supplies *Bombay*. And, about half a League from it, is the Island of *Caronjaa*, belonging to the *Portuguese*. It affords no Trade, but Eatables for *Bombay*, from whence it lies East about two Leagues. Between it and the main Land, is the Mouth of *Pen River*. And four Leagues South of *Bombay*, are two small Islands, *Undra* and *Cundra*. The first has a Fortrefs belonging to the *Sedee*, and the other is fortified by the *Sevajee*, and is now in the Hands of *Conna-jee Angarie*. The *English* have made several Attempts to take it, but never could, tho' in the Year 1719, it had certainly been taken, had not a *Portuguese* Traitor, who lay on one Quarter of it with some Vessels of War to hinder Relief coming to it, betrayed his Trust, and let some Boats pass by in the Night with Provisions and Ammunition,

tion, which the Island was in great Want of. The *English* landed, and were obliged to retire by some Loss they received.

ABOUT four Miles to the South-east of *Cundra*, is *Culabee*; a Fort built on a Rock a little Way from the main Land; and, at high Water, it is an Island, belonging to the *Sevajee*. And, two Leagues to the South of *Culabee*, is *Chaul*, a Town belonging to the *Portuguese*, whose River affords an Harbour for small Vessels. The Town is fortified, and so is an Island on the South Side of the Harbour, called *Chaul Moar*, which may be known five or six Leagues off at Sea, by a white Church built on it. *Chaul*, in former Times, was a noted Place for Trade, particularly for fine embroidered Quilts; but now it is miserably poor.

DANDE RAJAPORE lies seven Leagues to the Southward of *Chaul*, a Town belonging to the *Sedce*, who generally lies there with a Fleet of the *Mogul's* Vessels and Ships of War, and an Army of thirty or forty thousand Men. There is a Rock fortified by the *Sevajee*, that lies within a League of the Mouth of *Dande Rajapore* River, to the Northward, and another as far to the Southward, called the *Whale*, that shews his Back at low Water.

COASTING to the Southward from *Dande Rajapore*, are several small Rivers and fishing Towns. *Zesferdon* is the best, and two little Islands called *Horney Coat*, fortified and kept by the *Sevajee*. It lies five Leagues to the Northward of *Dabul*, which stands at the Mouth of a large River, and, of old, was a Place of Trade, and where the *English* once had a Factory.

THERE is an excellent Harbour for Shipping eight Leagues to the Southward of *Dubal*, called *Sangufeer*; but the Country about being inhabited by *Raparees*, it is not frequented; nor is *Rajapore*, about seven Leagues Southward of *Sangufeer*, tho' it has the Conveniency of one of the best Harbours in the World, and had formerly both an *English* and *French* Factory settled there; and the Place where General *Child* had his Education, from ten Years old to eighteen, under his Uncle Mr. *Goodshaw*, who was Chief there; and having betrayed some of his Uncle's Secrets, in making use of the Company's Cash in his own private Trade, his Uncle was cashier'd, and, before the Nephew was come to four and twenty, he had the Honour to fill his Chair.

WHEN

WHEN the *English* had a Factory at *Rajakpore*, that Country produced the finest Betteellas and Mullins in *India*; but now all Arts and Sciences are discouraged, and the Port not frequented. There are fine artificial Cisterns for Water there, and a natural hot Bath, within three Yards of a very cold one; and both are reckoned very medicinal.

ABOUT twelve Leagues to the Southward of *Gbiria*, is an Island about two Miles in Circumference, and fortified with a Stone Wall round it, called *Malwan*. It lies about a Mile from the main Land, and is governed by an independent *Rajah*, who is also a Freebooter, and keeps three or four Grabs at Sea to rob all whom they can master.

VINGURLA lies about four Leagues to the Southward of *Malwan*, and was formerly a Place of Trade; and the *Dutch* Company had a Factory there for Cloth, both fine and coarse.

Two Leagues to the Northward of *Vingurla* River there is a Parcel of Rocks that stretches about two Leagues into the Sea. The outermost lies in seventeen Fathoms of Depth. They seem to have been *Vulcanoes*.

THE Religion of all the Countries, from *Dande Rajapore*, to the Dominions of *Goa*, is *Paganism*; but they are not tied up to divine or moral Rules.

C H A P. XVII.

Gives an Account of the Sundah Rajah's Dominions, the Product, Religion and Customs of his Country, with Observations on his War with the English East-India Company, in the Year 1718; with a short Description of Canara.

CABO DE RAMA, or, as the *English* call it, Cape Ramus, begins the Limits of the *Sunda Rajah's* Country, to the Northward, and has a Castle on the Cape to secure his Frontier; but there is no River or Harbour for Shipping, till we come to *Sevasfer*, and that is but a bad one, tho' it has the Cover of a large Castle with few Guns in it. But,

CARWAR, which lies seven Leagues to the Southward of Cape *Ramus*, has the Advantages of a good Harbour, on the South Side of a Bay, and a River capable to receive Ships of three hundred Tuns. The *English* have a Factory here, fortified with two Bastions, and some small Cannon for its Defence. The *Rajah* is tributary to the *Mogul* at present, but formerly was a Part of *Visapore*'s Dominions, before *Aurengzeb* conquered that Country. This *Rajah*'s Dominions reach from Cape *Ramus* to *Merzee*, about fifteen Leagues along the Sea-coast, and sixty or seventy Leagues within Land.

THIS Country is so famous for hunting, that two Gentlemen of Distinction, viz. Mr. *Lembourg* of the House of *Lembourg* in Germany, and Mr. *Goring*, a Son of my Lord *Goring*'s in England, went *incognito* in one of the *East-India* Company's Ships, for *India*. They left Letters directed for their Relations, in the Hands of a Friend of theirs, to be delivered two or three Months after their Departure, so that Letters of Credit followed them by the next Year's Shipping, with Orders from the *East-India* Company to the Chiefs of the Factories, where-ever they should happen to come, to treat them according to their Quality. They spent three Years at *Carwar*, then, being tired with that Sort of Pleasure, they both took Passage on board a Company's Ship for *England*.

THE Chief of the *English* Factory is held in very great Esteem in this Country, and when he goes a hunting, is generally accompanied with most Part of the People of Distinction in the Vicinage, who bring their Vassals and Servants with them, armed with fire Arms and other Weapons, both missive and defensive, with Trumpets, Hautboys and Drums.

THE Woods produce great Quantities of good Teak Timber, useful in building both Ships and Houses. It is more durable than Oak. And there is good Poon Mafts, stronger, but heavier than Fir. There is a Shrub grows in the Woods, that has a Leaf bigger than that of the Fig-tree; and the Dew that falls on that Leaf being carefully gathered, and set in the Sun a Day or two, becomes the pleasantest and strongest Acid that ever I tasted.

BEFORE

BEFORE *Aurengzeb* conquered *Visapore*, this Country produced the finest Betteellas or Mullins in *India*. The *English* Company had a great Cloth Trade here, and employed about fifty thousand People in that Manufactory; but the *Mogul's* licentious Soldiers fell into this Province, and ruined all Manner of Trade, plundering the industrious Inhabitants of all they could lay Hands on, and cut the Company's Cloth from the Loom, and used the Weavers so rudely, that they left their own Country, to look for Protection in Countries farther to the Southward, where War had not set up her bloody Banners.

WHEN the *Mogul's* General had taken Possession of that Province in the Master's Name, he invited the Gentlemen of the *English* Factory to an Entertainment in his Tent, under Pretence of settling the Company's Commerce, and, while they were at Dinner, he sent a Party of Men, who plundered and burnt their House, which made the Company build and fortify what they now have; but he who built it where it is, had no great Foresight in choosing his Ground, for it ought to have been built in a Place of free Communication with the Sea, but now it stands a League from it. And, in the Year 1718, the *Rajah* shewed them their Error, and built Batteries at the Mouth of the River, so that the Factory is nothing at present but a genteel Prison, which by dear bought Experience, we found in a War we had with him, by the Indiscretion of one *Taylor*, who was Chief, who pretended to be Lord of the Mannor, in appropriating a Wreck to his own Use, that was cast away above four Miles from the Factory. The *Rajah* could not bear to be so barefacedly affronted in his own Dominions, by Tenants that would hear no Reason. He besieged the Factory for two Months before the Season would admit of Forces coming to assist them by Sea; and when they arrived, the Seas run so high on the Shore, that there was great Difficulty of landing in the Teeth of an Enemy, who had ten Times our Numbers, so that the first Attempt of landing was unsuccessful, by our Mens Neglect and Disobedience to the Orders they had received, and about fourscore of our bravest Fellows were cut off, and some taken Prisoners. But, about six Weeks after we had some Revenge

on the Enemy in an Engagement on the Side of an Hill among thick Bushes. The Enemy being above our Men, began their Fire at Break of Day, to beat our Men from a Spring of fresh Water close to the Sea; but our small Vessels lying near the Shore to cover about four hundred Men, that lay to guard the Water, fired with so good Success, that, in an Hour's Time, they were obliged to run, and leave near two hundred dead in the Woods; and our Men pursuing them in their Flight, did some Execution on them.

WE were in daily Expectation of more Forces, and did not offer the Enemy Battle, because of their Numbers and our Want of Experience; but we harrassed the Enemies in the Nights; in burning Villages, for there was little to plunder; and at Sea we took some Vessels laden with Salt going to the Enemy, and three Ships of the *Rajah's* coming from *Arabia* with Horses, to the Number of one hundred and forty, which created us much Trouble to find Provender and Water for them: However, when our Reinforcement came, we could muster, in our Fleet, of Seamen and Soldiers, twenty two hundred and fifty Men. The Enemy raised some Batteries on the Strand to hinder our landing; and we took two of the Prizes, and made them Shot-proof above Water, and laid them ashore at high Water to batter their Batteries, and keep the Enemy at a Distance with their great Shot, till our Men were landed and drawn up. Each of our floating Batteries were covered with a Frigate of twenty or twenty four Guns. When all was ready, we landed twelve hundred and fifty Men, without the least Hindrance from the Enemy, for they were preparing to flee to the Woods; but our fresh Water land Officers were so long a drawing up their Men in a confounded hollow Square, that the Enemy took Courage, and, with Horse and Foot, came running towards our Men, firing, and wounding some as they marched in their Ranks, which our Commandant seeing, pulled off his red Coat, and vanished. Some other as valiant Captains as he, took Example, and left their Posts, and then the Soldiers followed, and threw down their Arms. We lost in this Skirmish about two hundred and fifty, but our floating Batteries would not permit the Enemy to pursue far, nor durst they stay to gather up our scattered

tered Arms, so about eighty Sailors went on the Field of Battle, and brought on board of the Commodore about two hundred Stand of Arms, most of them loaded: However the Enemy had some Loss too, for we found eleven Horses dead, and saw many Fires along the Foot of the Hills to burn their dead Men in.

THE *Rajah* had, by this Time, seven thousand Men engaged in this War, which Expence he began to be tired of, and the Loss of his Ships and Horses was some Mortification to him, besides the *Saw Rajah* had made an Inroad into his Northern Borders, which made him incline very much towards a Peace, and accordingly he sent a *Brahman* on board the Commodore of the Fleet, to negotiate about a Peace. The Commodore heard him, and advised him to make his Overtures to Mr. *Taylor*; but he said, that the *Rajah* would by no Means consent to treat with him, complaining, that he was not only the Occasion of that War, but even, before the War, had done some Detriment to him and his Subjects, for receiving the Company's Pepper above one hundred Miles from the Factory. He made the Servants that went to receive the Pepper, take certain Quantities to sell out by Retail in his Villages, to the utter Ruin of many poor Inhabitants, that had no other Way to get their Livelihood, but by huckstering, and because the Company's Agreement with his Forefathers and himself, gave them a free Trade in all his Dominions, he past all over, but was forced to relieve the poor *Botuckers* or Shop keepers, who before could pay him Taxes; however we being tired of War as well as he, by the Mediation of a *Seid*, who was a Friend to both Parties, in ten Days after the first Overture was made, Peace was proclaimed on easy Terms for both Parties.

THERE is one Trick that the Priests yearly put upon the People in this Country, that would puzzle the best Merry-andrews in *Europe* to imitate, and that is, about the latter End of *May*, or the Beginning of *June*, there is a Feast celebrated to the infernal Gods, with a Divination or Conjururation to know the Fate of the ensuing Crop of Corn. The Ceremony I saw here, and at other Places on the Coast of *Canara*. The Priest having persuaded some

Fools

Fools to bear a Part in the Farce, proclaim the Feast to be on such a Day, at a certain Grove, where several thousands of People assemble, and in the Middle of the Grove is placed a black Stone of three or four hundred Weight, without any designed Shape, but some Places bedaubed with red Lead mixt in Oil, to serve for a Mouth, Eyes and Ears, and a little earthen Pot of Fire placed before the Stone, and a Girl about ten Years of Age to attend it.

SOME Priests, all naked, except a Bit of Cloth to hide their Privities, run and dance round the Stone and Fire for half an Hour, like mad Men, making strange Distortions in their Phizes, and now and then bellowing like Calves. And this was the first Scene. Those Priests had erected a Scaffold on two Axle-trees, that had Trucks fitted for them like the Carriage of Ship Guns. In the Middle of the Scaffold (which might be about fifteen Foot long, and as broad) was erected a Piece of Wood about fifteen Foot high, with a Notch cut in the upper End, like the Cheeks of a Ship's Pump, with Holes bored for a Bolt to pass through, as Pump Cheeks have. A Tree hewn for their Purpose, about forty Foot long, was laid about the Middle in the Notch, and a Bolt passing through the Cheeks and that Tree, like a Pump-brake. At one End of the Tree were placed two cross Pieces, one at the very End, and the other about four Foot within it. Each of those cross Pieces were about four Foot long, and, at the other End, had a Rope fastened to it. And this was the Vehicle for the Actors to hang on for a Mile or two.

THE Actors presenting themselves to the Priests, being four in Number, drest as the Priests were; only on their Heads, Crowns were made round their Temples, of Sugar-cane Leaves, open at the Top, like ducal Crowns. The Priests brought two Tenterhooks, such as the Butchers in *Britain* hang their Meat on, for each Actor, and, after some ridiculous Ceremony, hook'd them on each Side of the Back-Bone, a little above the Kidnies. Those Hooks had Cords fast to them, so they went dancing round the Stone, and the Priest holding their Strings fast, and, after two Minutes Dancing, they came tamely to the End of the Tree, where the cross Pieces were fastened, and one was tied up to each End of the cross Pieces, and the Mob

Mob was ready to hawl down the other End, and fastened it to the End of the Scaffold, and the foolish Fellows were hung up by the Back, above ten Yards from the Ground. The Populace broke some old Cocoa-nuts on the Scaffold, and some hundreds of them got hold of the Ropes fastened to the Scaffold, and hawled it over plowed Ground, above a Mile, to another Grove; and the Girl with the Pot of Fire on her Head, walking all the Way before. When they came to the End of their Journey, they where let down, and going into the Grove, where was placed another black Stone Pagod, the Girl set her Fire before it, and run stark mad for a Minute or two, and then fell in a Swoon, and in that she lay sweating and foaming at the Mouth prodigiously. When she grew mad, the Men fell flat on the Ground before the Image, and then arose after she fell in her Trance. She continued immoveable about a Quarter of an Hour, and then awoke, and seemed to be very sick. The Priests interrogated her about what she had seen and heard from the terrestrial Gods, and she gave them a satisfactory Answer, on which they all bowed to the Image, and put their Hand on a Cow that was there ready, dedicated to the Image; and so all departed satisfied.

ON sight of the new Moon in *August* they have another Piece of Superstition, in a Feast dedicated to the Sea, for the prosperous Navigation of the ensuing Season. They have the Effigies of the God *Gunnies*, which is a Man's Body, with an Elephant's Head, clapt cleverly on his Shoulders, and carried in Procession to a River's Side, and thrown into the River, upon which, all Rivers who have Bars are opened for Navigation.

THERE are a Set of *Brabmans* in this Country called *Buts*, they study Astrology, and are in great Repute for their exemplary innocent Lives, and Skill in prophesying. In the Year 1684, one *Moam But* told some Things very surprising, when Mr. *Walsel* was Chief for the *English* at *Carwar*.

IN the Space of three Years no *English* Ship from *Europe* had called there, and the Gentlemen longing for one, and *Moam But* coming to visit the Chief, Mr. *Walsel* ask'd him if he could tell when a Ship from *Europe* would call there.

there. He answered, he could tell, and musing a little While, told, that on the same Day forty Days, which happened to fall out on a *Sunday*, one would arrive, and that she was, at that Time, at Anchor at an Island on this Side of the Cape of *Good-hope*, taking in Refreshments. The Chief told him, if he prophesied true, he would present him with as much scarlet Cloth as would make him a Coat. The *But* answered, that he thank'd him, but that neither of them would live to see her arrive, and therefore advised Mr. *Walsel* to set his House in Order; and that, to prove some Part of the Prophecy true, the *But* himself should die ten Days after the Day he prophesied, and that Mr. *Walsel* should die so many Days alter. Accordingly the *But* died, which put the other's Mind out of Order, till the Day of his Death came, and that Morning Mr. *Walsel* said, he believed the Conjuror was out in his Reckoning, for he never was in better Health in his Days; but, after Dinner, he had an apoplectick Fit, that carried him off. And the Ship's Pinnace came ashore at the Factory Gate that Noon that the *But* told she should arrive. The Ship was the *Mexico Merchant*, commanded by Captain *Roger Paxton*.

THE pretty nimble female Dancers at *Carwar* are not so by Choice; but all Trades and Occupations being listed into Tribes, none can marry out of their own Tribe; and, as it fortun'd, the Originals of this Tribe were Ladies that could not be confined to one Husband, and so would not marry. Their Posterity are not suffered to marry, because there are no Men in their Tribe allowed. When the Lasses bring forth Children, the Males are brought up Soldiers, and the Females are learned to dance, and what they earn by dancing goes to the *Rajah*, except a small Share for the Girl's Maintenance. What they get by their Kindness to Strangers is all their own; and I have seen some have very fine Clothes and Jewels acquired by their Trade.

THE *Portuguese* have an Island called *Arjediva* (before mentioned) about two Miles from *Batcoal*. They fortified it, for fear that the *Masfat Arabs* or the *Sevajeas* should have settled on it; if they had, they might have incommoded the *Goa Fleet* that goes yearly to *Canara* for Corn.

AT

AT the Mouth of *Carwar* River, are two fortified Islands, called *Shipe* and *Gur*. One is fortified by Walls built round it, and some Guns mounted on it. The other is steril and dry, and not worth walling. They both belong to the *Rajah* of *Sundab*. There are some Islands lie athwart the Mouth of the Bay, that make the Harbour of *Carwar*, but none inhabited. The Bay has two large Entrances for Shipping. That to the North is clear from Danger; but the South Chanel has a sharp Rock like a Pyramid in the Middle of it, that several large Ships have struck on, for there is too much Water on it for small Ships to be frightened by it, having at least fifteen Foot Water on its Top.

IN *Canara* there are several Customs peculiar to itself, and many of them are spread abroad to remote Countries. Here it was, that the Custom of Wives burning on the same Pile with their deceased Husbands had its Beginning. It is reported, that before the *Brahmans* invented this Law Poison was so well known and practised, that the least Quarrel that happened between a married Couple, cost the Husband his Life, and this Law put a great Stop to it; and now Custom so far prevails, that if any faint-hearted Lady has not Courage enough to accompany her Spouse to the other World, she is forthwith shaved and degraded, and obliged to serve all her Husband's Family in all Kinds of Drudgery.

I HAVE seen several burned. In this Country they dig a Pit about ten Foot long, and six broad, and fill it with Logs of Wood. One great Piece is set at the Brim of the Pit, ready to fall down on pulling a bit of String. When all is ready, there is good Store of Oil or Butter thrown on the Wood, and then the Husband's Corps is placed about the Middle of the Pile, and Fire set to it, which blazes in an Instant. Then the Spouse took her Leave of all Friends and Acquaintances, and Drums, Trumpets and Hautboys being playing cheerfully, she walked three or four Times round the Pile, which, by this Time, was all in a great Blaze, and then leaps in on the Corps. As soon as ever she leapt in, a Priest drew the String, and down fell the great Log of Wood, at least five hundred Pound

Pound Weight, over her Body, and all consumed together.

THIS Country of *Canara* is generally governed by a Lady, who keeps her Court at a Town called *Baydour*, two Days Journey from the Sea. She may marry whom she pleases; but her Husband never gets the Title of *Rajah*, tho' if she has Sons, the eldest of them does; but neither Husband nor Son have any Thing to do with the Management of the Government, while she lives: Nor are the Queens obliged to burn with their Husbands. The Subjects of this Country observe the Laws so well, that Robbery or Murder are hardly heard of among them. And a Stranger may pass through the Country without being ask'd where he is going, or what Business he has.

No Man is permitted in this Country to ride on Horses, Mules or Elephants, but Officers of State, or Troopers, tho' we are allowed to ride on Oxen or Buffaloes: Nor none are permitted to have Umbrellas carried over them by Servants, but must carry them themselves if the Sun or Rain offend them; but in all Things else there is Liberty and Property.

THE next Sea-port, to the Southward of *Onoar*, is *Batacola*, which has the *Vestigia* of a very large City, standing on a little River, about four Miles from the Sea. There is nothing of it left now worth noticing, but ten or eleven small Pagods or Temples covered with Copper and Stone. The Country produces good Quantities of Pepper; and the *English* Company had a Factory there: But, about the Year 1670, an *English* Ship coming there to lade, had a fine *English* Bull-dog, which the Chief of the Factory begged of the Captain.

AFTER the Ship was gone, the Factory, which consisted of eighteen Persons, were going a hunting, and carried the Bull-dog with them; and passing through the Town, the Dog seized a Cow devoted to a Pagod, and killed her. Upon which the Priests raised a Mob, who murdered the whole Factory; but some Natives, that were Friends to the *English*, made a large Grave, and buried them all in it. The Chief of *Carwar* sent a Stone to be put on the Grave, with an Inscription, *That this is the Burial-place of John Best, with seventeen other English Men,*

Men, who were sacrificed to the Fury of a mad Priesthood, and an enraged Mob. The *English* never resettled there since; but often buy Pepper there.

THE next Town, to the Southward of *Batacola*, is *Barceloar*, standing on the Banks of a broad River, about four Miles from the Sea. The Country abounds in Rice, having in many Places two Crops in a Year, by the Advantage they have of some Lakes at the Feet of the Mountains of *Gatti*, whose Waters being confined by Sluices are let out at convenient Times to water their Rice Fields. The *Dutch* have a Factory here, only to buy up Rice for their Garrisons on the *Malabar* Coast. It stands about a Mile from the River's Mouth, that has a Bar of thirteen or fourteen Foot Water on it at spring Tides, and has a Castle on its North Side for its Guard, that none may go in or out without Leave.

MANGULORE is the greatest Mart for Trade in all the *Canara* Dominions. It has the Conveniency of one River produced by three that come into it by different Ways, viz. from the North, South and East, all proceeding from the great Rains and Dews that fall from the Mountains of *Gatti*, which lie twenty five or thirty Leagues up in the Country, and are the inland Bounds of the *Canara* Dominions. Those three Rivers join about a Mile from the Sea, and, at *Mangulore*, disembogue at one Mouth into the common Receptory of Rivers.

C H A P. XVIII.

Observations on the Samorin and his Country, and of Couchin; their Religion, Laws and Customs, Product of the Country and its Commerce; an Account of their War with the Dutch, begun in the Year 1708, and the Consequences of it.

THE *Samorin's* Country reaches along the Sea-coast from *Ticori* to *Cbitwa*, about twenty two Leagues. THE Product of the *Samorin's* Country is Pepper in Abundance, *Bettle-nut* and *Cocoa-nut*, and that Tree produceth,

duceth *Jaggery*, a Kind of Sugar, and *Copera*, or the Kernels of the Nut dried, and out of those Kernels there is a very clear Oil exprest; also Sandel-wood, Iron, *Cassia-lignum* and Timber for Building, all which Commodities they export to the great Benefit of the Inhabitants.

MANY strange Customs were observed in this Country in former Times, and some very odd ones are still continued. It was an ancient Custom for the *Samorin* to reign but twelve Years, and no longer. If he died before his Term was expired, it saved him a troublesome Ceremony of cutting his own Throat, on a publick Scaffold erected for that Purpose. He first made a Feast for all his Nobility and Gentry, who are very numerous. After the Feast, he saluted his Guests, and went on the Scaffold, and very decently cut his own Throat in the View of the Assembly, and his Body was, a little while after, burned with great Pomp and Ceremony, and the Grandees elected a new *Samorin*. Whether that Custom was a religious or a civil Ceremony I know not, but it is now laid aside.

AND a new Custom is followed by the modern *Samorins*, that a Jubilee is proclaimed throughout his Dominions, at the End of twelve Years, and a Tent is pitched for him in a spacious Plain, and a great Feast is celebrated for ten or twelve Days with Mirth and Jollity, Guns firing Night and Day, so at the End of the Feast any four of the Guests that have a Mind to gain a Crown by a desperate Action, in fighting their Way through thirty or forty thousand of his Guards, and kill the *Samorin* in his Tent, he that kills him, succeeds him in his Empire.

In the Year 1695, one of those Jubilees happened, and the Tent pitched near *Pennany*, a Sea-port of his, about fifteen Leagues to the Southward of *Calecut*. There were but three Men that would venture on that desperate Action, who fell in, with Sword and Target, among the Guards, and, after they had killed and wounded many, were themselves killed. One of the *Desperadoes* had a Nephew of fifteen or sixteen Years of Age, that kept close by his Uncle in the Attack on the Guards, and, when he saw him fall, the Youth got through the Guards into the Tent,

Tent, and made a Stroke at his Majesty's Head, and had certainly dispatched him, if a large Brass Lamp which was burning over his Head, had not marred the Blow; but, before he could make another, he was killed by the Guards; and, I believe, the same *Samerin* reigns yet. I chanced to come that Time along the Coast, and heard the Guns for two or three Days and Nights successively.

WHEN the *Samerin* marries, he must not cohabit with his Bride till the *Nambourre* or chief Priest has enjoyed her, and, if he pleases, may have three Nights of her Company, because the first Fruits of her Nuptials must be an holy Oblation to the God she worships. And some of the Nobles are so complaisant as to allow the Clergy the same Tribute; but the common People cannot have that Compliment paid to them, but are forced to supply the Priests Places themselves. Any Women, except the first Quality, may marry twelve Husbands if they please, but cannot have more at one Time, and they must all be of her own *Cast* or Tribe, under Pain of Excommunication and Degradation of Honour, if she marries into a lower Tribe; and the Men are under the same Penalty if they transgress that Law, but they are not confined to a set Number of Wives, as the Women are to Husbands.

WHEN a Woman is married to the first of her Husbands, she has an House built for her own Conveniency, and that Husband cohabits with her till she takes a second, or so many as she is prescribed by Law, and the Husbands agree very well, for they cohabit with her in their Turns, according to their Priority of Marriage, ten Days, more or less, according as they can fix a Term among themselves, and he that cohabits with her, maintains her in all Things necessary, for his Time, so that she is plentifully provided for by a constant Circulation.

WHEN the Man that cohabits with her goes into her House, he leaves his Arms at the Door, and none dare remove them, or enter the House, on Pain of Death; but, if there are no Arms to guard the Door, any Acquaintance may freely visit her. And all the Time of Cohabitation she serves her Husband as Purveyor and Cook, and keeps his Clothes and Arms clean.

• WHEN

WHEN she proves with Child, she nominates its Father, who takes Care of its Education, after she has suckled it, and brought it to walk or speak; but the Children are never Heirs to their Fathers Estates, but the Father's Sister's Children are, and if there are none, then to the nearest in Consanguinity from his Grandmother. And this Custom is also practised among the *Mahometan Malabars*.

THERE are many Degrees or Dignities in the Church as well as in the State. The *Nambouries* are the first in both Capacities of Church and State, and some of them are Popes, being sovereign Princes in both. The *Brahmans* or *Bramanies* are the second in the Church only. The *Buts* or Magicians are next to them, and are in great Veneration. The *Nayrees* or Gentlemen are next, and are very numerous. The *Teyvees* are the Farmers of Cocoa-nut Trees, and are next to the Gentry. Merchants are of all Orders, except *Nambouries*, and are in some Esteem. The *Poulias* produce the Labourers and Mechanicks. They may marry into lower Tribes without Danger of Excommunication, and so may the *Muckwas* or Fishers, who, I think, are an higher Tribe than the *Poulias*, but the *Poulichees* are the lowest Order of human Creatures, and are excluded from the Benefit of human and divine Laws.

If a *Poulia* or *Teyvee* meet a *Nayer* on the Road, he must go aside to let his Worship pass by, lest the Air should be tainted, on Pain of a severe Chastisement, if not of Death; but the *Poulichees* are in a much worse State, for, by the Law, they are not permitted to converse with any other Tribe, nor can they wear any Sort of Cloth, but only a little Straw made fast before their Privities, with a Line round their Middle. They are not permitted to build Houses or Huts on the Ground, nor to inhabit the Plains where there is Corn Ground, but must dwell in Woods, and build on the Boughs of Trees, like Birds, with Grass and Straw. If accidentally they see any Body coming towards them, they will howl like Dogs, and run away, lest those of Quality should take Offence at their breathing in the same Air that they do. They are not permitted to till and sow the Ground, only in obscure Places

Places of the Woods they plant Fruits and Roots, whose Seeds they steal from the neighbouring Gardens in the Plains, in the Night, and if they are caught stealing, Death is their Punishment, on the Spot where they are taken, without any Form or Process of Law. When they want Food, they come to the Skirts of their Woods, and howl like Foxes, and the charitable *Poulias* and *Teyvees* relieve them with Rice boiled or raw, and some Cocoa-nuts and other Fruits, which they lay down in a convenient Place; and when their Benefactors come within twenty Paces of them with their Alms, they walk off, and let the *Poulichees* come to their Food, which they forthwith carry into the Woods. They are very swift in running, and cunning in catching wild Beasts and Fowl; but they have few or no Fish among the Mountains.

THE inferior Tribes have Liberty of Conscience in fancying their Deities, and worshipping them. I have seen, at many *Muckwas* Houses, a Stake of Wood, with a few Notches cut about it, and that Stake drove into the Ground, about two Foot of it being left above, and that is covered with some *Cadjans* or Cocoa-nut Tree Leaves, and is a Temple and a God to that Family. Some worship the first Animal they see in the Morning, let it be Cat, Dog or Serpent, and they pay their Adorations to it the whole Day. Others choose a Tree of their Father's or some dear Friend's planting, and that he gets consecrated, and it then becomes his God; but they all believe the Immortality of the Soul and Transmigration, and the Adoration of the great God, of whom they have many wild Opinions.

THE great God's Image they can neither fancy nor make, but believe, that he sent an huge large Fowl from Heaven, that laid a swinging Egg in the Sea, and, in Process of Time, it was hatch'd by the Sun, and forth came the World, with all Animals, Vegetables, &c. that inhabit it now, and that poor *Adam* was set alone on the Top of an high Mountain in *Zealoan*, which is called to this Day, *Baba Adam*, from that Tradition, but, being tired of so lonesome a Life, he descended into the Plain, and there he met with *Hevab*, whom he presently knew

to be his Kinswoman, and they struck Hands, and were there married.

THE great Men of the Clergy build Temples, but they are neither large nor beautiful. Their Images are all black, and deformed, according as they fancy the infernal Gods to be shaped, who, they believe, have some Hand in governing the World, particularly about benign or malignant Seasons that happen in the Productions or Sterility of the Earth, for which Reason they pay a lateral Adoration to them. Their Images are all placed in dark Temples, and are never seen but by Lamp-light, that burns continually before them.

WHEN criminal Cases are brought before the Magistrate that want the Evidence of Witnesses to support them, the Trial of Truth is by Ordeal. The accused Person is obliged to put his bare Hand into a Pot of boiling Oil, and if any Blister appears, the Party is found guilty; and I have been credibly informed, both by *English* and *Dutch* Gentlemen, as well as Natives, that had seen the Trial, that the innocent Person has not been in the least affected with the scalding Oil, and then the Punishment due to the Crime, is inflicted on the Accuser.

THE *Samorin* entered into a War with the *Dutch East-India Company* in the Year 1714, and the Chief of the *English* Factory, who was a privy Counsellor to the *Samorin*, had a great Hand in promoting it. The Quarrel began about a small Fort that the *Dutch* were building at *Chitwa*. The Ground whereon it stood was a desert Morass by the River's Side, and was claimed both by the King of *Couchin* and the *Samorin*. The King of *Couchin* made over his Claim to the *Dutch*, who made small Account who had the best Title, but carried on their Work with Diligence, the *Samorin*, with, and by the Advice of his Council, got some of his Soldiers to be entered into the *Dutch* Service, under the Disguise of daily Labourers to carry Stone, Mortar, &c. for building the Fort, and to take their Opportunity to lie in Ambuscade in a Morass overgrown with Reeds near the Fort.

Two *Dutch* Lieutenants, who had the Overseeing of the Work, were one Evening diverting themselves with a Game at Tables in a Guard Room about half a Mile from

from the Fort. They had let some of their *Dutch* Soldiers go straggling abroad, and the Sentinels were careless under the Security of Friendship, which gave the disguised Workmen an Opportunity to kill the Sentinels, and make their Signal for the Ambuscade, who, in a few Minutes, took the half-built Fort. The Lieutenants came presently after, with what Forces they had, to retake it, but one being killed dead in advancing, the other thought it impracticable to attack greater Forces within than he had without, and so embarked, with his Men, on board small Boats for *Couchin*, about ten Leagues from *Chitwa*.

I FORTUNED to be at *Couchin* when he and his Men arrived, and by a Court Martial, he was sentenced to be shot to Death, which Sentence I saw executed. The *Samorin*'s People erected a Flag-staff, and hoisted the *English* Flag, which the *English* Chief had sent by the Ambuscade, and immediately after set about demolishing the Walls, that were built of the Fort, and carried off some great Guns belonging to the *Dutch*. And this was the Prelude of the War.

I KNEW pretty well the Strength of the Antagonists; what Power the *Samorin* had, and what Powers the Kings of *Couchin*, *Paaru* and *Porcat* could assist the *Dutch* with, and I wrote to the Chief the Resolutions of the *Dutch*, and advised him not to embark himself or his Masters in that Affair, because War was a different Province from his: He took my Advice so ill, that he wrote to *Bombay*, that I was in the *Dutch* Interest, opposite to the Right Honourable Company, and also to his Masters in *England*, as if the *Dutch* Company could need my Interest, Advice or Assistance; but, as I had forewarned him, he found the *Samorin* was forced, after three Years War, to conclude a dishonourable and disadvantageous Peace, wherein he was obliged to build up the Fort he had demolished, to pay the *Dutch* Company seven *per Cent.* on all the Pepper exported out of his Dominions for ever, and to pay a large Sum towards the Charges of the War. Some Part of the Money, I believe, he borrowed.

WHETHER OUR *East-India* Company got or lost by that War, I know not, nor will I pretend to pass Judgment on their Affairs, but this I know, that the Chief lost a good

Milch Cow, for the Chiefs of *Calecut*, for many Years had vended between five hundred and a thousand Chests of *Beagal Ophium* yearly up in the inland Countries, where it is very much used. The Water Carriage up the River being cheap and secure, the Price of *Ophium* high, and the Price of Pepper low, so that their Profits were great both Ways; for, if I mistake not, the Company paid the highest Prices for their Pepper, and the *Nayers* in the Company's Pay, were employed about the Chiefs Affairs; and by the unexpected Turn of Affairs caused by the War, that Trade is fallen intirely into the *Dutch Company's* Hands, and it will be a very difficult Task to get it out again.

THE *English* Company were formerly so much respected at *Calecut*, that if any Debtor went into their Factory for Protection, none durst presume to go there to disturb them; but that Indulgence has been sometimes made an ill Use of, to the Detriment of *English* private Traders.

THEY have a good Way of arresting People for Debt, *viz.* There is a proper Person sent with a small Stick from the Judge, who is generally a *Brahman*, and when that Person finds the Debtor, he draws a Circle round him with that Stick and charges him, in the King and Judge's Name, not to stir out of it till the Creditor is satisfied either by Payment or Surety; and it is no less than Death for the Debtor to break Prison by going out of the Circle.

THEY make use of no Pens, Ink and Paper, but write on Leaves of Flags or Reeds that grow in Morasses by the Sides of Rivers. They are generally about eighteen Inches long, and one and an half broad, tapering at both Ends, and a small Hole at one End for a String to pass through. It is thicker than our Royal Paper, and very tough. They write with the Point of a Bodkin made for that Purpose, holding the Leaf athwart their left Thumb End over the foremost Finger, and what they have to write is indented, or rather engraven into the Leaf, but it does not pierce the Leaf above half Way through. And on two or three of these Leaves they'll write as much as we can on a Sheet of small Paper. All their Records are written so on Leaves, and they are strung and rolled up in a Scroll, and hung some Time in Smoke, and then lock'd up in their Cabinets.

nets. And I have seen some such Leaves Smoke-dried, that, they told me, were above a thousand Years old.

In the Year 1703, about the Middle of *February*, I called at *Calecut* in my Way to *Surat*, and standing into the Road, I chanced to strike on some of the Ruins of the sunken Town built by the *Portuguese* in former Times. Whether that Town was 'swallowed up by an Earthquake, as some affirm, or whether it was undermined by the Sea, I will not determine; but so it was, that in six Fathoms at the main Mast, my Ship, which drew twenty one Foot Water, sat fast afore the Chefs-tree. The Sea was smooth, and in a short Time, we got off without Damage.

THE unfortunate Captain *Green*, who was afterwards hanged in *Scotland*, came on board of my Ship at Sun-set, very much overtaken with Drink, and several of his Men came in the same Condition. He told me, that he had some small Arms, Powder, Shot, and Glass-ware to dispose of, and asked me if I would take them off his Hands at a very reasonable Rate. I told him, that next Morning I would see them, and perhaps be a Merchant for them. He told me that the Arms and Ammunition were what was left of a large Quantity that he had brought from *England*, but had been at *Don Mascherenas*, and *Madagascar*, and had disposed of the rest to good Advantage, among the Pirates, and had carried some Pirates from *Don Mascherenas* to *St. Mary's*.

ABOUT two Leagues to the Southward of *Calecut*, is a fine River called *Baypare*, capable to receive Ships of three or four hundred Tuns. It has a small Island off its Mouth about half a Mile from the Shore, that keeps it safe from the great Seas brought on that Coast by the South-west Monsoons. Four Leagues more southerly is *Tannore*, a Town of small Trade, inhabited by *Mahometans*. They are a little free State, but pay an Acknowledgment to the *Samorin*. Five Leagues to the Southward of *Tannore*, is *Pennany*, mentioned before. It has the Benefit of a River, and was formerly a Place of Trade. The *French* and *English* had their Factories there, but were removed about the Year 1670. And about four Leagues more to the Southward is *Cbitu a* River, which bounds the *Samorin's* Dominions to the South.

THE King of *Couchin's* Dominions are next in Course along the Sea-coast, and reach from *Cbitwa* about twenty four Leagues to the Southward. There are so many Rivulets that run off the Mountains of *Gatti*, that they reckon above one thousand Islands made by their Streams. *Cranganore* is about five Leagues to the South of *Cbitwa*. The *Dutch* have here a small Fort, which retains the Name of *Cranganore*. In Times of old it bore the Name of a Kingdom, and was a Republick of *Jews*, who were once so numerous, that they could reckon about eighty thousand Families, but, at present, are reduced to four thousand. They have a Synagogue at *Couchin*, not far from the King's Palace, about two Miles from the City, in which are carefully kept their Records, engraven on Copper-plates in *Hebrew* Characters; and when any of the Characters decay, they are new cut, so that they can shew their own History from the Reign of *Nebuchadnezzar* to this present Time.

THE first *Europeans* that settled in *Couchin* were the *Portuguese*, and there they built a fine City on the River's Side, about three Leagues from the Sea; but the Sea gaining on the Land yearly, it is not now above an hundred Paces from it. It stands so pleasantly, that the *Portuguese* had a common Saying, *that China was a Country to get Money in, and Couchin was a Place to spend it in*; for the great Numbers of Canals made by the Rivers and Islands, make Fishing and Fowling very diverting. And the Mountains are well stored with wild Game.

ON the Inside of *Baypin* Island, there is an old Fort built by the *Portuguese*, called *Palliapore*, to inspect all Boats that go between *Cranganore* and *Couchin*. And five Leagues up the Rivulets is a *Romish* Church called *Verapoli*, served by *French* and *Italian* Priests; and when a Bishop comes into those Parts, it is the Place of his Residence. The *Padre* Superior of *Verapoli* can raise, upon Occasion, four thousand Men, all *Christians* of the Church of *Rome*; but there are many more *St. Thomas's Christians* that do not communicate with those of *Rome*, and some *Portuguese*, called *Topases*, that communicate with neither, for they will be served by none but *Portuguese* Priests, because they indulge them more in their Villainy, and Ab-

olutions

solutions from Crimes are easier purchased from the *Portuguese* than from the *French* or *Italians*, who are generally much more polite and learned than the *Portuguese*, who are permitted to take the Habit of some Order without being examined whether the Novice has the common Qualifications of School-learning.

ABOUT two Leagues farther up towards the Mountains, on the Side of a small, but deep River, is a Place call'd *Firdalgo*, where the Inhabitants of *Couchin* generally assemble to refresh themselves in the troublesome hot Months of *April* and *May*. The Banks and Bottom of the River is clean Sand, and the Water so clear, that a small Peeble Stone may be seen at the Bottom in three Fathoms Water. Every Company makes Choice of a Place by the River's Side, and pitch their Tents, and drive some small Stakes before their Tents, in the River, on which they hang up Clothes for Blinds, to hide the Ladies when they bath; but most of them swim dextrously, and swim under Water through the Stakes, into the open River, where the Men are diverting themselves, and there they dive, and play many comical mad Tricks, till Breakfast or Supper call them ashore, for it is in Mornings and Evenings that they bath and swim; for in the Heat of the Day the Sun scorches. Very often the Ladies lay Wagers of Treats with the Gentlemen, about their Swiftnels and Dexterity in swimming, but generally the Ladies win the Wagers, tho', I believe, if the Men would use their Art and Strength, they might win the Prize. The Heat of the Day they pass with a Game at Cards or Tables for Treats, by which Means they fare sumptuously every Day, sometimes in one Tent, and sometimes in another; and, at Night, every Family sleeps in their own Tent, on the soft clean Sand, Males and Females promiscuously.

THE Water of this Country, near the Sea-coast, from *Cranganore* to *St. Andreas*, which is about twelve Leagues, has a bad Quality of making the constant Drinkers of it have swell'd Legs. Some it affects in one Leg, and some in both. I have seen Legs above a Yard about at the Ankle. It causes no Pain, but itching; nor does the thick Leg seem havier than the small one to those who have them: But the *Dutch* at *Couchin*, to prevent that

Malady, send Boats daily to *Verapoli*, to lade with small portable Casks of ten or twelve *English* Gallons, to serve the City. The Company's Servants have their Water free of Charges, but private Persons pay Sixpence *per* Cask, if it is brought to their Houses; and yet, for all that Precaution, I have seen both *Dutch* Men and *Women* troubled with that Malady. And no Cure has been yet found to heal or prevent it.

Cochin is wash'd by the greatest Outlet on this Coast, and being so near the Sea, makes it strong by Nature; but Art has not been wanting to strengthen it. The City built by the *Portuguese* was about a Mile and an half long, and a Mile broad. The *Dutch* took it from the *Portuguese* about the Year 1660, when *Heilloff Van Ghonx* was General of the *Dutch* Forces by Land, and Commodore of a Fleet by Sea. The Insolence of the *Portuguese* had made several neighbouring Princes become their Enemies, who joined with the *Dutch* to drive them out of their Neighbourhood, and the King of *Cochin* particularly assisted with twenty thousand Men. The *Dutch* had not invested the Town long before *Van Ghonx* received Advice of a Peace concluded between *Portugal* and *Holland*; but that he kept a Secret to himself. He therefore made a Breach in the weakest Part of the Wall, and made a furious Assault for three Days and Nights, without Intermission, and relieved his Assailants every three Hours; but the *Portuguese* keeping their Men continually fatigued in Duty all the while, and finding Danger of being taken by Storm, capitulated, and delivered up their City. In the Town there were four hundred *Topases*, who had done the *Portuguese* good Service in defending the City, but were not comprehended in the Treaty. As soon as they knew of that Omission, and the Cruelty and Licentiousness of the *Dutch* Soldiery in *India*, they drew up in a Parade, within the Port that the *Portuguese* were to go out at, and the *Dutch* to enter in, and swore, that if they had not the same Favours and Indulgence that were granted to the *Portuguese*, they would massacre them all, and set Fire to the Town. The *Dutch* General knew his own Interest too well to deny so just a Demand, so he granted what they desired, and moreover to take those, who had a Mind to
serve

serve in the *Dutch* Service, into Pay, which many of them did.

THE very next Day after the *Dutch* had Possession, came a Frigate from *Goa*, with the Articles of the Peace made with *Holland*, and the *Portuguese* complained loudly of the General's unfair Dealings, but were answered, that the *Portuguese* had acted the same Farce on the *Dutch*, at their taking of *Pharnabuke* in *Brasil*, a few Years before. The *English* had then a Factory in the City of *Cochin*, but the *Dutch* ordered them to remove with their Effects, which accordingly they did to their Factory at *Pennany*.

As soon as the *Dutch* became Masters of the City, they thought it was too large, and so contracted it to what it now is, being hardly one Tenth of what it was in the *Portuguese* Time. It is about six hundred Paces long, and two hundred broad, fortified with seven large Bations, and Curtains so thick, that two Rows of large Trees are planted on them, for Shades in the hot Times. Some Streets built by the *Portuguese* are still standing, with a Church for the *Dutch* Service, and a Cathedral for a Ware-house. The Commodore or Governor's House, which is a stately Structure, is the only House built after the *Dutch* Mode, and the River washes some Part of its Walls, and a Canal cut from the River up to the Middle of the City, that passes close by the Governor's House.

THEIR Flag-staff is placed on the Steeple of the old Cathedral, on a Mast of seventy five Foot high, and a Staff a-top of it about sixty Foot, which is the highest I ever saw; and the Flag may be seen above seven Leagues off. The Garrison generally consists of three hundred effective Men: And from Cape *Comerin* upwards they are allowed, in all their Forts and Factories, five hundred Soldiers. and one hundred Seamen, all *Europeans*, besides some *Topases*, and the Militia. They have their Stores of Rice from *Barsalore*, because the *Malabar* Rice will not keep above three Months out of the Husk, but in the Husk it will keep a Year.

THE Country produces great Quantities of Pepper, but lighter than that which grows more northerly. Their Woods afford good Teak for Building, and *Angelique* and *Parwbeet* for making large Chefts and Cabinets, which are carried

carried all over the West Coasts of *India*. They have also Iron and Steel in Plenty, and Bees Wax for exporting. Their Seas afford them Abundance of good Fish of several Kinds, which, with those that are caught in their Rivers, make them very cheap.

THE King of *Couchin*, who at best is but a Vassal to the *Dutch*, has a Palace built of Stone about half a League from the *Dutch* City; and there is a straggling Village not far from the Palace, that bears the Name of *Old-Couchin*. It has a *Bazaar* or Market in it, where all Commodities of the Country's Product are sold; but there are no Curiosities to be found in it. The King's ordinary Residence is at another Palace, six Leagues to the Southward of *Couchin*, and two from *St. Andrea*; but he keeps but a very small Court.

MUDBAY is a Place, that, I believe, few can parallel in the World. It lies on the Shore of *St. Andrea*, about half a League out in the Sea, and is open to the wide Ocean, and has neither Island nor Bank to break off the Force of the Billows, which come rolling with great Violence on all other Parts of the Coast, in the South-west Monsoons, but, on this Bank of Mud, lose themselves in a Moment, and Ships lie on it, as secure as in the best Harbour, without Motion or Disturbance. It reaches about a Mile along Shore, and has shifted from the Northward, in thirty Years, about three Miles. *St. Andrea* is only a Village, with a Church in it dedicated to *St. Andrew*, and is served by *St. Thomas's* Priests, who generally are both poor and illiterate. About two Leagues to the Southward of *St. Andrea* begin the Dominions to *Forcat*, or

PORKAH. It is of small Extent, reaching not above four Leagues along the Sea-coast. The Prince is poor, having but little Trade in his Country, tho' it was a free Port for Pirates when *Evory* and *Kid* robbed on the Coast of *India*; but, since that Time, the Pirates infest the northern Coasts, finding the richest Prizes amongst the *Mocha* and *Persia* Traders. The *Dutch* keep a Factory at *Porkab*, but of small Consequence.

COILCOILOAN is another little Principality contiguous to *Porkab*, where the *Dutch* keep also a Factory. And next to it is,

COILOAN

COILOAN another small Principality. It has the Benefit of a River, which is the southermost Outlet of the *Cochin* Islands; and the *Dutch* have a small Fort within a Mile of it, on the Sea-shore, which they took from the *Portuguese* when they took *Cochin*. It keeps a Garrison of thirty Men, and its Trade is inconsiderable.

ERWA lies two Leagues to the Southward of *Cailoan*, where the *Danes* have a small Factory standing on the Sea Side. It is a thatch'd House of a very mean Aspect, and their Trade answers every Way to the Figure their Factory makes.

AUYENGO lies two Leagues to the Southward of *Erwa*, a Fort belonging to the *English*, built at the Company's Charge in the Year 1695. It stands on a sandy Foundation, and is naturally fortified by the Sea on one Side, and a little River on the other. It is in the Dominions of the Queen of *Attinga*, to whom it pays Ground-rent. Before it was built, the *English* had two small Factories in her Country to the South of *Aujengo*. One was called *Brinjan*, the other *Ruttera*; but, being naked Places, were subject to the Insults of Courtiers, whose Avarice is seldom or never satisfied: But I wonder why the *English* built their Fort in that Place, for there is not a Drop of good Water for drinking within a League of it; and the Road has a foul Bottom for anchoring, and continually a great Surf on the Shore, when they might as well have built it near the *Red Cliffs* to the Northward, from whence they have their Water for drinking, and where there is good Anchor-ground, and a tolerable good Landing-place for Boats in the North-east Monsoons. The Country produces good Quantities of Pepper and long Cloth, as fine as any made in *India*.

WHEN our Factories were at *Ruttera* and *Brinjan*, they sent a yearly Present to the Queen of *Attinga*, whose Court is about four Leagues within Land from *Aujengo*. In the Year 1685, when the Present was sent, a young beautiful *English* Gentleman had the Honour to present it to her black Majesty; and as soon as the Queen saw him, she fell in Love with him, and next Day made Proposals of Marriage to him, but he modestly refused so great an Honour; However, to please her Majesty, he stayed at
Court

Court a Month or two, and it is reported, treated her with the same Civility, as *Solomon* did the Queen of *Ethiopia*, or *Alexander the Great* did the *Amazonian* Queen, and satisfied her so well, that when he left her Court she made him some Presents.

ABOUT the Year 1720, there were some civil Broils in this Country, and the annual Present being demanded, the *English* Chief refused to pay it to any but to the Queen herself, tho' those that demanded it assured him, that they came to demand it by the Queen's Order, and offered their Receipt of it in her Name; but he, being more positive than wise, continued obstinate in his Refusal, upon which the Queen gave him an Invitation to Court; and he, to appear great there, carried two of his Council, and some others of the Factory, with most Part of the Military belonging to the Garrison, and, by Stratagem, they were all cut off, except a few black Servants, whose Heels and Language saved them from the Massacre, and they brought the sad News of the Tragedy.

TEGNAPATAM, where the *Dutch* have a Factory, lies about twelve Leagues to the Southward of *Aujengo*. That Country produces Pepper, and coarse Cloth called *Catchas*: But *Colicha*, which lies between the Middle and West Point of the Cape *Comerin*, affords the best Cloth of that Sort, besides *Tamarinds* in Abundance; but the Road is foul. It also produces Salt; but neither the *English* nor *Dutch* have any Commerce or Traffick there. And close by *Colicha*, at the said middle Point, there is a small Cave or Harbour that can secure small Vessels from all Winds and Weather. It has a clean Sandy Bottom, and three Fathoms in it at low Water. Four Leagues off the Cape, in the Sea, there is a small smooth Rock, bare at low Water, and shews itself like the Back of a Whale. About one hundred Paces from it, on all Sides, there is twenty-eight Fathom Water; and the Sea seldom breaks on it, which makes it the more dangerous. I knew a Ship that rubbed her Side on it, before those on board could discover it, tho' they look'd out for it.

MANAPAAR lies to the North-eastward of Cape *Comerin*, about eight Leagues distant, and the *Dutch* have a Factory there, standing on an high Ground about a Mile

Mile from the Sea. And about ten Leagues more northerly is *Tutecareen*, a *Dutch* Colony, tho' but small.

TUTECAREEN has a good safe Harbour, by the Benefit of some small Islands that lie off it. That Country produces much Cotton-cloth, tho' none fine; but they both stain and dye it for Exportation. This Colony superintends a Pearl Fishery, that lies a little to the Northward of them, which brings the *Dutch* Company twenty thousand Pounds yearly Tribute, according to common Report. There are several Villages on the Sea-shore between *Tutecareen* and *Coil*, but none in any Account for Traffick. This *Coil* is a Promontory that sends over a Reef of Rocks to the Island of *Zeloan*, called commonly *Adam's Bridge*.

THAT Reef of Rocks has so little Water on them, that the smallest Boats cannot pass but at an Island called *Manaar*, which lies almost Midway between *Zeloan* and *Coil*, and that Passage has not above six Foot Water on it, so that none but small Vessels can pass that Way; and they must unlade, and pay Customs to the *Dutch* who reside at *Manaar*, and, after the Vessel is halled over the Bridge, they take in their Cargo again.

THE *Dutch* have fortified *Manaar*, and make use of it for a Prison for *Indian* Princes, whom they can overpower or circumvene, when they are suspected of making Treaties contrary to their Interest, or to such as would willingly re-assume their lost Freedom, by breaking the unjust Yoke of the Company's Tyranny, perhaps drawn on themselves by too much Faith or Incredulity; for that honest Company has always had a Maxim, first to foment Quarrels between *Indian* Kings and Princes, and then piously pretend to be Mediators, or Arbitrators of their Differences, and always cast in something into the Scale of Justice to those whose Countries produce the best Commodities for the Company's Use, and lend the Assistance of their Arms to him who is so qualified by the Product above mentioned, and, at the Conclusion of the War, make the poor conquered Prince pay their Charges for assisting the Conqueror; and, when all is made up, and Treaties of Peace ready to be signed, then the Conqueror, their dear Ally and Friend, must suffer them to possess the

the best Sea-ports, and fortify the most proper and convenient Places of his Country, and must forbid all Nations Traffick but their dear *Dutch* Friends, under Pain of having the Company's Arms turned against them, in Conjunction with some other potent Enemy to the deluded Conqueror.

THE King of *Charta Sourî*, on the Island of *Java*, is a fresh Instance of the Truth of what I relate. In the Year 1704, I saw him at *Samarang*, a Sea-port on the said Island, in great Splendor, and in high Esteem with the *Dutch* Commodore; but in the Year 1707, he fell under the Displeasure of the General and Council of *Patavia*, and in 1708, falling into their Hands, he was brought their Prisoner to *Manaar*, and cooped up on that small Island, there to spend the Remainder of his Days in Contemplation or Comments on the Deceit of worldly Grandeur, and of the Power and Pleasure of Sovereignty, or in humble Thoughts on Confinement, Exile and Poverty.

C H A P. XIX.

Gives a short Description of Fort St. George, its first Settlement and Rise, its Situation and Sterility, and some Remarks on its Government, and the Actions of some of its Governors, with some Occurrences that happened to the English Factory at Vizagapatam.

FORT St. George or *Maderass*, or, as the Natives call it, *China Patam*, is a Colony and City belonging to the *English East-India* Company, situated in one of the most incommodious Places I ever saw. It fronts the Sea, which continually rolls impetuously on its Shore more here than in any other Place on the Coast of *Chormondel*. The Foundation is in Sand, with a Salt-water River on its back Side, which obstructs all Springs of Fresh-water from coming near the Town, so that they have no drinkable Water within a Mile of them, the Sea often threatening Destruction on one Side, and the River in the rainy Season Inundations on the other, the Sun from April to
September

September scorching hot; and if the Sea-breezes did not moisten and cool the Air when they blow, the Place could not possibly be inhabited. The Reason why a Fort was built in that Place is not well accounted for; but Tradition says, that the Gentleman, who received his Orders to build a Fort on that Coast, about the Beginning of King *Charles II's* Reign after his Restoration, for protecting the Company's Trade, chose that Place to ruin the *Portuguese* Trade at *St. Thomas*. Others again alledge, and with more Probability, that the Gentleman aforesaid, which I take to be Sir *William Langborn*, had a Mistress at *St. Thomas* he was so enamoured of, that made him build there, that their Interviews might be the more frequent and uninterrupted; but whatever his Reasons were, it is very ill situated. The Soil about the City is so dry and sandy, that it bears no Corn, and what Fruits, Roots and Herbage they have, are brought to Maturity by great Pains and much Trouble. If it be true, that the Company gave him Power to settle a Colony in any Part of that Coast that pleased him best, I wonder that he chose not *Cabelon*, about six Leagues to the Southward, where the Ground is fertile, and the Water good, with the Convenience of a Point of Rocks to facilitate Boats landing, or why he did not go nine Leagues farther northerly, and settle at *Policat* on the Banks of a good River, as the *Dutch* have done since, where the Road for Shipping is made easy by some Sand Banks that reach three Leagues off Shore, and make the high turbulent Billows that come rolling from the Sea spend their Force on those Banks before they can reach the Shore. The Soil is good and the River commodious, and convenient in all Seasons.

HOWEVER, the War carried on at *Bengal* and *Bombay*, by the *English* against the *Mogul's* Subjects, from 1685 to 1689, made Fort *St. George* put on a better Dress than he wore before; for the peaceable *Indian* Merchants, who hate Contention and War, came flocking thither, because it lay far from those Incumberers of Trade, and near the Diamond Mines of *Golcondah*, where there are, many Times, good Bargains to be made, and Money got by our Governors. The black Merchants resorting to our Colony, to secure their Fortunes, and bring their Goods

to a safe Market, made it populous and rich, notwithstanding its natural Inconveniencies. The Town is divided into two Parts. One where the *Europeans* dwell is called the *White Town*. It is walled quite round, and has several Bastions and Bulwarks to defend its Walls, which can only be attacked at its Ends, the Sea and River fortifying its Sides. It is about four hundred Paces long, and one hundred and fifty Paces broad, divided into Streets pretty regular, and Fort St. *George* stood near its Center. There are two Churches in it, one for the *English*, and another for the *Romish* Service. The Governor supreintends both, and, in filling up Vacancies in the *Romish* Church, he is the Pope's *Legate a latere* in Spiritualities. There is a very good Hospital in the Town, and the Company's Horse-stables are neat; but the old College, where a great many Gentlemen Factors are obliged to lodge, is ill kept in Repair. It is a Town Corporate, governed by Mayor and Aldermen.

THE Black Town is inhabited by *Gentows*, *Mahometans* and *Indian Christians*, viz. *Armenians*, and *Portuguese*, where there are Temples and Churches for each Religion, every one being tolerated; and every one follows his proper Employment. It was walled in towards the Land, when Governor *Pit* ruled it.

THE Company has their Mint her for coining Bullion that comes from *Europe* and other Countries, into Rupees, which brings them in good Revenues. They also coin Gold into *Pagodoes* of several Denominations and Value. There are also Schools for the Education of Children, the *English* for Reading and Writing *English*, the *Portuguese* for their Language and *Latin*, and the *Mahometans*, *Gentows*, and *Armenians* for their particular Languages. And the *English* Church is well endowed, and maintains poor Gentlewomen in good Housewifery, good Cloths and *Palankines*.

THE Diamond Mines being but a Week's Journey from St. *George*, make them pretty plentiful there; but few great Stones are now brought to Market there, since that great Diamond which Governor *Pit* sent to *England*.

THE current Trade of Fort St. *George* runs gradually slower, the Trader meeting with Disappointments, and some-

Sometimes the Liberty of buying and selling is denied them; and I have seen, when the Governor's Servants have bid for Goods at a publick Sale, some who had a Mind to bid more, durst not, others who had more Courage and durst bid, were brow-beaten and threatened. And I was Witness to a Bargain of *Surat* Wheat taken out of a Gentleman's Hands, after he had fairly bought it by Auction, so that many trading People are removed to other Parts, where there is greater Liberty and less Oppression.

THE Colony produces very little of its own Growth or Manufacture for foreign Markets. They had formerly a Trade to *Pegu*, where many private Traders got pretty good Bread by their Traffick and Industry; but the Trade is now removed into the *Armenians*, *Moors* and *Gentooes* Hands, and the *English* are employed in building and repairing of Shipping. The Trade they have to *China*, is divided between them and *Surat*, for the Gold, and some Copper, are for their own Markets, and the Gross of their Cargo, which consists in Sugar, Sugar-candy, Alum, *China* Ware and some Drugs, as *China* Root, *Gallin-gal*, &c. are all for the *Surat* Market.

THEIR Trade to *Persia* must first come down the famous *Ganges*, before it can come into Fort St. *George's* Channels to be conveyed to *Persia*. They never had any Trade to *Mecca* in the Product and Manufactories of *Chormondal* before the Year 1713, and Fort St. *David* supplies the Goods for that Port, so that Fort St. *George* is an Emblem of *Holland* in supplying foreign Markets with foreign Goods.

THE Colony is well peopled, for there is computed to be eighty thousand Inhabitants in the Towns and Villages; and there are generally about four or five hundred *Europeans* residing there, reckoning the Gentlemen, Merchants, Seamen, and Soldiery. Their Rice is brought by Sea, from *Ganjam* and *Orixa*, their Wheat from *Surat* and *Bengal*, and their Fire-wood from the Islands of *Diu*, a low Point of Land that lies near *Matchulipatam*, so that any Enemy that is superior to them in Sea Forces, may easily distress them.

MATCHULIPATAM, in the latter Part of the last Century, was one of the most flourishing in all *India*, and the *English* Company found it to

be the most profitable Factory that they had. They had a large Factory built of Teak Timber; but now there are no *English* there, tho' the *Dutch* continue their Factory still, and keep above a Dozen of *Hollanders* there to carry on the Chint Trade, for that Commodity is not, as yet, forbid to appear in *Holland*.

NEXT to *Matchulipatam* is *Narsipore*, where the *English* had a Factory for long Cloth, for the Use of their Factory of *Matchulipatam*, when they manufactured *Chints* there.

VIZAGAPATAM, is regularly fortified with four little Bastions, and has about eighteen Guns mounted in it. It has the Advantage of a River, but a dangerous Bar to pass over before we get into it. The Country about affords Cotton Cloths, both coarse and fine, and the best *Dureas*, or strip'd Muslins, in *India*; but the Factory is generally heart-sick for want of Money to refresh it.

In the Year 1709, the Factory drew a War on themselves from the *Nabob* of *Chickacul*, for one Mr. *Simon Holcomb*, who had been Chief at *Vizagapatam*, had borrowed considerable Sums of the *Nabob*, and affix'd the Company's Seal to the Bonds he gave for them. Mr. *Holcomb* dying, the *Nabob* demanded his Money from the succeeding Chief, who would not pay him, alledging, that *Holcomb* had borrowed it for his own private Use, and not for the Company's, and that he must get Payment out of *Holcomb*'s private Estate, if there was enough found to pay the Debt, otherwise he might get his Money from some inland *Rajaks*, who stood indebted to *Holcomb*, by his Books of Accounts, in a greater Sum than would pay his Principal and Interest; and that he being the *Mogul*'s General, could compel those *Rajaks* to pay their just Debts, which they would make over to him: But the *Nabob*, not caring to enter into a War with his Country-men on such a Foundation, sent Agents to acquaint the Governor and Council of Fort St. George, with his Affairs at *Vizagapatam*. They proved deaf to all the Agent's Propositions and Arguments, and hardly treated him civilly, so he went back to his Master, with the Account of his ill Success. Upon which the *Nabob* came to a Garden about half a League from *Vizagapatam*, accompanied with five hundred Horse, and three thousand five hundred Foot, to demand his Money.

ney. I being accidentally there in a small *Dutch*-built Ship, that I had bought from the *French*, on my Credit, at Fort St. George, and the Factory being but ill mann'd, Mr. *Hastings*, who was then Chief, and my Friend, desired the Assistance of my Arms and Council in that Juncture of Affairs, which I very freely gave him; and my Opinion being ask'd in Council, what I thought about the Affair, I advis'd him and his Council to compound the Matter as well as they could, and spin out Time that we might better fortify the Avenues to the Factory. My Advice of compounding the Matter was rejected, but the other Part we followed, so, with seven *Europeans* that belonged to the Factory, and twelve that were with me, and twenty *Topases*, and two hundred and eighty Natives, most of them Fishers, that lived under the Company's Protection, we fortified some Rocks that the Enemy was obliged to pass within Pistol-shot of, if they had a Mind to attack us. We threw up Breast-works between the Rocks, and moored my Ship within Pistol-shot of the Shore, and had eight minion Guns to scour the Sands, if they had attempted to come that Way, and, for six Weeks we continued on our Guard, and were often alarmed in the Night, but finding us always ready to receive them, they did not think it proper to force an Entry into the Town.

I had the Honour to command all the Outguards, and the Chief, with eight *Europeans* and twenty Blacks, kept the Fort. Thus we continued in perpetual Watchings and Alarms, till Reinforcements arrived from Fort St. George, and then I left them, and proceeded on a Voyage to *Pegu*. Both Parties being very busy, one striving to get his Money by Compulsion, and the other, to save the Company's Money on any Terms, right or wrong. The War being drawn to a greater Length than was imagined at first, and Charges rising higher than was expected, inclined them to make all up amicably, which was at last effected by the Company's paying near the Sum that was at first demanded.

THE *Nabob*, whose Name was *Fakirly Cawn*, would hear of no Peace, without the Company's Merchant, who was a *Gentow* called *Agapa*, and a Subject of the *Moguls*,

gul's, who was very active in the War, in encouraging the Town's People to defend themselves and the Company's Interest, and who also had wrote to some neighbouring *Rajaks*, to embroil the *Nabob's* Affairs in his Absence, in order to divert him from pursuing his Demands on *Vizagapatam*, should be delivered up to him, which, at last, he was, and was put to a very cruel Death. He was set in the hot scorching Sun three Days, with his Hands fastened to a Stake over his Head, and one of his Legs tied up till his Heel touched his Buttock, and, in the Night, put into a Dungeon, with some venomous Snakes to bear him Company, and this was repeated till the third Day he ended his miserable Life; but the Company's Merchants, for the future, will be cautious how they espouse the Company's Interest again:

THERE was one *Baily*, a Recruit from Fort St. George, on some Discontent, deserted the Company's Service, and entered into the *Nabob's*; but falling into an Ambush, was taken Prisoner by our Men, and was sent to Fort St. George, where, for his Desertion, he was deservedly whipt out of this World into the next, and there I leave him.

AFTER the War was ended, and all quiet, the *Nabob* returned to *Chickacul*, but could neither forget nor forgive his Treatment at Fort St. George and *Vizagapatam*, but finding by Force he could not get the Factory into his Hands, without great Loss of Men and Money, he had Recourse to Stratagem, by surprising it. He came into the Town one Day with a hundred Horse, and some Foot, without advertising his coming, as was usual at the Town-gate, and before the Chief could have Notice, he was got into the Factory, with twenty or thirty of his Attendants. The Alarm being given, a resolute bold young Gentleman, a Factor in the Company's Service, called Mr. *Richard Horden*, came running down Stairs, with his Fuzee in his Hand, and his Bayonet screwed on its Muzzle, and, presenting it to the *Nabob's* Breast, told him in the *Gentow* Language, (which he was Master of) that the *Nabob* was welcome, but if any of his Attendants offered the least Incivility, his Life should pay for it. The *Nabob* was surprisngly astonished at the Resolution and Bravery of the young Gentleman, and sat down to consider a little,
Mr.

Mr. *Hordeu* keeping the Muzzle of his Piece still at his Brest, and one of the *Nabob's* Servants standing all the while behind Mr. *Hordeu*, with a Dagger's Point close to his Back, so they had a Conference of half an Hour long, in those above mentioned Postures, and then the *Nabob* thought fit to be gone again, full of Wonder and Admiration at so daring a Courage.

THERE are many ancient Pagods or Temples in this Country, but there is one very particular that stands upon a little Mountain near *Vizagapatam*, where they worship living Monks; and, by Report, many Hundreds breed there, which are nourished by the zealous Priests, whose Devotion consists mostly in boiling Rice and other Food for their comical little Gods, which, at Meal-times, assemble at the Pagod, and eat what is prepared for them, and retire again in good Order; but it is less dangerous to kill a Man near that Temple than a Monkey.

C H A P. XX.

Gives an Account of the famous Kingdom of Pegu, its Situation and Product, with its Laws, Customs, and Religion, &c.

THE Sea-coast from *Negrals* to *Syrian* Bar, is in the Dominions of *Pegu*, there are some of the Mouths of *Pegu* River open on that Coast into the Sea.

If by Accident a Ship bound to *Syrian*, be driven a League or two to the Eastward of that River's Mouth, a strong Tide carries her on hard Sands till she sits fast on them, for Anchors are of no Use to stop them, because of the Rapidity of the Current; at low Water the Ships are dry when on those Sands, and the Sea leaves them, and retires five or six Leagues, at which Time the shipwreck'd Men walk on the Sands toward the Shore for their Safety, for the Sea comes back with so much Noise, that the roaring of the Billows may be heard ten Miles off, for a Body of Waters comes rolling in on the Sand, whose Front is above two Fathoms high, and whatever Body lies

in its Way it overturns, and no Ship can evade its Force, but in a Moment is overturned.

ABOUT six Leagues from the Bar of *Pegu* River is the City of *Syrian*, it is built near the River's Side on a rising Ground, and walled round with a Stone-wall without Mortar. The Governor, who is generally of the Blood-royal, has his Lodgings in it, but the Suburbs are four Times bigger than the City. It was many Years in Possession of the *Portuguese*, till by their Insolence and Pride they were obliged to quit it.

THE ancient City of *Pegu* stands about forty Miles to the Eastward of *Syrian*, the Ditches that surrounded the City, which are now dry, and bear good Corn, testify that few Cities in the World exceeded it in Magnitude, for they are reckoned six or seven Leagues round their outward Polygon.

It was the Seat of many great and puissant Kings, who made as great a Figure as any in the East, but now its Glory is in the Dust, for not one twentieth Part of it is inhabited, and those are but the lower Class of People who inhabit it. The Cause of the Ruin of the Kingdoms of *Pegu*, and *Martavan* was thus.

THERE was great Love and Friendship between the Kings and Subjects of *Pegu* and *Siam*, being next Neighbours to one another, and they had a good Intercourse of Trade, both by Land and Sea, till in the fifteenth Century, a *Pegu* Vessel being at *Odia* the chief City of *Siam*, and when ready to depart for *Pegu*, anchored one Evening near a little Temple a few Miles below the City, and the Master of the Vessel, with some of his Crew, going to worship in that Temple, seeing a pretty well carv'd Image of the God *Samsay*, about a Coveit high, fell in Love with it, and finding his Priests negligent in watching, stole him away, and carried him on board Prisoner for *Pegu*. When the negligent Priests missed their little God they were in a deplorable Condition, lamenting their Loss to all their neighbouring Priests, who advised them to complain to the King of *Siam* of the Theft, which accordingly they did, imploring his good Offices with the King of *Pegu*, to have their God sent back; and it happened that by the unseasonable Floods in the River that Year, there came to

be

be a great Scarcity of Corn, which Calamity was imputed by the Priests to the Loss of *Samsay*, upon which the pious Prince sent an Embassy to his Brother of *Pegu*, desiring the Restitution of the Image, whose Absence had caused so great Loss and Clamour in his Country.

THE King of *Pegu* being as great a Bigot as his Brother of *Siam*, would by no Means deliver back a God who had fled from the Impieties of his native Land to him for Protection, and with that Answer sent back the *Siam* Ambassador, who was not a little mortified with the Disappointment.

SINCE fair Means could not persuade the *Peguer* to send back the little God, the *Siamer* was resolved to try what Force would do, and accordingly raised an Army of two or three hundred thousand Men to invade the King of *Pegu's* Dominions, and the first Fury of the War fell on the Province of *Martavan*, being contiguous to the Territories of *Siam*, and with Fire and Sword destroyed the open Country almost to the Gates of the City of *Martavan*, where often the King of *Pegu* kept his Court.

AFTER the *Siamer* had satiated his Cruelty and Rage, by the Destruction of many poor Innocents, he retired back to his own Country very much elevated with Pride and Vain-glory for his great Atchievements, but next Year he was pretty well humbled, for the *Peguer* raised a much greater Army, and embarking them in small Boats on the River *Memnon*, on which the City of *Odia* stands in one of its Islands, his Army was brought with so much Celerity and Secrecy, that the *Peguer* brought the first News of his Invasion, and pitching his Tents round the City, soon brought it into great Straits, by stopping the daily Provisions that supported it, but unexpectedly the River bringing down great Floods of Waters, sooner than their ordinary Time, the Country about the City overflowed, and spoilt all the *Peguer's* Provisions of Corn, and drowned near half of his Army, which obliged him to raise the Siege, and retire to his own Dominions.

NEXT Year, the *Siamer*, to be revenged, levied another great Army, with which he over-ran all the inland Countries of *Pegu* that lay near him, and annexed them to his own Dominions. The *Peguer* finding that he could not

recover his Land, without foreign Aid and Assistance, invited the *Portuguese*, whose Name began to be dreadful in *India*, and by the great Encouragement he gave them, got about a thousand Volunteers into his Service. Neither the *Siamers* nor the *Peguers* at that Time understood the Use of Fire Arms, and their Noise and Execution at so great a Distance terrified them. With the *Portuguese* Assistance, the *Peguer* went with his Army, which was very numerous to find out the *Siamer*, and having found him, gave him Battle, the *Portuguese* being in the Front with their Fire Arms, soon put the *Siamer* to Flight, before they could come to Handy blows, on which he left the *Peguer's* Country in greater Hastle than he came into it.

THE King of *Pegu* was so sensible of the *Portuguese* Service in gaining the Battle, and driving the *Siamers* out of his conquered Country, that he made one *Senbor Thoma Pereyra* (who commanded the *Portuguese* in the War, Generalissimo of all his Forces, which Preferment made the *Portuguese* so insolent, that in a few Years they became intolerable to all Ranks and Degrees of Persons in *Pegu*).

BOTH Kings grew tired of War, but both too proud to make Advances toward Peace, so that for many Years they had skirmishing with small Parties tho' no set Battles, and where-ever the *Portuguese* Arms went, they had Victory to accompany them.

THE King of *Pegu*, to have his Forces nearer the Borders of *Siam*, settled his Court at *Martawan*, and kept the *Portuguese* near him, to be ready on all Occasions, either to repel or assault the *Siam* Forces, as Opportunity served, and *Thoma Pereyra* was the darling Favourite at Court, he had his Elephants of State, and a Guard of his own Countrymen to attend him. One Day as he was going from Court in State, on a large Elephant, towards his own Palace, he chanced to hear Musick in a Burgher's House, whose Daughter being a very beautiful Virgin, had been married that Morning to a young Man of the Neighbourhood. The General went to the House and wished them Joy, and desired to see the Bride. The Parents took the General's Visit for a great Honour done them, and brought their Daughter to his Elephant's Side; he being smitten with

with her Beauty, ordered his Guard to seize her and carry her to his House.

HIS Orders were but too readily obeyed, and the poor Bridegroom not being able to bear his Loss, cut his own Throat, and the disconsolate Parents of their injured Children, rent their Clothes, and went crying and complaining through the Streets towards the King's Palace, imploring their Gods and Countrymen to avenge them on the insolent *Portuguese*, the common Oppressors of their Country. Crowds of People came from all Parts of the City, to hear and see the Tragedy, their Numbers grew so great that the Streets were hardly big enough for them, and their Noise so loud that it reached the King's Ears, who sent to know the Cause of their Uproar. The Messenger returning, acquainted the King what had been transacted, and he, to appease the Tumult, sent them Word that he would punish the Criminal, and accordingly sent for his General, but he being much taken up with the Enjoyment of his new Purchase, made an Excuse that he was so much out of Order, that he could not then wait on his Majesty till he was better, which Answer so provoked the King, that he ordered the whole City to take Arms, and to make a general Massacre on all the *Portuguese* wheresoever they could be found in City or Country. The King's Orders were put in Execution so speedily, that in a few Hours all the *Portuguese* were slaughtered, and the guilty Criminal was taken alive, and made fast by the Heels to an Elephant's Foot, who dragged him through the Streets till there was no Skin nor Flesh left to cover his Bones, which Spectacle appeased the enraged Populace. There were only three *Portuguese* saved, who were accidentally in the Suburbs next the River, who hid themselves till Night favoured their Escape in a small Boat in which they coasted along the Shore, feeding on what the Woods and Rocks afforded them, and at length arrived at *Malacca*, to give an Account of the melancholy Scene.

BOTH Kingdoms being much weakened with bloody Wars, took Rest for many Years, but never entered on Treaties of Peace. So about the Middle of the seventeenth Century, the *Siamer* invaded the Dominions of *Pegu*, and conquered all to the Southward of *Martavan*, taking in the
Provinces

Provinces of *Tanacerin* and *Ligore*, who were Tributaries to *Pegu*, and retains them still in his Possession.

THE Dominions of *Barma* are at present very large, reaching from *Moravi* near *Tanacerin*, to the Province of *Yunan* in *China*, about eight hundred Miles from North to South, and two hundred and fifty Miles broad from West to East. It has no Sea-port but *Syrian*, and that River is capable to receive a Ship of six hundred Tuns. The Town drives a good Trade with *Armenians*, *Portuguese*, *Moors* and *Gentooes*, and some *English*; their Import is several Sorts of *Indian* Goods, such as *Beteellas*, *Mulmuls*, *Coffas*, *Sannis*, *Orangshays*, *Tangebs*, *European* Hats coarse and fine, and Silver.

THE Country is very fruitful in Corn, Fruits, and Roots, and excellent Legumen of several Species, Abundance of wild Game either quardrupeds or winged. In the Months of *September* and *October*, wild Deer are so plentiful that I have bought one for three or four Pence; they are very fleshy, but no Fat about them. They have many Sorts of good Fish, and Swines Flesh and Poultry are both plentiful and good.

THEY wear none of our *European* Commodities but Hats and Ribbons, and the Gentry will give extravagant Prices for fine Beaver Hats, and rich Ribbons flower'd with Silver and Gold, and if it be never so broad it is stretch'd up the Crown of the Hat as far as it can go, and they use no Sort of Cock to their Hats. Cotton Cloths from *Bengal* and *Chormondel*, with some striped Silks, are best for their Market, and Silver of any Sort is welcome to them. It pays the King eight and an half *per Cent.* Custom, but in lieu of that high Duty, he indulges the Merchants to melt it down, and put what Alloy they please in it, and then to pass it off in Payments as high as they can.

THE King generally adds ten *per Cent.* on all Silver that comes into his Treasury, besides what was put on at first, and tho' it be not flower'd, it must go off in all his Payments, but from any Body else it may be refused if it is not flower'd.

HIS Government is arbitrary. All his Commands are Laws, but the Reins of Government are kept steady and gently

gently in the King's own Hand. He severely punishes his Governors of Provinces or Towns, if Oppressions or other illegal Practices are proved upon them; and to know how Affairs pass in the State, every Province or City has a *Mandereen* or Deputy residing at Court, which is generally in the City of *Ava*, the present Metropolis.

EVERY Morning these *Mandereens* are obliged to attend at Court, and after his Majesty has drest and breakfasted, which is generally on a Dish of Rice boiled in fair Water, and his Sauce is some Shrimps dried and powder'd, and some Salt and Cod-pepper mixt with those two Ingredients, and that Mix-ure makes a very pungent Sauce, which they call *Prock*, and is in great Esteem and Use among the *Peguers*.

WHEN his Breakfast is over, he retires into a Room so contrived that he can see all the Attendants, but none can see him, and a Page stands without to call whom the King would have give Account of the current News of his Province or City, which is performed with profound Reverence toward the Room where the King stays, and with a distinct audible Voice; and if any particular Matters of Consequence is forgot or omitted, and the King comes to hear of it by another Hand, severe Punishments follow, and so he passes his Mornings in hearing the necessary Cases of his own Affairs as well as those of his Subjects.

If he is informed of Treason, Murder, or such like heinous Crimes, he orders the Matter to be judicially tried before Judges of his own choosing, for that Time and Affair, and on Conviction he signs the dead Warrant, wherein he orders, that the Wretch convicted shall trade no more on his Ground, and Execution presently follows, either by beheading, or ordering them to be Sport for his Elephants, which is the cruelest Death. Sometimes he banishes them for a certain Time to the Woods, and if they are not devoured by Tigers, or killed by wild Elephants, they may return when their Term is expired, and pass the Remainder of their Days in serving a tame Elephant; and for smaller Crimes they are only condemned to clean his Elephants Stables for Life.

His Subjects, if they may be so called, treat him with fulsome Adulation. When they speak or write to him they

they call him their God (or in their Language *Kiack*) and in his Letters to foreign Princes, he assumes the Title of King of Kings, to whom all other Kings ought to be subject, as being near Kinsman and Friend to all the Gods, in Heaven and on Earth, and by their Friendship to him all Animals are fed and preserved, and the Seasons of the Year are regularly kept: The Sun is his Brother, and the Moon and Stars are his near Relations, Lord over the Floods and Ebbing of the Sea.

THE King's Palace at *Ava* is very large, built of Stone, and has four Gates for its Conveniencies; Ambassadors enter at the East Gate, which is called the golden Gate, because all Ambassadors make their Way to him by Presents. The South Gate is called the Gate of Justice, where all People that bring Petitions, Accusations or Complaints, enter. The West is the Gate of Grace, where all that have received Favours, or have been acquitted of Crimes, pass out in State, and all condemned Persons carried out in Fetters; and the North Gate fronting the River, is the Gate of State where his Majesty passes through, when he thinks fit to bless his People with his Presence, and all his Provisions and Water are carried in at that Gate.

WHEN an Ambassador is admitted to Audience in the Palace, he is attended with a large Troop of Guards, with Trumpets sounding, and Heralds proclaiming the Honour the Ambassador is about to receive, in going to see the Glory of the Earth, his Majesty, and between the Gate and the Head of the Stairs that lead to the Chamber of Audience, the Ambassador is attended with the Master of the Ceremonies, who instructs him to kneel three Times in his Way thither, and continue so with his Hands over his Head, till a Proclamation is read before he dare rise.

His Sword Officers have no Salary, nor his Soldiers for their Support, but there is a Province or a City given to some Minion, who is to give Sustainance to such a Number of Soldiers, and find the Palace at *Ava* with such a Quota of Provisions as the Providore thinks fit to appoint.

WHEN there is a War, and Parties are sent on Expeditions, then the King allows them Pay, Clothes, Arms, and provides Magazines of Provisions for them; but as soon

foon as the War is at an End, then the Clothes and Arms are returned.

ALL Cities and Towns under this King's Dominions, are like *aristocratical* Commonwealths. The Prince or Governor seldom sits in Council, but appoints his Deputy and twelve Counsellors or Judges, and they sit once in ten Days at least, but oftner when Business calls them. They convene in a large Hall, mounted about three Foot high, and double Benches round the Floor for People to sit or kneel on, and to hear the free Debates of Council. The Hall being built on Pillars of Wood, is open on all Sides, and the Judges sit in the Middle on Matts, and sitting in a Ring there is no Place of Precedence; there are no Advocates to plead at the Bar, but every one has the Privilege to plead his own Cause, or send it in Writing to be read publickly, and it is determined judicially within the Term of three Sitzings of Council, but if any one questions his own Eloquence, or Knowledge of the Laws of Equity, he may empower a Friend to plead for him, but there are no Fees but what the Town contributes for the Maintenance of that Court, which in their Language is called the *Rounday*, and those Contributions are very small: There are Clerks set at the Backs of the Judges, ready to write down whatever the Complainant and Defendant has to say, and the Case is determined by the Prince and that Council, very equitably; for if the least Partiality is found awarded to either Party, and the King is made acquainted with it by the Deputies at Court, the whole Sentence is revoked, and the whole Board are corrected for it, so that very few have Occasion to appeal to Court, which they may do if they are aggrieved, and if an Appeal is made upon ill Grounds, the Appellant is chastised, which just Rigour hinders many tedious Suits that arise where there are no Penalties annexed to such Faults.

THE Judges have a particular Garb of their own. Their Hair being permitted to grow long, is tied on the Top of their Heads with Cotton Ribbon wrapt about it, and it stands upright in the Form of a sharp Pyramid. Their Coat is of a thin *Betella*, so that their Skin is easily seen through it. About their Loins they have a large *Lungee* or Scarf, as all other *Peguers* have, that reaches to their Ancles, and
against

against the Navel a round Bundle made of their *Lungee*, as big as a Child's Head, but Stockings and Shoes are not used in *Pegu*.

THE *Barmaes* wear the same Habit, and imprint several Devices in their Skins, prick'd with a Bolkin, and powder of Charcoal rubbed over the little Wounds while the Blood continues wet in them, and the black Marks remain ever after. The *Peguers* dare not paint their Skins, so that the Natives of each Nation are easily known by the distinguishing Mark of Painting or Plainness. There are few of their Men fat, but plump, well shap'd, of an Olive Colour, and well featur'd.

THE Women are much whiter than the Men, and have generally pretty plump Faces, but of small Stature, yet very well shap'd, their Hands and Feet small, and their Arms and Legs well proportioned. Their Head-dress is their own black Hair tied up behind, and when they go abroad, they wear a *Shaul* folded up, or a Piece of white Cotton Cloth lying loose on the Top of their Heads. Their bodily Garb is a Frock of Cotton Cloth or Silk, made meet for their Bodies, and the Arms of their Frock stretch'd close on the Arm, the lower Part of the Frock reaching Half-thigh down. Under the Frock they have a Scarf or *Lungee* doubled fourfold, made fast about their Middle, which reaches almost to the Ankle, so contrived, that at every Step they make, as they walk, it opens before, and shews the right Leg and Part of the Thigh.

THIS Fashion of Petticoats, they say, is very ancient, and was first contrived by a certain Queen of that Country, who was grieved to see the Men so much addicted to *Sodomy*, that they neglected the pretty Ladies. She thought that by the Sight of a pretty Leg and Plump Thigh, the Men might be allured from that abominable Custom, and place their Affections on proper Objects, and according to the ingenious Queen's Conjecture, that Dress of the *Lungee* had its desired End, and now the Name of *Sodomy* is hardly known in that Country.

THE Women are courteous and kind to Strangers, and are very fond of marrying with *Europeans*, and most part of the Strangers who trade thither, marry a Wite for the Term they stay. The Ceremony is, (after the Parties are agreed)

agreed) for the Bride's Parents or nearest Friends or Relations, to make a Feast, and invite her Friends and the Bridegroom's, and at the End of the Feast, the Parent or Bride-man, asketh them both before the Company, if they are content to cohabit together as Man and Wife, and both declaring their Consent, they are declared by the Parent or Friend to be lawfully married, and if the Bridegroom has an House, he carries her thither, but if not, they have a Bed provided in the House where they are married, and are left to their own Discretion how to pass the Night.

THEY prove obedient and obliging Wives, and take the Management of Affairs within Doors wholly in their own Hands. She goes to Market for Food, and acts the Cook in dressing his Victuals, takes Care of his Clothes, in washing and mending them; if their Husbands have any Goods to sell, they set up a Shop and sell them by Retail, to a much better Account than they could be sold for by Wholesale, and some of them carry a Cargo of Goods to the inland Towns, and barter for Goods proper for the foreign Markets that their Husbands are bound to, and generally bring fair Accounts of their Negotiations. If she proves false to her Husband's Bed, and on fair Proof convicted, her Husband may carry her to the *Rounday*, and have her Hair cut, and sold for a Slave, and he may have the Money; but if the Husband goes astray, she'll be apt to give him a gentle Dose, to send him into the other World a Sacrifice to her Resentment.

If she proves prolifick, the Children cannot be carried out of the Kingdom without the King's Permission, but that may be purchased for forty or fifty Pounds *sterl.* and if an irreconcilable Quarrel happen where there are Children, the Father is obliged to take Care of the Boys, and the Mother of the Girls. If a Husband is content to continue the Marriage, whilst he goes to foreign Countries about his Affairs, he must leave some Fund to pay her about six Shillings eight Pence *per* Month, otherwise at the Year's End she may marry again, but if that Sum is paid her on his Account, she is obliged to stay the Term of three Years, and she is never the worse, but rather the better

better look'd on, that she has been married to several *European* Husbands.

THE *Pegu* Clergy are the best Observers of the Rules of Morality and Charity, that I have met with in my Travels, and the People are pious and hospitable. There are vast Numbers of Temples built in this Country, but most of Wood; every one has free Liberty to build a Temple, and when it is finished, purchases or bestows a few Acres of Ground to maintain a certain Number of Priests and Novices, who manure and cultivate the Ground for their own Sustenance, and in the Garden the Priests and Novices have a Convent built for their Conveniency of Lodgings and Study, and those are their settled Benefices, for they are no Charge to the Laity, but by their industrious Labour in managing their Garden, they have enough for themselves, and something to spare to the poor Indigent of the Laity; but if their Garden is too small or sterile for the Subsistence of their Family, then they send some Novices abroad with a large Orange-coloured Mantle about their Bodies, with a Basket hanging on their left Arm, a little Drum in the left Hand, and a little Stick in the right, and when they come to the People's Doors they beat three Strokes with the Stick on the Drum, and if none come to answer, they beat again, and so on to the third Time, and then if none answer, they proceed to the next House without speaking a Word, but they are seldom sent away without an Alms of Rice, Pulse, Fruits, or Roots, which is their only Food, and what they receive more than they have present Occasion for, they distribute to the Poor, for they never take Care for to Morrow, living all their Days in Celibacy, they have none of the Anxiety of thinking about Provision for a Widow and Children. Their innocent exemplary Lives procure them many Free-will-offerings from the well disposed Laity, and what is saved after providing their Convents, of Eatables and Clothing, returns to the Maintenance of the distress'd Laity, who, through Age, Sickness, or other Accidents, cannot maintain themselves by Labour, but none who are able to work, partake of their Charity.

THEY preach frequently, and have a numerous Auditory. Their Religion is *Paganism*, and their System of Divini-

Divinity *Polytheism*. They teach, that Charity is the most sublime Virtue, and therefore ought to be extensive enough to reach not only to human Species, but even to Animals, wherefore they neither kill nor eat any, and they are so benevolent to Mankind, that they cherish all alike without Distinction, for the sake of Religion. They hold all Religions to be good that teach Men to be good, and that the Deities are pleased with Variety of Worship, but with none that is hurtful to Men, because Cruelty must be disagreeable to the Nature of a Deity: So being all agreed in that Fundamental, they have but few *Polemicks*, and no Persecutions, for they say that our Minds are free Agents, and ought neither to be forc'd nor fetter'd.

THERE are two large Temples near *Syrian*, so like one another in Structure, that they seem to be built by one Model. One stands about six Miles to the Southward, called *Kiakiack*, or, the *God of Gods Temple*. In it is an Image of twenty Yards long, lying in a sleeping Posture, and, by their Tradition, has lain in that Posture six thousand Years. His Doors and Windows are always open, and every one has the Liberty to see him; and, when he awakes, this World is to be annihilated. The Temple stands on an high champain Ground, and may easily be seen, in a clear Day, eight Leagues off. The other stands in a low Plain, North of *Syrian*, about the same Distance, called *Dagun*. His Doors and Windows are always shut, and none enters his Temple but his Priests, and they won't tell what Shape he is of, only he is not of human Shape. As soon as *Kiakiack* dissolves the Being and Frame of the World, *Dagon* or *Dagun* will gather up the Fragments, and make a new one. There are yearly Fairs held near those Temples, and the Free-will Offerings arising at those Fairs, are for the Use of the Temples.

THE Country is fruitful and healthful, and the Air so good, that when Strangers come hither in a bad State of Health, they seldom fail of a speedy Recovery; but the Small Pox is dreaded as pestiferous, and in the Province of *Kirian* that Distemper is most dangerous and most infectious, so that if any one is seized by that Disease, all the

Neighbourhood removes two or three Miles Distance, and builds new Houses, which are easily done with *Bam-bows* and Reeds, which they have in great Plenty. They leave with the diseased Person a Jar of Water, a Basket of raw Rice, and some earthen Pots to boil it in, then they bid him farewell for twenty one Days. If the Patient has Strength enough to rise and boil Rice, he may then recover, if not, he must even die alone. And it is observable, that, while a Person has that Distemper, the Tyger, for all his Voraciousness, will not touch him. If the Patient dies within the Term of twenty one Days, then the Smell certifies them on their approaching the House, and if he live, they carry him to their new built City, and make him a free Burgeis.

I saw the Ceremony of an high Priest's Funeral, and was not a little pleased with the Solemnity. After the Corps had been kept three or four Months by Spirits or Gums from Putrefaction, there was a great Mast fix'd in the Ground, so fast, that it could be moved no Way from its perpendicular Position. Then, about fifty or sixty Yards on each Side of that Mast, four smaller Masts were placed, and fixed perpendicularly in the Ground. Around the great Mast, in the Middle, were erected three Scaffolds above one another, the lowermost bigger than the second, and the third smaller than that, so that it look'd like a Pyramid four Stories high. The Scaffolds were railed in on each Side except an open Place of three or four Foot wide on each Side. All the Scaffolds, and the Ground below them, were filled with Combustibles. From the Mast in the Middle four Ropes were carried to the other four Masts, and hawl'd tight, and a Fire-rocket on each Rope was placed at the respective small Masts. Then the Corps was carried to the upper Story of the Pyramid, and laid flat on the Scaffold, and, after a great Shew of Sorrow among the People there present, a Trumpet was sounded, which was a Signal to set Fire to the Rockers, which, in an Instant, flew with a quick Motion along the Ropes, and set Fire to the Combustibles, and in a Moment they were all in a Flame, so that in an Hour or two all was consumed.

THIS high Priest was held in so great Veneration, that he was reckoned a Saint among the People. He was in great Esteem with the King, and when any Nobleman fell into Disgrace, he used his Interest with the King to have him restored again to Favour, unless they were guilty of atrocious Crimes, and, in that Case, he used his endeavours to have the Rigour of the Punishment extenuated.

ALL the *Pegu* Clergy are Mediators in making up Cases of Debate and Contention that happen among Neighbours. They never leave mediating till there be a Reconciliation; and, in Token of Friendship, according to an ancient Custom there they eat *Champoock* from one another's Hand, and that seals the Friendship. This *Champoock* is Tea of a very unfavoury Taste, it grows, as other Tea does, on Bushes, and is in Use on such Occasions all over *Pegu*.

AND now, since I must leave *Pegu*, I must not omit giving the Clergy their due Praises in another particular Practice of their Charity. If a Stranger has the Misfortune to be ship-wreck'd on their Coast, by the Laws of the Country, the Men are the King's Slaves, but, by the Mediation of the Church, the Governors overlook that Law; and when the unfortunate Strangers come to their *Bows*, they find a great deal of Hospitality, both in Food and Raiment, and have Letters of Recommendation from the Priests of one Convent to those of another on the Road they design to travel, where they may expect Vessels to transport them to *Syrian*; and if any be sick or maim'd, the Priests, who are the *Peguers* chief Physicians, keep them in their Convent, till they are cured, and then furnish them with Letters, as is above observed, for they never enquire which Way a Stranger worships God, but if he is human, he is the Object of their Charity.

THERE are some *Christians* in *Syrian* of the *Portuguese* Offspring, and some *Armenians*.

THE Islands off the Coast of *Pegu* are the *Cocoas*, uninhabited, but full of Cocoa-nut Trees. They lie about twenty Leagues West-south-west from Cape *Negrois*: And the Islands *Perperies* lie thirty six Leagues South of the said Cape. They are high Islands uninhabited, and so environed with Rocks under Water, that there is Danger in

landing on them. They seem to be overgrown with Woods, and that is all that I could observe of them. There is another small Island called *Commoda*, that lies about ten Leagues off the Coast of *Pegu*, but is not inhabited.

CHAP. XXI.

Treats of Merjee and Tanacerin, and of the Sea-coast in the King of Siam's Dominions, of the Massacre there of the English in the Year 1687.

THE next Place on the Continent, to the Southward, is *Merjee*, a Town belonging to the King of *Siam*, situated on the Banks of the River of *Tanacerin*, lying within a great Number of small uninhabited Islands. The Harbour is safe, and the Country produces Rice, Timber for building, Tin, Elephants Teeth and *Agala* Wood. In former Times a good Number of *English* free Merchants were settled at *Merjee*, and drove a good Trade, living under a mild indulgent Government; but the old *East-India* Company envying their Happiness, by an arbitrary Command, ordered them to leave their Industry, and repair to Fort St. *George*, to serve them, and threatened the King of *Siam* with a Sea War, if he did not deliver those *English* up, or force them out of his Country, and, in the Year 1687, sent one Captain *Weldon* in a small Ship called the *Curtany*, to *Merjee* with that Message. He behaved himself very insolently to the Government, and killed some *Siamers*, without any just Cause. One Night when *Weldon* was ashore, the *Siamers*, thinking to do themselves Justice on him, got a Company together, designing to seize or kill the Aggressor, but *Weldon* having Notice of their Design, made his Escape on board his Ship, and the *Siamers* missing him, tho' very narrowly, vented their Rage and Revenge on all the *English* they could find. The poor Victims being only guarded by their Innocence, did not so much as arm themselves, to withstand the Fury of the enraged Mob, so that seventy
fix

fix were massacred, and hardly twenty escaped on board of the *Curtany*; so there was the tragical Consequence of one Man's Insolence.

BEFORE that dreadful Time, the *English* were so beloved and favoured at the Court of *Siam*, that they had Places of Trust conferred upon them, both in the civil and military Branches of the Government. Mr. *Samuel White* was made *Shawbandaar* or Custom-master at *Merjee* and *Tenacerin*, and Captain *Williams* was Admiral of the King's Navy; but the troublesome Company, and a great Revolution that happened in the State of *Siam*, made some repair to Fort St. *George*, others to *Bengal*, and some to *Atcheen*.

THE Islands opposite to the Coast of *Tenacerin*, are the *Andemans*. They lie about eighty Leagues off, and are surrounded with many dangerous Banks and Rocks; they are all inhabited with *Cambals*, who are so fearless, that they will swim off to a Boat, if she approach near the Shore, and attack her with their wooden Weapons, notwithstanding the Superiority of Numbers in the Boat, and the Advantage of missive and defensive Arms of Iron, Steel and Fire.

I KNEW one *Fergusson*, who commanded a Ship from Fort St. *George*, bound from *Malacca* to *Bengal*, in Company with another Ship, going too near one of the *Andeman* Islands, was driven, by the Force of a strong Current, on some Rocks, and the Ship was lost. The other Ship was driven thro' a Channel between two of the same Islands, and was not able to assist the shipwreck'd Men, but neither *Fergusson* nor any of his People were ever more heard of, which gave Ground to conjecture that they were all devoured by those savage *Canibals*.

THE next Place of any Commerce on this Coast, is the Island of *Jonkceyloan*, it lies in the Dominions of the King of *Siam*. Between *Merjee* and *Jonkceyloan* there are several good Harbours for Shipping, but the Sea-coast is very thin of Inhabitants, because there are great Numbers of Freebooters, called *Salleiters*, who inhabit Islands along the Sea-coast; and they both rob, and take People for Slaves, and transport them for *Atcheen*, and there make Sale of

them, and *Jonkceylan* often feels the Weight of their Depredations.

THE North End of *Jonkceylan* lies within a Mile of the Continent, but the South End is above three Leagues from it. Between the Island and the Continent is a good Harbour for Shipping in the Southwest Monsoons, and on the West Side of the Island *Puton Bay* is a safe Harbour in the North-east Winds. The Islands afford good Mafts for Shipping, and Abundance of Tin, but a few People to dig for it, by reason of the afore-mentioned Outlaws, and the Governors being generally *Chinese*, who buy their Places at the Court of *Siam*, and, to reimburse themselves oppress the People, in so much that Riches would be but a Plague to them, and their Poverty makes them live an easy indolent Life.

YET the Villages on the Continent drive a small Trade with Shipping that come from the *Chormondel Coast*, and *Bengal*, but both the Buyer and Seller trade by Retail, so that a Ship's Cargo is a long Time in selling, and the Product of the Country is as long in purchasing.

THE Islands off this Part of the Coast are the *Nicobars*, and are about ninety Leagues distant from the Continent. The Northmost Cluster is low, and are called the *Carnicubars*, and by their Vicinity to the *Andemans*, are but thinly inhabited. The middle Clusters is fine champain Ground, and all but one, well inhabited. They are called the *Somerera* Islands, because on the South End of the largest Island, is an Hill that resembles the Top of an *Umbrella* or *Somerera*. About six Leagues to the Southward of *Somerera* Island, lies *Tallang-jang* the uninhabited Island, where one Captain *Oxen* lost his Ship in the Year 1708, but the Men were all saved, and finding no Inhabitants, they made Fires in the Night, and next Day there came five or six Canoes from *Ning* and *Goury*, two fine Islands that lie about four Leagues to the Westward of the desert Island, and very courteously carried the shipwreck'd Men to their Islands of *Ning* and *Goury*, with what little Things they had saved of their Apparel and other Necessaries.

NING and *Goury* are two fine smooth Islands, well inhabited, and plentifully furnished with several Sorts of
good

good Fish, Hogs and Poultry, but they have no Horses, Cows, Sheep, nor Goats, nor wild Beasts of any Sort, but Monkeys. They have no Rice nor Pulse, so that the Kernel of Cocoa-nuts, *Yams*, and Potatoes serves them for Bread.

ALONG the North End of the Eastmost of the two Islands, are good Soundings from ten to eight Fathoms Sand, about two Miles off the Shore. The People come thronging on board in their Canoes, and bring Hogs, Fowl, Cocks, Fish, fresh, salted and dried *Yams*, the best I ever tasted, Potatoes, Parots and Monkeys, to barter for old Hatchets, Sword-blades, and thick Pieces of Iron-hoops, to make defensive Weapons against their common Disturbers and implacable Enemies the *Andamaners*; and Tobacco they are very greedy of, for a Leaf of Tobacco, if pretty large, they will give a Cock, for three Foot of an Iron Hoop, a large Hog, and for one Foot in Length, a Pig. They all speak a little broken *Portuguese*, but what religious Worship they use, I could not learn.

THE Island *Somerera* lies about eight Leagues to the Northward of *Ning* and *Goury*, and is well inhabited by the Number of Villages that shew themselves as we sail along its Shores. The People, like those of *Ning* and *Goury*, are very courteous, and bring the Product of their Island aboard of Ships to exchange for the aforementioned Commodities. Silver nor Gold they neither have nor care for, so the Root of all Evil can never send out Branches of Misery, or bear Fruit to poison their Happiness. The Mens Clothing is a Bit of String round their Middle, and about a Foot and an Half of Cloth six Inches broad, tuck'd before and behind within that Line. The Women have a Petticoat from the Navel to the Knee, and their Hair close shaved, but the Men have the Hair left on the upper Part of the Head, and below the Crown, but cut so short that it hardly comes to their Ears.

THE Southward Cluster of the *Nicobars*, is mountainous, and the People partake of its unpolished Nature, being more uncivil and surly than those to the Northward.

Their

Their Islands produce the same Necessaries as the others do.

C H A P. XXII.

Gives an Account of the Islands and trading Ports on the Coast of Sumatra, and of the Island of Java, &c.

LABON is the first Place noted for Gold Dust and Camphire, but has no Commerce with Strangers. *Hog* Island lies opposite to it, about ten Leagues off. This Island takes its Name from the great Numbers of wild Hogs on it, who are the only Inhabitants, as *Cocoa* Island close to it, takes its Name from the great Numbers of Cocoa-nut Trees growing on it.

BAROS is the next Place that abounds in Gold, Camphire, and *Benzoin*, but admits of no foreign Commerce. It lies within the South End of *Hog's* Island, about the same Distance from it that *Labon* is. This Place sets a Boundary to the Kingdom of *Atcheen*.

AYERBANGY is the next Place of Note. It produces Gold and Pepper, it lies about one Degree to the Northward of the *Æquator*, and has the Advantage of a good safe Harbour, but it is little frequented, because of the Treachery of the Natives, who make small Account of murdering Strangers, if they can but get the least Advantage by it. The Harbour lies in a small but deep Bay, and three small Islands lying before it, make it a most excellent Harbour; and the Channels between the Islands, and between the Shore and the Islands, are clear from Danger.

PADANG is about twenty Leagues to the Southward of the *Æquator*, where the *Dutch* have a Colony, and a strong Fort to defend it from the Insults of the Natives. The Island of *Good Fortune* lies about twenty Leagues without it.

INDRAPURA is the next, and lies about fifty Leagues to the Southward of the *Æquator*. It was formerly an *English* Factory, but the *Dutch* insulted it in King *William's* War with *France*, and it has made but a sorry Figure in Trade

Trade since. Its Commodity is only Pepper, but it affords great Plenty of it, and very cheap. The Island of *Nasaw* lies about fifteen Leagues without it.

BENCOLON is an *English* Colony, but the *European* Inhabitants not very numerous. About the Year 1690, the *East-India* Company built a Fort there, and called it *York* Fort, but Brick or Stone Walls in that Country cannot long continue firm, because Concussions of the Earth are so frequent by Earthquakes, that solid Walls are rent by the shaking of their Foundations. It has the Convenience of a River to bring their Pepper out of the inland Countries, but great Inconveniencies in shipping it off on board the Ships, for there is a dangerous Bar at the River's Mouth, which has proved fatal to many poor *English* Men. The Road for Shipping is also inconvenient; for in the Southwest Monsoons, there being nothing to keep the great Swell of rolling Seas off them, but a small Island called *Rat* Island, the Ships are ever in a violent Motion while that Monsoon lasts.

THE inland Princes are often at Variance among themselves, and sometimes are troublesome to the Trade of our Colony, but as their Wars are short, the *English* are in little Danger by them. In the Year 1693, there was a great Mortality in the Colony, the Governor and his Council all died in a short Time after one another; and one Mr. *Sowdon* being the eldest Factor, had his Residence at *Prayman*, or *Priaman*, a subordinate Factory to *Bencolon*, being called to the Government of the Colony, but not very fit for that Charge, because of his intemperate drinking, it fortuned in his short Reign, that four Princes differed, and rather than run into Acts of Hostility, referred their Differences to the Arbitriment of the *English* Governor, and came to the Fort with their Plea. Mr. *Sowdon* soon determined their Differences in Favour of the two that complained; and because the others seemed dissatisfied with his Determination, ordered both their Heads to be struck off, which ended their Disputes effectually, and made them afterwards to make up Differences among themselves, without troubling the *English* with their Contentions and impertinent Quarrels, but Governor

nor *Sowdon* was sent for to Fort St. George, and another sent in his Place less sanguine.

And ever since that Time there has been a Succession of moderate Governors, and some have been guilty of as much Temerity the other Way. For in the Year 1719, the then Governor, having some Disputes with some of the Natives, was somewhat fearful of them. On a festival Day, in firing Guns, a Wad from one of them set Fire to an House thatch'd with Reeds, and several others contiguous to it took Fire from it, so that it spread through the Market Place. The Governor believing it to be done maliciously by the Natives, left the Fort precipitantly, and got on board of a Ship in the Road, leaving some Chests of Money, and all the Artillery, Arms, Ammunition, and other Effects of his Masters, behind him, and his Garrison, following their Leader, left their Posts, and got aboard also.

THE Natives being surpris'd with the sudden Departure of the *English*, went into the Fort, and took what they had most Occasion for; but some *Chinese* Merchants, who had settled at *Bencolon*, being also frightened, embarked on their Vessels, and dispersed themselves in Places where they thought they might be most secure.

THE chief Merchant of the *Chinese*, who is generally called the *China* Captain, in the Places where the *Chinese* have Trade, went to *Batavia* to some Relations he had there; but the *Dutch*, according to their wonted Hospitality in *India*, punished him as a Criminal, and taught him to make Lime and carry Stones the Remnant of his Days, for daring to settle among the *English*. Some of the *Chinese* I saw the same Year at *Trangano* in *Johore*, who gave me this Account. Wherever these poor *Chinese* came, in Places where the *Dutch* had Power, they were as heartily persecuted as a Poor *Protestant* is that takes Sanctuary in a Country where the holy, charitable, zealous *Romish* Clergy have Power.

THE Natives were almost ruined by the *English* Desertion. For as their Trade lay all on their Pepper, none came to buy it, and their Regret being known at Fort St. George, there was a new Governor sent back with a new Garrison, to take Possession again of their own Fort. What the

the Company lost by that unaccountable Piece of Temerity, I know not, but they gained very little Credit by it:

THE Country above *Bencolon* is mountainous and woody, and I have heard that there are many *Vulcanoes* in this Island; but whatever may be the Cause, the Air is full of malignant Vapours, and the Mountains are continually clothed with thick heavy Clouds, that break out in Lightning, Thunder, Rain, and short-liv'd Storms. Their Food is not fit for every Stomach. Tame *Buffalo* may be had, but no Cow-beef. Poultry are scarce and dear, and so is Fish, but some Sorts of Fruit are pretty plentiful; however, the Gentlemen there live as merrily, tho' not so long, as in other Places blest with Plenty, and so sociable, that they leave their Estates to the longest Liver.

SILLEBAR lies about four Leagues to the South-eastward of *Bencolon*, and has a fine convenient Harbour to shelter Shipping from all Dangers caused by Storms, but the fresh Water is bad, and if drank any considerable Time, causes Gripings and Fluxes, but it wants a River to bring Pepper from the inland Countries. There is no Place of Commerce or Note between *Sillebar* and *Lampoun* Point, which is the Southwardmost Point on *Sumatra*, nor any Thing remarkable on the Sea-shore, but a small Village called *Pissangen*, which has a small low Island lying a little Way off it, and there is above forty Fathoms deep within an *English* Mile of the Shore. And the Island of *Engano* lies in the Offing, about twenty Leagues from it. It is an Island about three Leagues long, uninhabited, very smooth, without Mountains, and may be seen nine or ten Leagues off.

LAMPOUN lies twenty Leagues from the Point within the Streights of *Sunda*, at the Bottom of a deep Bay. The *English* had a good Pepper Factory there, but it being a Part of the King of *Bantam's* Dominions, that Factory was lost when the *Dutch* compelled the *English* to leave *Bantam*, in the Year 1683, and what *Lampoun* produces is carried to them at *Bantam*.

PULLAMBAM is a *Dutch* Factory that brings them great Quantities of Pepper, being under Contract with the King of *Pullambam*, and other inland Princes, to take off all their Pepper at a certain Price, I think it is for ten Pieces

Pieces of Eight, or fifty Shillings *Ster.* a *Babaar*, of four hundred Pounds *English* tuttle Weight, one Half to be paid in Money, and the other Half in Cloth. The Cloth Part the Company pays at seventy *per Cent.* on the prime Cost; but all other Nations are debarr'd Commerce there, except the *Chinese*, and by their Means the *English* come in for a Share of their Pepper, as our Ships pass through the Streights of *Banka*.

PULLAMBAM lies about eight Leagues from the Sea, on the Banks of a large River, which divides itself into several Branches, and they disembogue at four Mouths into the Sea. The *Dutch* keep two small Sloops cruising about those Mouths of the River, to prevent Smuggling, but I and many others have found Ways and Means to lade our Ships full with Pepper, notwithstanding the strict Guard. An hundred Pounds to the King, and as much to the *Dutch* Chief, make a Cargo of a thousand *Babaars* easily procur'd.

THE *Pullambam* Pepper is very foul, in so much that we seldom find less than ten or twelve *per Cent.* Garbage, but then we buy it for nine Pieces of Eight a *Babaar*. The *Dutch* lade off about three thousand Tuns *per Annum*, from this Place, and the *Chinese* and Natives lade off as much more. The Natives are obliged to carry theirs to *Batavia*, and sell to the *Dutch* Company, but if they meet with a Market by the Way, they'll embrace it; for the Company's Payment being most in Cloth at high Rates, they are not fond of trading with them.

THE *Dutch* Company formerly drove a good Trade in *Opium*, at *Pullambam*, which (like *French* Claret and Brandy) drew much ready Cash out of his Country, as those do out of ours, but in the Year 1708, the King ordered only the Importation of three Chests, each containing about 160 Pound Weight, and if Smugglers were detected, they paid their Goods and Lives for their Disobedience,

THE first Place of Commerce is the famous *Bantam*, where the *English* and *Danes* had their Factories flourishing till the Year 1682, at which Time the neighbourly *Dutch* fomented a War between the old King of *Bantam* and his Son, and because the Father would not come into their

Mea-

Measures, and be their humble Slave, they struck in with the Son, who was more covetous of a Crown than of Wisdom. They, with the Assistance of other Rebels, put the Son on the Throne, and took the old King Prisoner, and sent him to *Batavia*; and, in 1683, they pretended a Power from the new King to send the *English* and *Danes* a packing, which they did with a great deal of Insolence, according to Custom. They next fortified, by building a strong Fort within a Pistol-shot of one that the old King had built before to bridle their Insolence.

THE only Product of *Bantam* is Pepper, wherein it abounds so much, that they can export ten thousand Tuns *per Annum*. The Road is good, and secure for the Safety of Shipping. It is in a pleasant Bay, wherein are several small Islands, which retain their *English* Names still; and the Natives still lament the Loss of the *English* Trade among them, but the King has much more Reason than his Subjects to regret the Loss of their Commerce. The Good-will the Natives bear to the *Dutch* may be conjectured from their Treatment, when they find an Opportunity, for if an *Hollander* goes but a Musket-shot from their Fort, it is five to one if ever he returns, for they are dextrous in throwing a Lance, or shooting of poisoned Darts thro' a wooden Pipe or Trunk; and the King never redresses them, pretending the Criminal cannot be found.

BATAVIA is about twenty Leagues to the Eastward of *Bantam*, and a great Number of small Islands lie scattered in the Way, too tedious to mention. *Pullo-panjang* off *Bantam*, and *Edam* off *Batavia* are the most conspicuous, and the Road of *Batavia* is almost surrounded with Islands, some of them inhabited, and some not.

JAPARA, which formerly had an *English* Factory, but now is altogether in the *Dutch* Hands, is defended by two Forts, one on an Hill, and the other in a Plain, where the Town stands, and has a small River to wash its Walls. The Road is secured by two Islands that lie about a League off the Town. I bought good white Sugar in Cakes here for two *Dutch* Dollars *per Pecul*, being one hundred and forty Pounds *English* futtle Weight.

THE Religion of *Java* is partly *Mahometan* and partly *Pagan*. The *Pagans* choose Women to be Priestesses,
and

and they are generally old, and well skilled in Witchcraft. And it is reported, that they have frequent Conversation with the Devil, who appears to them in an horrid monstrous Shape, and the Priestesses sacrifice an Hog to him.

THE Island of *Madura*, that produces nothing for a foreign Market, but Deer Skins. They may be had in great Abundance, and very cheap. This Island confronts *Java* to its very easternmost Point.

THE Island *Timor* lies within twenty Leagues to the South of those four Islands abovementioned. It is a large Island about ninety Leagues long, and eighteen broad. The Natives acknowledge the King of *Portugal* their Sovereign and have embraced the *Romish* Religion. They permitted the *Portuguese* Colony of *Maccao* in *China*, to build a Fort on it, which they called *Leisaw*, and the *Dutch* a Factory called *Coupang*, but would never suffer either to interfere with the Government of their Country. The *Portuguese* of *Maccao* drove a very advantageous Trade to *Timor* for many Years, and finding the Natives inclined to be passive *Catholicks*, tried by fair Means to get the whole Government of the Country into the Church's Hands, but could not beguile them that Way, therefore they tried Forces, and commenced a War, but to their Cost they found, that the *Timoreans* would not lose their Liberty for fear of the Loss of Blood. They chose one *Gonsales Gomez* their General. He was a Native of *Timor*, and had travelled to *Maccao* and *Goa*. He allowed the King of *Portugal* to be the Sovereign and Protector of their Country, and they would be his loyal Subjects, providing their Laws and Liberties might be secured to them.

THAT War with the City of *Maccao* lasted about fifteen Years. It began about the Year 1688, and was not quite finished in the Year 1703, and *Maccao* in the End was ruined by it, for it exhausted both their Stock of Men and Money to such a Degree, that of one thousand Citizens the Town had before the War, there was hardly fifty left at the End of it, and of forty Sail of trading Ships, not above five left.

THE Vice-roy of *Goa* sent an Embassy to *Gonsales Gomez*, in the Year 1698, to persuade him to Peace, and to accept

accept of a Governor General and an Archbishop from *Goa*, but to no Purpose, for they declared, that they would admit of no foreign Governors in their Country, either in Church or State.

THE Natives report, that at a certain Season of the Year, after the South-west Monsoons are set in, they can discern an high mountainous Land to the Southward of them, and continues in Sight from *December* to the latter End of *February*, or the Beginning of *March*, and then disappears. If the Report be true, it must be some floating Island, that comes from and goes to *New Holland*, which is the next Tract of Land to the South of *Timor*. These Accounts I had from a *Portuguese* Gentleman called *Alexander Pinto*, who was a Captain at *Leifaw* four Years, and was bound from *Batavia* to *Goa* in the Year 1704. He went Passenger with me, and seem'd to be a Man of Probity.

THE Islands of *Banda*, where Cloves, Nutmegs, and Mace grow, are now all engrossed by the *Dutch*, who allow one of them called *Pullo-vey*, to belong to the *English*, after they had been at forty Years Pains to cut down all the Clove and Nutmeg Trees that grew on it, and have made it Death for the Natives ever to plant any on it.

THE *English* had also a Factory on *Pulloron*, but were glad to leave it about the Year 1618. The *Dutch* have that Island still, with *Loutore* and *Noro*, where they reap plentiful Crops of Spice.

I MUST now steer West north-west about thirty Leagues, to the famous Island of *Amboina*, where as real a Tragedy was acted on the *English*, as ever happened among Friends and Allies. The Story is too well known to need a Place here. However, at present it has altered its Scene, and turned prodigiously religious, having no less than fifty *Dutch Protestant* Churches on that holy Island, and the Natives are very fond and forward to turn Converts, especially since some *Amboinese* Youths have been sent to *Holland*, and trained up in their Universities, and honoured with Church Orders. They coming back to their own native Land, loaded with such fine Qualifications,

tions, and receiving great Respect from their Masters the *Dutch*, make the Conversion of the Populace very easy.

THE *Dutch* have so fortified *Amboina*, by their own Report, that they think it impregnable. It is true *Victoria Bay* is fathomless till Shipping come within a Mile of their Forts, and there is no other Place for anchoring on that Side of the Island, but I have heard some *Dutch* Officers, in disputing their Knowledge of *Amboina*, say, that on that Side that fronts the Coast of *Ceram*, there are several Places of anchoring at a Mile or two distant from the Shore, and never a Fort built to impede an Enemy's landing, and that if an Army superior in Force to what the *Dutch* have at *Victoria*, would march but six or seven Leagues by Land, they might come on the Back of the Town, and lodge on Hills so near it, that none could not pass the Streets in the Town, nor appear on their Bulwarks or Batteries; but this was a Secret that the *English* or *French* ought not to know.

ONE Captain *Ethbrington*, in a Ship called the *Resolution*, made a Trip to *Gilolo* about the Year 1692, and got forty Tuns of Spice. He called at *Batavia* in his Way to *England*, and the *Dutch* being very solicitous to know where he had been, he freely told them, to let them see the *English* were not quite ignorant of that Navigation, if they had a Mind to follow it.

I now continue my Course Westward along the *Æquator*, to the Island *Celebes*, the East-Side of which Island, and a great Number of smaller ones, are little frequented by Strangers, but on the South-west Corner of it is *Macassar*, where the *Dutch* have a Factory, but its chief Product is Corn, which indeed all those eastern Islands abound in, and consequently in Poultry. The Natives are of a light Olive Colour, and the Women well shaped, and pretty beautiful, for which Reason they are in great Esteem among the *Dutch* and *Chinese*, who buy them for Bed-fellows, and often marry them. The Men and Women are both short in Stature, but well featured, and well limb'd. They are very loving and faithful if well used, but exceeding revengeful if ill used. The Country is populous and very large, being almost two hundred Leagues long, but the Breadth unequal. At the broadest

est it is about seventy Leagues. About thirty Leagues Westward lies *Borneo*.

C H A P. XXIII.

Gives an Account of Borneo.

THE great Island of *Borneo*, or *Borneo*, the largest except *California*, in the known World. The West Side of it is for the most Part desert. On the South End lies *Pullo-laut*, a most excellent Harbour for Shipping. The Island is but thinly peopled its Product being nothing but Rice, but the North End of it lies near many Rivers that come out of the Pepper Countries. The Island is about twenty Leagues long, but of an unequal Breadth, tho' in some Parts it is twelve Leagues broad.

THERE is a Channel runs between *Pullo-laut* and the Island of *Borneo*, about two Miles broad, some Places narrower, and some broader, and from seven to five Fathoms deep, all the Way through, and there are several rising Grounds along that Shore, fit to build Houses on, which is a Rarity on the Sea Coast of *Borneo*, seldom to be met with. I heard Mr. *Sylvanus Landen*, who had been Chief of *Borneo*, say, that he much wondered why the Company of *England* should have settled a Factory at *Banjar-masseen*, where they were forced for several Years to keep their Factory on Flotes of great Trees tied together, and made fast to Trees growing in the Water, on the Side of a River, with Cables made of *Rottans*, and when they built a Factory, they were forced first to drive Poles in the Ground, to make a Foundation, as the *Dutch* do at *Amsterdam*, and raise Earth on them to build upon.

CAPTAIN *Barry*, a very ingenious Gentleman, drew the Plan, but died before the Work was brought to any great Forwardness, and Mr. *Cunningham*, who came thither from *Pullo-condore*, when that Factory was cut off by their *Macassar* Soldiers, came to the Head of the Company's Affairs. He was bred a Surgeon, and had turn'd *Virtuoso*, would spend whole Days in contemplating on the Nature, Shape, and Qualities of a Butterfly or a Shell-fish,

fish, and left the Management of the Company's Business to others as little capable as himself, so every one but he was Master.

THEIR Factory was not half finished before they began to domineer over the Natives, who past in their Boats up and down the River, and very imprudently would needs search one of the King's Boats, who was carrying a Lady of Quality down the River, which so provoked the King, that he swore Revenge, and accordingly gathered an Army, and shipp'd it on large *Praws*, to execute his Rage on the Factory and Shipping that lay on the River. The Company had two Ships, and there were two others that belonged to private Merchants, and I was pretty deeply concerned in one of them. The Factory receiving Advice of the King's Design, and the Preparations he had made, left their Factory, and went on board the Shipping, thinking themselves more secure on board than ashore. When all Things were in a Readiness, the Army came in the Night, with above one hundred *Praws*, and no less than three thousand desperate Fellows. Some landed and burnt the Factory and Fortifications, while others attack'd the Ships, which were prepared to receive them. The *English* had made fast Nettings from the Mizon to the fore Shrouds, about two Fathoms high above the Gunnel, that they might not be too suddenly boarded by the Enemy, and to have the Opportunity of using their Blunderbusses and Lances, before the Enemy could get on their Decks. As soon as they in the Ships saw the Fleet approaching near them, they plied their Guns with double Round and Partridge, and made a great Carnage, but all did not deter the Assailants from boarding, who when they got as high as the Gun-wall or Gunnel, were at a Loss how to get over the Netting, and so were killed with great Ease. Some got in at the head Door of one of the Ships, and killed some *English* in the Fore-castle, but they were soon destroyed. The two great Ships, tho' in Danger, beat off the Enemy with small Loss, but the little Ships were both burnt, with most of their Men, and one *Dutch* Gentleman who was obliged to fly from *Batavia* on one of the small Vessels, was also burnt in her. His Name was

Hoogh

Hoczh Camber, and had been Ambaffador to the King of *Perfia*.

I HEARD some *China* Men fay, who were there at the Time of the Engagement, that the *Engliſh* killed, (in two Hours that the Action was hot,) above one thouſand five hundred Men, beſides many wounded and maim'd, but the *Engliſh* were forced to be gone from their Settlement. The King thought his Revenge had gone far enough in driving them from their Settlement, and finding the Loſs of the *Engliſh* Trade affected his Revenue, he let all *Engliſh* who traded to *Johore* and other circum-jacent Countries, know, that he would ſtill continue a free Trade with the *Engliſh* on the old Footing, but would never ſuffer them, or any other Nation to build Forts in his Country. Several *Engliſh* have been there ſince, and loaded Pepper, and have been civilly treated; and the *Dutch* ſent a Ship from *Batavia* in the Year 1712, to trade with them, but the Natives refuſed Commerce with them.

THE inland Country is very mountainous, but towards the Sea very low and marſhy, occaſioned by the great Rains that continue about eight Months in the Year. It produces Rice, and many Sorts of Fruits in great Abundance. Pepper is peculiar to the Countries about *Banjaar*; and to the weſtward about *Succadaana*, they have ſmall Diamonds, but their Waters being inclined to be yellow, are not ſo much in Eſteem as thoſe of *Golcondah*.

THE *Engliſh* had formerly a Factory at *Succadaana*, but why they left it I know not, unleſs it was for the Un-wholeſomneſs of the Country; yet in the Year 1694, I met with a Ship from Fort St. George, bound to *Succadaana*, commanded by one Captain *Gullock*, who had been there the Year before, and praiſed it for a wholeſome Country, and the Inhabitants very civil and obliging. He bought ſome *Surat Baſtacs* of me, at forty five *per Cent.* on Invoice, and expected to make as much himſelf.

It is reported, that on the Coaſt of *Bornco*, between *Lao* and *Sobar*, there are many *Canibals*, but I never heard it confirmed by any but *Chineſe*. And from *Sobar* to *Succadaana*, the People are civil enough to Strangers.

SAMBAS is the next Country of Commerce to the Northward of *Succadaana*. It produces but very little Pepper,

but some Gold, Pearls, and Bees-wax, which makes it well frequented by the *Chinese*, who carry *Surat* Piece-goods from *Malacca* and *Johore*, and barter to very good Purpose for the aforefaid Commodities. Bees-wax is the current Cash in that Country. It is melted but not refined, and caſt in Moulds of an oblong Square, the Breadth about two Thirds of the Length, and the Thickneſs Half of the Breadth, and a *Rattan Wilky* to liſt them by, caſt in the Wax. A Piece weighs a Quarter of a *Pecul*, which comes to in *Engliſh* Weight, thirty four Pounds, and a *Pecul* is valued in Payments at ten *Meſſies*, or forty Shillings *Sterl.* They have alſo for ſmaller Payments Pieces of Eight to a *Pecul* and Sixteenths, and for ſmaller Money they have *Couries*. The Prince and People are very hoſpitable and civil, ſo that Strangers trade there with Security. I knew a *French Armenian*, who coming from *Manilla*, had the Miſfortune to loſe his Ship on that Part of the Coaſt that belongs to the King of *Sambas*. They had but little Goods, for generally *Spaniſh* Dollars are the common Return for Goods ſold at *Manilla*. When the People that were ſhipwreck'd came aſhore, they were carried to the King, who examined what they were, from whence they came, and whither bound, with what they were loaded, and ſeveral other Interrogatories, and then ordered them Proviſions, and Men and Boats to aſſiſt them in ſaving their Treafure, for there was but very little loſt beſides the Ship and Stores that were not worth the Trouble of ſaving. The King gave him Pearls and Bees-wax for his Silver, at ſuch reaſonable Rates, that the *Armenian* gained forty *per Cent.* at *Batavia*, (whither he went on a *China* Veſſels) for the Goods he diſpoſed of there. At *Batavia* he took Paſſage on board a *French* Ship for *China*, and in their Way called at *Trangano*, where I met with him in the Year 1719. I had the whole Account from himſelf, and ſaw ſome beautiful Pearls that he was carrying to the *China* Market, and among them a Pair of Pears worth fifty Pounds *Sterl.*

THE *Chinese* drive a ſmall Trade from *Siam* and *Cambodia*, to the Town called *Borneo*, that lies about eighty Leagues to the Northward of *Sambas*, and theſe are all the trading Places that lie about the North End of this Iſland,
that

that I could hear of. The Religion in *Borneo* is *Pagan*, except in some Places on the Sea Coast there are some *Mahometans*, and so I must leave *Borneo*, and steer my Course towards the Coast of *Jobore* on the Continent, but in my Way there are two Clusters of Islands that lie half-way. One is called *Anambaz*, and the other *Natuna*, but by the Natives *Sciartan*, is the common Appellation for both Clusters. Their Inhabitants are called *Bougies*, a fierce desperate People, and the only Product of those Islands is Betle-nut, and the Religion *Mahometan*. The Islands are very high, and may be easily seen in a clear Day above fifteen Leagues.

THE *Jobore* Islands to the North-eastward of the Promontory of *Romano*, (from whence I took my Departure, when I steered among the Islands) are first *Pullo-tingi*, then *Pullo-aure*, then *Pullo-pisang*, and then *Pullo-timoun*, the highest and largest among them. They are all inhabited and produce Poultry, and small Goats, and some Fruits, but no Commodities for Export. Their Religion is *Mahometan*.

PAHAUNG lies North-west of *Pullo-timoun*, about twenty Leagues distant. *Pullo-varella* lies in the Way, but it is rather a Rock than an Island, therefore hardly worth noticing. *Pabaung* River has a pretty large Island lying in its Mouth, which makes two Channels into it. The North Entry has no less than four Fathoms and an Half at High-water, and the Channel is about an hundred and fifty Yards broad. Just within the Bar is good secure Anchoring in six Fathoms, and there are good fresh Water Springs within two hundred Paces of the Sea-shore. The River is a Mile broad, but so full of Banks, that it is with Trouble a small Vessel of thirty Tuns can go to the Town, which lies about twelve Miles up the River, where I left *Rajah Bowncea*, before I took my Ramble among the Islands. He was there in the Year 1719, with five or six hundred Men to keep that Country firm to his Father.

PAHAUNG River runs far into the Country, and washes the Foot of *Malacca* Hill. There is abundance of Gold Dust found in it, and I have seen some Lumps of five or six Ounces each. They do not dive for the Dust

above three Fathoms, tho' there are some Places in the River above ten deep, and generally where the deepest Water is, most Gold-dust is found. It has exported some Years above eight hundred Weight. Along the Sides of the River Pepper is planted for Export, but not above three hundred Tuns in a Year, because they want Vend for more, tho', if they had a Market to carry it off, in five Years Time they could make a Product of three thousand Tuns. Besides Pepper and Gold, there are Tin and Elephants Teeth, but in no great Plenty, and the best Canes in the World grow hereabout. The Country is woody, and is stor'd with wild Game and Fruits, their Rivers and Sea with great Plenty and Variety of excellent Fish, but the Country is not reckoned very healthful, because of the Abundance of Rains. *Trangano* is the next Place of Note for Commerce, and in the Year 1720, the Place of Residence of a poor distress'd King, who by a senseless Devotion to Superstition, ruin'd his Country and his own Family.

I GAVE an Account before of his Brother's tragical End, and the daring boldness of a Youth that shewed him the Way to die by his own Hand. In 1719, I saw the Youth waiting on the King, and fanning him with a Peacock's Tail. In my Way to *Siam*, I called at *Trangano*, and went to wait on him, and he remembered that he had been acquainted with me five and twenty Years before. I staid about a Week, and every Day he wanted to see me. He often repented his taking the Weight of Sovereignty on his Shoulders, and feared that his End would prove as tragical as his Brothers.

TRANGANO stands pleasantly near the Sea, on the Side of a River that has a shallow Bar, and many Rocks scattered to and again within the River, but Room enough in many Places to moor small Ships very securely, to keep them safe from the Dangers of the Winds or Floods. There may be about one thousand Houses in it, not built in regular Streets, but scattered in ten or twenty in a Place distant a little Way from another's *Villa* of the same Magnitude. The Town is above half-peopled with *Chinese*, who have a good Trade for three or four *Junks* yearly, besides some that trade to *Siam*, *Cambodia*, *Tunqueen* and *Sambas*,

Sambas. When I came back from *Siam* with my Cargo unfold, as I mentioned before, I came to *Trangano* to dispose of what I could of my Goods, and to procure a new Cargo for *Surat*, the kind King assisted me in doing both, with all the Readiness and Cheerfulness imaginable.

WHILE my Ship lay in the Road, the *Bougies* came with a Fleet of two hundred Sail of *Praws*, designing to plunder the Town of *Trangano*; but they were afraid to pass so near our Guns, as they must have been necessitated to do before they could get into the River. When they came to a Place about five Leagues off, they sent a *Praw* to my Ship, and the Officer told me, that he had a Commission to profer and pay me three thousand *Spanish* Dollars, if I would let them pass quietly into the River. I ordered him away, and threatened, that, if they came, they should feel the Force of my Powder and Shot. When I came ashore, the King ask'd me if I would protect him. I told him I would with all the Force I had. He wept, as if he had been diffident, and desired that I would take him on board of my Ship, and carry him whithersoever I went, for his Life was burdensome to him, and he could trust none of his own People. I persuaded him that I was sincere in my Resolution to protect him, and that it would look too mean to run away from his Kingdom, while there was a Possibility to regain it.

He told me, that he had sent Ambassadors to the *Dutch* at *Malacca* for Assistance, according to the ancient League between his Ancestors and them, when they joined their Forces to expel the *Portuguese* from *Malacca*; but instead of finding Relief there, his Enemies were assisted with Powder and Shot, and his rebellious Subjects had a safe Retreat at *Malacca*.

I ADVISED him to take Protection from the *Dutch*, and allow them the Monopolization of the Trade of his Country, and to part the Revenues between him and them. He seemed to be offended with the Proposal, but he said he would be glad if the *English* would settle in his Dominions, and fortify what Places they pleased, and that he would willingly come under their Protection, and that there were none that ever entertained the *Dutch* in their

Countries as Guests but would willingly be quit of them again, if they could.

THERE happened to come a *French* Ship thither at that Time, being bound to *China*. The King gave the Captain and me an Invitation to Dinner, and, after we had regaled ourselves, we entered on a Discourse of the miserable State of a Country under the Malignancy of a civil War. He asked us, if such Calamities had happened to *England* or *France*. We assured him there had been often such Distempers among us, but that when the Disease was cured, our State became as strong and vigorous as ever.

He had several Times ask'd me, if I thought the *English* might be persuaded to settle a Colony in his Country, that *Pabaung* might be made a Place of great Trade, if there were Shipping and Stock to carry off the Pepper and Tin which that Country alone could produce. I told him, I could give him no Encouragement to believe they would.

He then despairing of getting an *English* Colony settled, proposed to Mr. *Pedro-villamont* Garden, who commanded the *French* Ship, if he thought the *French* Nation might be induced to settle in his Dominions, and the *French* Gentleman gave him Hopes that the King of *France* might be induced to accept of his Friendship, and settle a Colony, providing he would certify his Request by a Letter, which the King of *Johore* readily agreed to. It was written in the *Malayan* Language, and translated by a *Chinese* into *Portuguese*, and I translated it from that Language into *English*. The Original and the *English* Translation were delivered to the *French* Captain, but I never heard of it since.

He told me, that when I came to *Bombay*, I should acquaint the Governor of the Desire he had to live under the Protection of the *English*, and that with one hundred and fifty Men they might bridle the Insolence of his own rebellious Subjects, and their Allies the *Bougies* too.

TRANGANO is a very pleasant and healthful Country, and affords a fine Landskip from the Sea. The Hills are low, and covered with ever-green Trees, that accommodate the Inhabitants with Variety of delicious Fruits, such

as Lemons, Oranges, Limes, *Mangoes*, *Mangostans*, *Rambostans*, *Letchees* and *Dureans*: And in the Vallies, Corn, Pulse and Sugar-canes. The Ground is cultivated by the *Chineſe*, for the lazy *Malayas* cannot take that Trouble.

THE Product of the Country is Pepper and Gold, which are moſtly exported by the *Chineſe*. About three hundred Tuns are the common Export of Pepper, and we have it almoſt for one half of the Price that we pay for *Malabar* Pepper. From the Month of *October* till *March*, their River is ſhut up by the Bar, which fills up by the Impetuofity of the great Seas ſent on that Shore by the North-eaſt Monſoons; but in the Months of *July* and *Auguſt* their Seas produce the fineſt Fiſh that ever I ſaw or taſted. There is one Sort exactly like a Salmon, both in Shape and Taſte, but the Fiſh is white, as the Salinon is red. Their Poultry are large, plump and ſweet, but Beef is ſcarce, except Buffalo Beef, and that is plentiful enough.

IN the Year 1720, the *Bougies* came to *Pullo-capafs*, which is but five Leagues from *Trangano*; but there are other Iſlands that lie twelve Leagues more ſoutherly, called, in the Maps, by the Name of *Pullo-capafs*, but their right Name, which the Natives call them by, is *Pullo-tetang*.

HOWEVER, from *Pullo-capafs* the *Bougies* ſent an Embaſſy to *Trangano*, pretending an Accommodation with the King, to ſee if he would allow them to enjoy the Continent and Iſlands beyond the Promontory of *Romano*, and they would leave him the quiet Poſſeſſion of the reſt; and, while they were in a large Hall conſerring, ſome unuſual ſudden Noiſe happened to be heard from without, which the guilty *Bougies* taking to be ſome Deſign in Execution againſt them, one of them runs to the King, and creſt him to the Heart, which made a very great Diſorder, and many were killed on both Sides; and what *Bougies* remained, got on board of their Gallies, and poſted to their Fleet at *Pullo-capafs*, with the News of what had happened at *Trangano*, and next Day the *Bougies* went into the River, and plundered the Town, except certain Houſes which belonged to the *Dattabandaar*, or firſt Mi- niſter, whom the King in his Life-time, ever miſtruſted, but,

but, by the ill Situation of his Affairs, was obliged to hide his Thoughts, and defer his Resentments till a proper Time.

SIAM. The City stands on an Island in the River *Memnon*, which, by Turnings and Windings, makes the Distance from the Bar about fifty Leagues. The Country is low, and as fruitful as any Spot of Ground in the World, in Rice, Legumen, Fruits and Roots, Cattle wild and tame. And the River abounds in many Species of excellent Fish, which plentifully indulge the Inhabitants, and make them indolent and lazy, and consequently proud, superstitious and wanton.

THERE are reckoned no less than fifty thousand Clergymen or *Tallapoys* belonging to the Temples in and about the City of *Siam*; but they are easy to the State, having no stated Benefices or other Revenues, and yet they are plentifully supplied with all the Necessaries of Life by the Charity and Benevolence of the Laity.

THERE is one Temple about three Miles below the City, on the opposite Side of the River, called the *Fishes* Temple, because annually in the Month of *September*, when the Floods overflow the low Ground, (as in *Egypt*) there are good Numbers of Fishes, almost like small Salmon, that frequent a Pond close to that Temple, and are to be found in no other Place in the *Siam* Dominions, and they are so tame, that they will come close to our Boats, and frisk and play on the Surface of the Water, if any Body has a Mind to feed them with Bread, Cocoa-nut Meat, or other Food that does not easily separate. 'Tis only to hold some near the Surface of the Water, and they will take it familiarly from the Hand. I have often taken Pleasure to feed them, and see them play, but as soon as we leave off feeding them, they will withdraw, so that hardly one is to be seen till a new Supply of Victuals is offered to them.

THE *French* have a Bishop at *Siam*, with a Church and a Seminary for the Education of Converts. They stand a little above the City, on the opposite Side of the River. They make but few Converts, except when Corn is dear, and then some of the poorer Sort receive Baptism, which intitles them to a Maintenance from the Church, but,
when

when Plenty returns, they throw away their Beads and Saint, and bid farewell to *Christianity*. In the Year 1720, there were not above seventy *Christians* in and about *Siam*, and they the most dissolute, lazy, thievish Rascals that were to be found in the Country.

The *Dutch* have a Factory there, about a Mile below the Town, on the same Side of the River. Their greatest Investments are in Tin, Sapan-wood and Deers Skins, which they buy up for the *Japon* Market. The *Siam* Market takes off but little *European* Goods; however the *Dutch* Chief makes a pretty good Figure there.

THE *English*, for many Years, had also a Factory there, till about the Year 1686, the *East-India* Company seeking Occasions to pick a Quarrel with the *Siamers*, in order to withdraw, they took hold of such as they could first find, tho' never so frivolous. The first was about the Year 1684. The *Carolina* bound from *England* to *China*, had the Misfortune to lose her Passage, and coming to *Siam* to pass away the North-east Monsoons, and the King of *Siam* having Occasion for some Stores for Shipping out of the *Carolina's* Cargo, to equip some Ships that he had built in order to humble the *Cambodians* and the *Cochin-chinese*, who disturbed the Navigation of his Country, he civilly requested the *English* Chief to supply him at the Prices the same Commodities used to be sold at to Merchants, but he could not find that Favour, which he resented, and threatened to disturb their Commerce. At length they supplied him with some Part of what he demanded, to avert the ill Consequences that might happen by a total Refusal. This was represented to the Company in the darkest Colours, and they thought that sufficient to ground a War on; but they had, at that Time, a Fleet of large Ships, which they had equipp'd to regain their Trade of *Bantam* and other Places, which the *Dutch* had insolently robbed them of; but they were disappointed by the deep Politicks of King *Charles II.* as is before observed.

HOWEVER, the King of *Siam* continued his Indulgence to the Company and their Servants, in much Affluence and Luxury, continually carousing in Debaucheries with Wine and Women, till their common Salaries and Gains
by

by Trade, were in no Proportion to their extravagant Expences, however that being a free Country, they had Liberty to spend their own and their Masters Estates, as they pleased.

THE King of *Siam* having formed the Design of a War, as above mentioned, with *Cambodia* and *Cochin-china*, employed a good Number of *English* who had resorted to *Siam*, to partake of the King's Indulgence and Bounty, and to help the Company's Servants to spend their Money. All the *English* who had a Mind to lift themselves on board of his Fleet, had great Encouragement of honourable Posts and good Salaries well paid, and they did perform Actions in the War worthy of the Bravery and Courage of the *English* Nation, by which the King's Favour to the *English*, increased more than before the War.

ABOUT the Year 1680, there was one *Constantine Falcon*, a *Greek* by Birth, that some Years before had shipp'd himself Steward of an *English* Ship at *London*, bound to *India*, and being ordered for *Siam*, and finding some ill Treatment on board, he deserted from the Ship, and fled to a small Village some Distance from the City, where he amused himself in learning the *Siam* Language. He being a sober, ingenious, and industrious Person, soon made himself Master of the Language, and served as an Interpreter for the *English* at Court, where he was remarkably taken Notice of, and got a Post there. His Behaviour recommended him to greater Preferments, so that in a very few Years he became prime Minister of State, and behaved himself so well in that high Station, that every Thing belonging to the State of the Country prospered, so that *Siam* became the richest and powerfulest Kingdom in that Part of the World.

THE *Jesuits* hearing that one of the *Romish* Communion sat at the Helm of the *Siam* Affairs, and it being a rich Country, brought whole Troops of them into *Siam*, who got the whole Management of Affairs into their Hands, through the Interest of the *Barkalong*, that being the Appellation of first Minister. They tickled themselves with the Fancy of bringing the whole Kingdom of *Siam* under the Pope's Jurisdiction, and in the Year 1683, the first Year of his Ministry, they got the King to send an Embassy

baſſay to the King of *France*, which Ambaſſador came alſo to *London*, and ſettled a Treaty of Commerce for the *Engliſh* that ſhould trade in *Siam*.

THE Jeſuits impoſed on the King of *France*, and made him believe, that if he would ſend an Embaſſy to *Siam*, that King would leave his own Superſtition, and embrace theirs. Accordingly an Ambaſſador was ſent, with many valuable *French* Curioſities, and among them a very fine Maſs-book, with beautiful Cuts of all the firſt Rate Saints in the *Romiſh* Kalendar.

On the Ambaſſador's Arrival, he was received with the Reſpect due to his Character, and when the Preſents were laid before the King, according to Cuſtom, he ſeem'd much pleaſed with their Curioſity, but when he viewed the Pictures in the Maſs-book, he aſk'd a *Jeſuit* who was Interpreter, what they were, who answered, that they were the Pictures of holy Men now in Heaven, and ſuch as his Brother the King of *France* adored, and as he deſigned an eternal Friendſhip with his Majeſty, he hoped that he would alſo adore thoſe Pictures, and worſhip the Images of thoſe Saints, rather than thoſe Idols that were worſhipped all over his Dominions. The King returned Answer, that the Gods of his Country had been auſpicious to them who lived in it for Time out of Mind, and as it would be unjuſt and ungrateful to baniſh thoſe Gods that had been ſo long very kind to his Predeceſſors and himſelf, ſo he could not turn his old Gods off and take new ones in their Places that he did not ſo well know, and that he would oblige his Brother of *France* in any Thing but that.

THE King of *France* complimented Mr. *Falcon* with the Order of Knighthood, and in his Letter to him, wherein he recommended the *French* Affairs to his Care, particularly that of Religion, he ſtil'd him Loving Couſin and Counſellor.

AFTER the Embaſſy was gone from *Siam* to *France*, the *Jeſuits* thought of nothing but bringing the Trade of *Siam* under the Power of the *French*, and in order to that, got the King to order the building of a Fort on the River's Side, oppoſite to the Fort of *Bencock*, a Town about twenty Leagues below the City of *Siam*, and to have it
mann'd

mann'd with a Garrison of *French*, to be paid by the Exchequer of *Siam*, and all this was granted according to their Mind. When the *French* got Possession they grew intolerably arrogant, which made the *Siamers* uneasy, and murmured at the King's Weakness, but that was in private, for certain Destruction is the sure Reward of talking publickly of any Mismanagement of the State, for a King of *Siam* can no more err in Politicks, than a Pope can in Matters of Faith.

YET about the Year 1688, by some malevolent Planet that over-ruled his Actions, he made a War with his Neighbours the Kings of *Cambodia*, and *Cochin-China*. He sent an Army by Land, and a Fleet by Sea, to carry on the War, but was not successful by Land. However in the Land-army there was a mean Person, a Citizen of *Siam*, who kept a Fruit-shop, he had a bold daring Spirit, and behaved himself so well on all Occasions, in the Land War, that he came to Preferment, and at last was made Generalissimo, and then ended the War to the Satisfaction of the whole Army abroad, and his Prince at home; but when he brought back the Army to *Siam*, seeing the King wrapt up in the Opinion he had of the *Jesuits* Counsels, and the Management they had in the Affairs of State, by the Countenance of the King and his first Minister my Lord *Falcon*, he pick'd a Quarrel with the King, and having most of the Army at his Devotion, seized his Master and put him to Death, after the Manner of royal Criminals, or as Princes of the Blood are treated when convicted of capital Crimes, which is, by putting them into a large Iron Caldron, and pounding them to Pieces with wooden Pestles, because none of their royal Blood must be spilt on the Ground, it being by their Religion, thought great Impiety to contaminate the divine Blood, by mixing it with Earth. And after he had murdered his Master, he summoned all the *Mandereens* in the City, to hold a Council in the Palace.

My Lord *Falcon*, for that was generally his Designation, had, by his civil Deportment towards People of all Ranks and Degrees, so ingratiated himself, that he had a stronger Party by far, both in the City and Country, than the General; and besides, had all the Fleet at his Devotion.

Devotion. Many of my Lord's Friends dissuaded him from obeying the Summons, but to raise the Forces of the City, and revenge the Death of the King, and many Officers of the Army that detested the Regicide would have come over to his Party, which at least was above fifty thousand strong, but being infatuate, he was deaf to all good Advice, and went to the Palace, where as soon as he had set his Foot, he was seized by the General's Guards, and beheaded, so the Ufurper took the Sovereignty into his own Hands, and at that Instant was by *jure divino* made an infallible Favourite of Heaven, and the Sun, Moon, and Stars, had the Honour to be his near Relations.

HAD my Lord *Falcon* followed his Friends Advice, or had Courage answerable to his other good Qualities, he had certainly been honoured with the Diadem in *Siam*, and if he had introduced *Papery* in the Place of *Paganism*, he had been honoured with a Place in the Pope's Almanack, but his Pusillanimity made him unworthy of both.

I SAW my Lady *Falcon* in the Year 1719, and she was then honoured with the Superintendency of his Majesty's Confectionary. She was born in *Siam* of honourable Parents, and at that Time much respected both in the Court and City, for her Prudence and Humanity to Natives and Strangers, when they came into Difficulties, or under the Weight of Oppressions from the Officers of the Court or City.

WHEN the *Siam* Ambassador returned from *France* and *England*, in the murdered King's Time, his Master, among many other Questions, ask'd him, if the King of *France* had any Palaces like his at *Siam*, for Beauty and Magnitude, and the poor Man unadvisedly told him Truth, that in *France* were many finer, nay, that the King of *France's* Horse Stables in *Paris*, exceeded any Buildings in *India*, which his Majesty took so ill, that he disgrac'd him, and was very near losing his Head for his telling Truth.

THE King bestows his anniversary Blessing on his People in the Month of *September*, when he passes through the City attended with a numerous Train of Elephants, among whom is the white Elephant, but he is only of a
Cream

Cream Colour, and I have seen several at *Bangary*, a Village near *Jonceyloan*, as white as him. All the Elephants that Day are dressed in their finest Trappings, with Drums, Trumpets, Hautboys, and other musical Instruments.

In the Month of *November* he also shews himself on the River, in a *Ballong* or Barge of thirty or forty Yards long about two Yards broad, and two Foot deep, with a Throne placed near the Middle of her Length, about seven Foot high and a rich Canopy over his Head, and being seated on the Throne, his greatest Lords or Minions sit under the Throne, and about fifty or sixty Rowers a-fore and be-aft the Throne, (clothed in Carnation coloured Waist-coats, with fine Caps or Turbands on their Heads) to row or paddle his Majesty wherever he orders them, and there are ordinarily above a thousand other Barges to wait on his Majesty, besides several thousands of other common *Ballongs*, insomuch, that for five or six Miles, the River is covered with Boats, except near his Majesty's Barge, and there is half a Mile of the River clear for his Barge to move in.

ABOUT four or five in the Evening, he goes in his Barge to a Temple about three Miles above the City, on the opposite Side of the River, where the Priests pray for him, and present him with two Yards and an Half of Cotton Cloth, that must be spun and woven the same Day that the King comes to receive it. After Sun sets, he embarks again, and is attended in State to his Palace.

HIS Reason for honouring the River and his People that Time of the Year, is to forbid the River formally to flow higher or longer than such a Number of Inches in Height, or of Days in Time, as he sets it; yet sometimes it disobeys his royal Commands.

ALL the *Manderines* belonging to the Government, whose Affairs require their Residence in the City, whose Numbers generally amount to three thousand, must daily attend in the Palace, except they have Leave to be absent, and if any one transgresses, he is severely whipt with split *Rottans*, which cut pretty deep into the Flesh, and leave conspicuous Marks behind them. The greater the Marks appear, the greater the Honour they take them to be.

And

And the pretty Ladies are not exempted from the Flagellation, for very small Faults. And I have seen some pretty agreeable young Gentlewomen with *Rattan* Marks on their Backs, which they are so far from covering, that as they pass the Streets, they expose their Backs, tho' their Breasts, Bellies, and Necks are covered with a Scarf, seeming to glory in being so much taken Notice of by the greatest King on Earth.

THE Women in *Siam* are the only Merchants in buying Goods, and some of them trade very considerably. The Husbands in general are maintained by the Industry of their Wives. And the *Europeans* that trade to *Siam*, accommodate themselves as they do in *Pegu*, with temporary Wives, almost on the same Conditions too, and it is thought no Disgrace to have had many temporary Husbands, but rather an Honour that they have been beloved by so many different Men. The *Christian* Priests cry down that Way of Marrying, and want every Heretick, as well as *Christian Catholick*, to be tied to some young Lasses of their bringing up, but the Hereticks, according to their innate Principles, generally continue deaf and obstinate to the grave Advice and sound Doctrine of the holy Fathers, and marry according to the *Siam* Way.

AFTER the Usurper had settled himself on the Throne of *Siam*, he ordered the *French* to deliver their Fort at *Bencock*, to an Officer that he sent to take Possession of it, but they refused, without first making Terms for themselves, on which he sent a Part of his Army to attack it, and threatened every Man's Life that returned before it was taken. His Orders were punctually put in Execution, and all the *French* got, was the Honour of dying bravely in Defence of their Liberty. The Fort stands still undemolished, but no Artillery is in it.

IN the Year 1719, I went thither with a Cargo to dispose on, expecting to trade on the Footing of the old Treaty concluded at *London* with the King of *England*, and the King of *Siam*'s Ambassador, in the Year 1684; but on my Arrival, I found that Mr. *Collet*, Governor of Fort St. *George*, had cancelled that Agreement by his Ambassador *Powny*, and the new Conditions being too hard for me to stand to, I solicited for Liberty to depart again with my

Ship and Cargo, which I could not obtain in less than four Months.

Collet's Attorney at the Court of *Siam*, was a *Persian* by Birth, but had come to *Siam* with his Father when a very young, and had remained about forty Years at *Siam*. He was as complete a Rascal as *Collet* could have found for his villainous Purposes, for by false Informations to the King, he had brought many honest Men into Trouble, and some Treasure into the King's Coffers.

WHEN I understood that he was the *Remora* that had put a Stop to my Commerce, I tried if I could remove him by large Presents, but all to no Purpose, for if I traded, it must be on the Scheme laid down by *Collet*, by the Negotiation of *Powny*, who kept one *Collicen* as his Resident at *Siam*, to consult and inform the *Persian* of the best Methods to ruin the *English* Traders that had not *Collet's* Letters of Protection.

THIS *Persian* (whose Name was *Oia Semerat*) and I, were discoursing one Day of my Affairs in the *Indians* Language, which is the established Language spoken in the *Mogul's* large Dominions, and, among other Things, I was laying down to him the Difficulties that might attend the King of *Siam's* Trade, carried on from *Merje* to Fort St. George, because if the rest of the *English* Colonies were forbid trading with *Siam*, they had just Cause to forbid his Subjects to trade to Fort St. George, or any where else, and that other Troubles might arise to the King's Affairs, by thus imposing on the King, who was ignorant of the Consequences that might follow in breaking the Agreement made in *England*, without so much as once giving Warning to the *English* Colonies of other Parts of *India*.

HE answered me, that the King of Fort St. George could best give me an Answer, who was able to protect the King of *Siam's* Trade thither, and that his Majesty had no other foreign Trade but *Japan* that he valued, and the *English* had no Trade that Way to disturb his Master's Commerce, and that if I did not comply with the Agreement made by *Powny* in *Collet's* Name, I might go away when I could.

SIAM Bar is only a large Bank of soft Mud, and, at Spring-tides, not above ten or eleven Foot Water on it.

It

It is easy getting into it in the South-west Monsoons, because, in two or three Tides, with the Motion the Ship receives from the small Waves and the Assistance of the Wind, she slides thro' the Mud. My Ship drew thirteen Foot, and we had not above nine, on the Bar when we went into the River, but coming out with the North-east Monsoons, the Sea being smooth, we are obliged to warp out with Anchors and Haulers, and, if the Ship draws any considerable Draught of Water, we are sometimes two Springs in warping over, but, at twelve Foot Draught, I got over in four Tides.

BANKASOY River lies but four or five Leagues to the Eastward of *Siam* Bar, and there are two Islands, called the *Dutch* Islands, where great Ships are obliged to stay in the South-west Monsoons, when they cannot get Water over the Bar that bears off it South-east and by South, about nine Leagues distant

I OBSERVED before, that the Company sent the *Herbert* and another Ship from *England* in the Year 1685, and in 1686, as the *Herbert* lay at those Islands, one Captain *Udal*, who commanded her, died, and the succeeding Captain carried his Corps ashore, and buried it in a pretty deep Grave. Two Days after, some of the Ship's People going ashore, had the Curiosity to go and see the Grave. When they came near, to their great Wonder, they saw the Corps stripp'd of its winding Sheet, and set upright against a Tree. It was afterwards put again into the Coffin, and buried in the same Grave, with a Quantity of heavy Stones on it, and next Day they came to the Grave, and found it opened a second Time, with the Corps standing upright against another Tree, so they made fast some Stones to it, and carried it a pretty Way into the Sea, and buried it in the Water, where it remained undisturbed. This strange Resurrection left Room for various Conjectures, but the most probable seemed to be, that some Sorcerers took it up, and put it in that Posture, whilst they, by their Sorceries or Incantations, interrogate it about future Events, and received Answers thro' human Organs. The Matter of Fact I have heard often affirmed by several who were there at the Time and saw it, which made me enquire, if any People in *Siam* used to

enquire about future Events after that Manner, and I was told that they did.

CH A P. XXIV.

Gives an Account of Cambodia, its Trade; also of a late War brought into their Country by the Siamer, and the ill Success they had.

THE first Sea-port to be met with is *Cupangsoap*, a Town in the Doninions of *Cambodia*. It affords Elephants Teeth, Stickleck, and the Gum *Cambouge* or *Cambodia*; but there is no free Commerce allowed there, without a Licence from the Court of *Cambodia*.

THE next Place is *Ponteamafs*, a Place of pretty good Trade for many Years, having the Conveniency of a pretty deep but narrow River, which, in the rainy Seasons of the South-west Monsoons, has Communication with *Bansack* or *Cambodia* River, which Conveniency made it draw foreign Commerce from the City of *Cambodia* hither; for the City lying near one hundred Leagues up the River, and most Part of the Way a continual Stream running downward, made the Navigation to the City so long and troublesome, that few cared to trade to it, for which Reasons foreign Commerce chose to come to *Ponteamafs*, and it flourished pretty well till the Year 1717, that the *Siam* Fleet destroyed it.

THE City of *Cambodia* stands on the Side of the great River, about fifty or sixty Leagues from *Ponteamafs* by Land, or by Water in the South-west Monsoons. The Country produces Gold of twenty one *Carats* fine, raw Silk at one hundred and twenty Dollars *per Pecul*, Elephants Teeth at fifty to fifty-five Dollars for the largest. The small are of different Prices. They have also much Sapan-wood, Sandal-wood, Agala-wood, Stickleck, and many Sorts of physical Drugs, and Lack for Japaning. They are very desirous of having a Trade with the *English*; but they will not suffer the *Dutch* to settle Factories in their Country.

PRO-

PROVISIONS of Flesh and Fish are plentiful and cheap, and are the only Things that may be bought without a Permit from the King. I have bought a Bullock, that weighed between four and five hundred Weight, for a *Spanish* Dollar; and Rice is bought at Eight-pence *per Pecul*, which is about one hundred and forty *lb.* but Poultry are scarce, because the Country being for the most Part woody, when the Chickens grow big, they go to the Woods, and shift for themselves. Tigers and wild Elephants are numerous in the Woods, and there are also wild Cattle and Buffaloes, and Plenty of Deer, all which Animals every Body is free to catch or kill.

THERE are about two hundred *Topasses*, or *Indian Portuguese* settled and married in *Sambodia*, and some of them have pretty good Posts in the Government, and live great after the Fashion of that Country; but they have no Priests, nor will any venture to go among them; for in the Year 1710, a poor Capuchin went there to officiate, and finding one of the toppingest of his Congregation to have two Wives, ordered him, by virtue of his sacerdotal Power, to put one of them away, but his Parishioner would not obey in that Point, which made the Priest use the Weapon of Excommunication against him, which the other took in such Dudgeon, that he knock'd his spiritual Guide's Brains out. Since that Time they wrote to *Siam* and *Macao* in *China* for some more ghostly Fathers, but not one will go.

THEY all of them have small Pensions from the King, but too narrow to maintain them, so they go to the Woods with Fire-Arms, and kill wild Elephants for their Teeth, which they sell to Foreigners; and their Way of killing them is very singular, for they form a Piece of Iron like a Slug, and the foremost End is made sharp. In the Woods grow certain Trees with a thick Bark of a violent poisonous Quality. They drive the sharp End of the Slug into the Bark, and let it stay a short Time in it, then put the Slug into their Gun charged with Powder, and coming near the Beast, fire the Slug into its Body. The Elephant being thus wounded, flees from the Man, but the Man keeps Sight of it for a small Space of Time, and then it drops down dead.

AND with the same poisoned Slugs they kill Cattle and Buffaloes, for their Tongues. This subtil Poison has also another strange Quality, that if Men become hungry or thirsty, (as they often do in the Woods) they squeeze a few Drops of it on a Leaf of a Tree, and they licking the Leaf, it gives immediate Refreshment; but if the Skin be broken, and the Juice touch the Part, it proves mortal without Remedy.

THE *Cambodians* are of a light-brown Complexion, and very well shap'd, their Hair long, and Beards thin. Their Women are very handsome, but not very modest. The Men wear a Vestment like our Night-gowns, but nothing on their Heads or Feet. The Women wear a Petticoat reaching below the Ankle, and on their Bodies a Frock made close and meet for their Bodies and Arms, and both Sexes dress their Hair.

I SAW none of their Priests, but understood from my Interpreter, that they worship the same Gods that are adored in *Siam*. They worship the great God under the Name of *Tipedab*, and *Praw Prum*, and *Praw Prout*, are his Sons. The Church subsists by Free-will-offerings, and their Priests are not much respected, being generally chosen from among the lower Sort of the Laity.

THE Kingdom of *Laos* borders on *Siam*, *Cambodia*, *Cochin-china*, and *Tonquin*. It produces Gold, raw Silk, and Elephants Teeth are so plentiful, that they stake their Fields and Gardens about with them, to keep out wild Hogs and Cattle from destroying their Fruit and Corn. They are all *Pagans* in Religion.

THE Natives of *Laos* are whiter in Complexion than their circumjacent Neighbours. I saw some of them at *Siam*, of both Sexes. Their Women were little inferior to *Portuguese* or *Spanish* Ladies.

THERE are several Islands that lie off the Coast of *Cambodia*, but none are inhabited, because the *Salceters*, or Pirates that infest that Coast, rob them of what they get by Pains and Industry, tho' there is one about three Leagues West of *Ponteamass*, called *Quadrol*, that has good Qualifications for a Settlement. It is about three Leagues long, and one broad. Wood and fresh Water are plentiful, the Ground of a moderate Height, the Soil black

black and fat, except along the East Side which faces *Ponteamafs*, and that has several fine sandy Bays, and they are good safe Harbours in the rainy and windy Seasons.

PULLO-CONDORÉ is the largest and highest composed of four or five Islands. It lies about fifteen Leagues South of the West Channel of *Cambodia* River. *Pullo-condore* had once the Honour of an *English* Colony settled on it, by Mr. *Allen Ketchpole*, in the Year 1702, when the Factory of *Chufu*, on the Coast of *China*, was broke up, he being then Director for the Affairs of the *English East-India* Company in those Parts.

He made a bad Choice of a Place for a Colony, that Island producing nothing but Wood, Water, and Fish for catching. He got some *Macaßars* to serve for Soldiers, and help to build a Fortification, and made a firm Contract with them to discharge them at the End of three Years, if they were minded to quit his Service, but did not perform what was contracted, which was the Cause of his own Ruin, and the Loss of the Colony, for those Eastern Desperadoes are very faithful where Contracts and Covenants are duly observed when made with them, but in Defaillance, they are revengeful and cruel. Mr. *Ketchpole* having detained the *Macaßars* beyond their Time of Agreement, still entrusted them with the Guard of his own Person and the Garrison, and they taking the Opportunity of the Night, when all the *English* were in their Beds, who lodged in the Fort, they inhumanly murdered them all. There was some Noise made by those who were awake, which a few who lodged without the Fort, hearing, took the Alarm, and ran to the Sea Side, where kind Providence directed them to a Boat ready fitted with Oars and Sails, which they embarked in, and put off from the Shore, and were not a Stone's-throw off, till the bloody Villains on the Shore were in Quest of them. So those in the Boat, with much Fatigue, Hunger, and Thirst in sailing, and rowing above one hundred Leagues, got to some Place of the King of *Jokere's* Dominions, where they were treated with Humanity. The reverend and ingenious Doctor *Pound*, was one of those that escaped, and Mr. *Solomon Lloyd* (an old Acquaintance of mine) was another.

THERE were two Harbours, or anchoring Places, at *Pullot-Condore*, but neither of them good. One at the North-east End, they were forced to use in the South-west Monsoons, the other on the West-side for the North-east Winds, the Bottom of which is rocky and therefore dangerous for losing Anchors and Cables, yet that was the Place chosen to build their Fort on, but since a Factory was thought necessary to be settled on that Coast, I wonder why they chose these Islands, rather than *Quadrole* which I mentioned before.

THE City of *Cambodia* is reckoned to lie one hundred Leagues up from the Bar, and the River filled with low Islands and Sand Banks. The Country of *Laos* is about forty Leagues farther up, but what Navigation is used above the City of *Cambodia*, is done by small rowing Vessels, and the River being one of the longest in the World, employs great Numbers of those rowing Boats.

CHAP. XXV.

Treats of Couchin-china, and Tonquin, their Religion, Laws, and Customs.

COUCHIN-CHINA is only divided from *Cambodia*, by the River, which in some Places is three Leagues broad. It is a Country far larger than *Cambodia*, and much richer, and the Inhabitants more courageous and hardier for enduring Fatigues in Labour or War, than the *Cambodians*, but are not so conversable and civil to Strangers. The *Couchin-chinese* draw one Half of the Customs and Taxes raised in *Cambodia* by Commerce and Merchandizing, but they give little Encouragement for Strangers to trade with them. Their Country abounding in Gold, raw Silk, and Drugs, they bring them to *Cambodia*, to dispose of there, except what they send yearly to *Canton* in *China*.

COUCHIN-CHINA, about three or four Centuries ago, was but a Province of *Tonquin*, at least they were both under the Dominion of one King, who dying without Issue, divided the Government of his Dominions between
a Bro-

a Brother and a Sister of his, whom he very much esteem'd for their good Qualities. He ordered his Brother to reside in *Couchin-china*, and take Care of Affairs there, while the Sister took Care of the Government of *Tonquin*, but to have a Meeting once a Year to consider and consult of Matters for the Good of the State.

THE Lady being young, thought fit to marry, and the Harmony of State soon ended by the Marriage. The Husband grew ambitious, and wanted the Government wholly in his own Hands, but carried fair with his Brother-in-Law, and one Time talking with the Queen of the Necessity of uniting both Kingdoms into one, as formerly, and that of Right both belonged to her, as being possess'd of the most ancient and noble Kingdom, and that in order to get both Kingdoms into her Hands, he would find a Way to cut off her Brother, without Suspicion of their being accessary to it. The Queen seeming to approve of the Design, privately let her Brother know his Danger; being then at the Court of *Tonquin*, she advised him to pretend to go a hunting for a few Days, but to make what Halte he could unto his own Government, where he might be secure from Conspiracies on his Life, which Advice he followed, and got safe into *Couchin-china*, and calling a Council of his Nobles, related the whole Affair to them.

THE *Couchin-chinese* took the designed Injury to their Prince so ill, that from that Time they renounced all Friendship and Commerce with the *Tonquiners*, and the River *Quambin* being made the Bounds of *Tonquin* Dominions to the Southward, and of *Couchin-china* to the Northward, they both raised Armies of forty or fifty thousand Men each, and they continue still facing one another, the River lying between them, and nothing of Action has happened all this while. If any *Couchin-chinese* happens to flee from the Justice of his own Country, to the *Tonquiners*, they receive him kindly, and treat him civilly; but if a *Tonquiner* fall under the same Circumstances, and go for Sanctuary to the *Couchin-chinese*, he is condemned to Slavery, and so must continue till he gets a Pardon from his own Court, and pay his Ransom.

Tonquin

TONQUIN is the next Kingdom where the *English* and *Dutch* both had their Factories, but the *English* Company's Affairs being a little out of Order, they withdrew theirs in *January* 1698, and the *Dutch* finding but little Advantage by their Trade in *Tonquin*, withdrew theirs about six Years after. However, the *English* had a private Trade pretty good till the Year 1719, that an *English* Ship from *Bengal* ruin'd it by an Act of Violence.

THE Ship being laden and ready to sail, fell down the River from *Catcheo* the capital City of *Tonquin*, and in Defiance to the known Laws of the Country, the Supercargo got a *Tonquin* Girl on board, in order to carry her with him, but her Friends missing her, informed the civil Magistrate, who sent to demand her, but the Supercargo would not resign his Mistress, whereupon Acts of Hostility ensued, and some were killed on both Sides, and Captain *Wallace* who commanded the Ship, had the Fortune to be one of the slain, however, the *English* bravely carried off their Prize, but I never heard any more of the *Tonquin* Trade since.

TONQUIN is bounded with *Couchin-china* on the South, *Laos* on the West, *Quang* a Province of *China* on the North, and the Ocean on the East. The Country is prodigiously fruitful in all Things necessary for the Convenience and Support of Life.

It produces Gold and Copper, but neither of them fine. They have Abundance of raw Silks, and manufacture Part of it in wrought Silks, but none fine. Their *Beaz* is the best, which they generally dye black. It wears very long, because it is soft and well spun, and the oftner it is washed, the Colour looks brighter, if blacker may be so called. They make Bowls, Cups, and Tables, of *Rattans*, and cover them very neatly with Lack of divers Colours, and gild them. They have also some *Porcelline*, but very coarse and ill painted. And those are the Commodities for Exportation from *Tonquin*.

THE *Christian* Religion is strictly forbidden to be preach'd in *Tonquin*, yet there are some *Christians* of the *Romish* Church there. Their own Religion is *Pagan* according to the Doctrine of *China*. And they have a Tradition, that
many

many Ages ago, *Tonquin* and *Cochin-china* were both Provinces of *China*.

THE *Tonquiners* used to be very desirous of having a Brood of *Europeans* in their Country, for which Reason the greatest Nobles thought it no Shame or Disgrace to marry their Daughters to *English* and *Dutch* Seamen, for the Time they were to stay in *Tonquin*, and often presented their Sons-in-Law pretty handsomely at their Departure, especially if they left their Wives with Child, but Adultery was dangerous to the Husband, for they are well versed in the Art of poisoning.

THE Men and Women are both well shap'd, and tolerably beautiful, but of a low Stature. The Maids keep their Teeth very white, till they have lost the blue of their Plumb, and then they dye them as black as Jet, with the Juice of a certain Herb which they hold in their Mouths for three Days successively, and the black Tincture continues ever after; but while that Juice is in their Mouths, they dare not swallow their Spittle, it being of a poisonous Quality.

CHAP. XXVI.

Gives some Account of the Religion, Laws, Customs, Commerce, Riches, Cities, Temples, Gods, and Goddesses, Priests, Military Forces, Produce, and Manufactories, &c. of China.

THE Island of *Ayam* lies in the Bay of *Tonquin*, and not above twelve Leagues distant from its Northern Confines. The Island is large, being about one hundred and eighty Miles in Length, and one hundred and twenty in Breadth. It was formerly under *Tonquin*, but at present a Part of the Dominions of *China*. Its greatest Product is Salt, and is not frequented on account of Trade. There is no Passage for Vessels of Burden, between it and the Continent, being so full of dangerous Banks and rapid Currents. The mid Lands seem very mountainous. The East and South Sides are low, but clear of Danger. About

bout two Leagues from its Shores, is from twenty to twenty-five Fathoms Water.

THE next Courſe I ſteer is into *Quansi*, the Southermoſt Province of *China*, and as yet has not been brought to acknowledge the *Tartar* Domination. It admits of no Commerce either with Foreigners or *Chineſe*, that are under the *Tartar* Government, but on all Occaſions commit Acts of Hoſtility on them, and are ſo bold and courageous, that one of their little Gallies will attack four of the Emperor's, and make them flee before them, for they give Quarter to none that bear Arms under the *Tartar* Prince, as they call the Emperor. The Country is fruitful and populous, and produces much raw Silk and Drugs, ſuch as *China* Root, *Gallingal*, &c. It has eighty Leagues of a Sea-coaſt, and is bounded by the *Limpacao* Iſlands, and *Canton* River. *Canton* is the next maritime Province; and *Maccaw*, a City built by the *Portugueſe*, was the firſt Place of Commerce. This City ſtands on a ſmall Iſland, and is almoſt ſurrounded by the Sea.

THE City contains five Churches, but the *Jeſuits* is the beſt, and is dedicated to *St. Paul*. It has two Convents for married Women to retire to, when their Huſbands are abſent, and orphan Maidens are educated in them till they can catch an Huſband. They have alſo a Nunnery for devout Ladies, young or old, that are out of Conceit with the Troubles and Cares of the World. And they have a *Sancta Caſa*, or the holy Houſe of the Inquiſition, that frightens every *Catholick* into the Belief of every Thing that holy Mother Church tells them is Truth, whether it be really ſo or no.

THE Forts are governed by a Captain-general, and the City by a Burgher, called the *Procuradore*, but, in Reality, both are governed by a *Chineſe* Mandereen, who reſides about a League out of the City, at a Place called *Caſa Branca*. The *Portugueſe* Shipping that come there, are admitted into their Harbour, and are under the Protection of the Town; but the *Chineſe* keep the Cuſtom-houſe, and receive Cuſtoms for all Goods imported.

I MADE a Calculation of the Number of Inhabitants within the Walls of *Canton*, by the Quantity of Rice daily expended in it; for they reckon ten thouſand *Peculs* is the daily

daily Import of that Grain. It is also reckoned, that every Person consumes one *Pecul* in three Months, so that by that Calculation, there must be above nine hundred thousand People in it, and the Suburbs one Third of the Number; there is no Day in the Year but shews five thousand Sails of trading *Jonks*, besides small Boats for other Services, lying before the City.

THE Product of the Country, besides Corn and Fruits, is Gold, Quick-silver, Copper, Steel, Iron, raw and wrought Silks, and besides the Silk Manufactories, there are lack'd or japann'd Ware; and at *Sachow* there are much *Porcelline* or *China* Ware made. We have the same Sort of Clay in several Parts of *Great Britain*, that *Porcelline* is made of, but we want the warm Sun to prepare it.

THEY reckon that the Province of *Canton* or *Quantung*, pays yearly to the Emperor twelve hundred thousand *Peculs* of Rice, and twenty thousand *Peculs* of Salt, out of which is served out to the Military (who are reckoned eighty thousand continually kept in the Emperor's Pay) thirty two hundred thousand *Peculs* of Rice, and eight thousand *Peculs* of Salt. The rest is sold in Markets, at the common Price of five *Macies* a *Pecul*, which may amount to four hundred forty six thousand *Tayels*, which is appropriated towards the Payment of the military Expence, which may amount to ten hundred thousand of *Tayels* yearly. The Customs on Merchandize and Poll-money amounts to prodigious great Sums, all which are gathered according to the Book of Rates, and sent to the Treasury of the Province, for the Use of the Empire, which makes the Emperor's Treasury always full.

FOKIEN is the next maritime Province to the Eastward of *Canton*, a very mountainous Country, and has about ninety Leagues of a Sea-coast.

THE next Place of Safety for Shipping is the Island of *Amoy*, where the *English* once had a Factory, and a good Trade, but now it is shut up from foreign Trade, by the Emperor's Order. There are several small Islands lies off it, particularly the Island *Tangsi*, by the *English* called *Chapel* Island, and by some the *Hole in the Wall*, because there is a large Hole that passes quite through it, being undermined

undermined by the Sea below, but above all is full without Fracture. It appears like the Arch of a large Bridge. About seven Leagues within it, is the inner Harbour of *Amoy*, where Ships lie very secure in twelve Fathoms oozy Ground, within two hundred Yards of the Shore. The Town is built close to the Sea, and some Houses in it at high Water are washed by the Sea.

CHAP. XXVII.

Some Occurrences that happened among the English at Amoy in the Year 1700.

I Being then bound to *Amoy* in a Ship from *Surat*, employed by Sir *Nicholas Waite* the new *East-India* Company's President there, and Commodore *Littleton* being then at *Surat* with a Squadron of four Men of War, by some considerable Reasons was persuaded by Sir *Nicholas* to let one of his Squadron go as far as *Amoy*, to look after the *English* Pirates that then infested the Straights of *Malacca*.

THE *Harwich* was the Ship pitch'd on, a fifty Gun Ship, commanded by Captain *Cock*, and when we arrived there, we found three *European* Ships, and a Country Ship from *Surat*, employed by Sir *John Gayer* President for the old *East-India* Company. The Supercargoes of those Ships, on Sight of a Man of War, sent a Compliment of five hundred *Towls* to the *Teytock*, to dissuade him from giving the *Harwich* Permission to come into the Harbour, for fear of losing a Feather that they had put in their own Caps, of wearing a Pendant at their Top-mast Heads; so that when I went to pay my Compliment to the *Teytock*, and give him an Account of our Cargo, and to desire Liberty for the Man of War and my own Ship to come into the Harbour; he told me, that my own Ship was welcome, but he could not, with Safety, admit of the King's Ship into the Harbour, but that she might be supplied with what she wanted in the Road.

THE Linguist very frankly told me, that it was none of the *Teytock's* Fault, but the *English* Captain and Supercargoes,

cargoes, who had sent him with a Message to the *Teytock*, to acquaint him, that if the Man of War was permitted to come into the Harbour, their Men would be rude to the Merchants, and would be tied up to no Rules or Laws which the Merchant Ships observed, that the Women would be debauch'd, and many other aggravating Crimes, they alledged, the Man of War's Men would commit, and withal had sent the *Teytock* a Present of five hundred *Tayels* to keep her out of the Harbour.

I CARRIED the Linguist into a Merchant's House that was my Acquaintance, to consult with that Merchant about removing that *Remora* that stopp'd the Man of War from entering into the Harbour, which could be done no other Way than by my being bound for the good Behaviour of the People belonging to the Man of War, and to give a Present superior to theirs, which I consented to.

THEN we consulted how the Captain of the King's Ship should be received by the *Teytock*, when he should make his Visit, and we agreed, that all the Captains and Supercargoes should be called to the *Teytock's*, in Company with Captain *Cock*, and that he should enter before us, and have an high Chair placed a little before the *Teytock's* Chair, on the left Hand, which, among them, is the Place of Honour, and we Captains and Supercargoes to be set on Felt Cushions on the Floor, and on the right Side of the *Teytock's* Chair, which was raised on a Platform of Deals, with three Steps of Ascent.

WE had no sooner done with our Consultation than I dispatch'd my Friend *Shawhan*, for that was the Merchant's Name, with the Linguist, to acquaint the *Teytock* with what we had resolved on, and he approved of all, and two Days after sent a Summons for the Captains and Supercargoes to accompany Captain *Cock*, and all obeyed but one, who pretended Indisposition; however he sent his second Supercargo to supply his Place.

As soon as we were in the Citadel, we were conducted to the *Teytock's* Palace, and entered the Chamber of Audience, and were seated according to the Method before agreed on. The *Teytock* being seated before, he made a Speech pretty long, wherein he told how he had been informed of the loose Behaviour of Men of War's Men, which

which had armed him with Caution, but that he knew of a more convenient Place on an Island within three Leagues of the Town, for the Man of War to hawl ashore, if we would be ruled by his Advice. The Captain made a Bow, and acceded to that Motion.

HE then wanted to know who would be Surety for the Captain and Men belonging to the Man of War, that they should observe the Laws and Customs of the Place, without being Molestation to the Natives. I found none cared to enter on so hazardous an Affair, so I stood up, and proffered myself, Ship and Cargo for Security. The rest not expecting that the Captain could have found such Security, one, who made a good Figure among us, told me, I was too forward in my Proffer. I answered him, that I only engaged what I had the Command of, but meddled with no Body's Affairs else.

THE *Teytock* seemed well satisfied, and gave us a very handsome Entertainment, and then dismiss'd us. The Man of War went to the Island, and landed some of her greatest Guns, but found so much Difficulty in carrying Things ashore, that we got an Order from the *Teytock* to bring her into the Harbour, and accordingly she came in.

THEIR Temples are built all after one Form, but, as in other Countries, very different in Beauty and Magnitude. Their *Josses* or Demi-gods are, some of human Shape, some of monstrous Figures, but in the Province of *Fokien*, they are more devoted to the Worship of Goddesses than Gods. *Quanbiem* has the most Votaries. She is placed in State, sitting on a Cushion with rich Robes, and her little Son standing before her, with a charged Trident in his right Hand, ready to throw at Offenders of the Laws of Humanity and Nature, and also at those who make no Free-will-offerings to his Mother. The *Chinese* who have seen the *Roman Catholick* Churches and Worship, say that she is the *Chinese* Virgin *Mary*.

THERE is another Goddess called *Matsoa*, who swimm'd from a far Country, through many Seas, and came in one Night to *China*, and took up her Residence there. She sits on a Platform, with a Cushion laid on it, and her Head is covered with blue Wooll instead of Hair. She is the Protectress of Navigation, for which Reason

none

none go a Voyage but they first make a Sacrifice of boiled Hogs Heads, and Bread baked in the Steam of boiling Water. It is set before the Image when reeking-hot, and kept before her till it is cold, she feeding on the Smoke, and the Devotees on the Substance, when it is cold. On their Return from a Voyage, they compliment her with a Play, either acted on board of the Ship, or before one of her Temples.

THEY have another Goddess in Form of a Virgin, called *Quonin*, who has many Votaries, but is mostly worshipp'd in the Provinces of *Peking* and *Nanking*, but being a Virgin, she has many Lovers all over *China*.

THE God *Fo* has an human Shape, except his Head, which has the Figure of an Eagle's. *Gan* has a broad Face, and a prodigious great Belly. *Fo* is a very majestic God, and is always placed with a great Number of little Gods to attend him. *Minifo* in *Fokien*, I take to be the God *Migleſt* at *Canton*, being alike in Shape and Countenance. He is called the God of Pleasure. *Puffa* is set cross-legged on a Cushion, bespangled with Flowers and Stars, and she has eight or nine Arms and Hands on each Side, and two before that she holds in a praying Posture. In every one of her Hands (except the two that are dedicated to Prayer) she bears some Thing emblematical, as an Ax, a Sword, a Flower, &c. The great God that made the Heavens and Earth, they bestow an human Shape on him, like a young Man in Strength and Vigour, quite opposite to the Church of *Rome*, who make his Picture like *Salvadore* Winter, old, cold, and hoary. I have seen many more whose Names I have forgot, some with human Bodies, and Dragons, Lions, Tigers, and Dogs Heads, and one I saw like *Stour Tonker* in *Finland*, with a Man's Body and Clothes, and with Eagle's Feet, and Talons in the Stead of Hands.

CONFUCIUS, was the Prince of their Philosophers. He was near contemporary with *Artaxerxes*, *Nebemiah*, and *Malachi*, about 450 Years before our Saviour *Jesus Christ*. He both taught and practised moral Philosophy to Perfection, and acquired so great a Veneration among his Countrymen, that his Sentences are taken for *Posu-lata* to this Day, not one since having offered to con-

tradict any Thing that he has left behind in Writing. They have another Doctor of Philosophy called *Tanfwu*, who was almost as ancient as *Confucius*, and wrote many excellent Tracts of a virtuous Life, and the Methods to attain to it, but his Character is inferior to *Confucius*'s.

THEIR Preachers take some Apophthegm out of those great Mens Writings, for Texts to comment and expatiate on. They live very abstemiously, and rise early before Day to pray. Every Temple has a Cloister or Convent annexed to it, and has a certain Stipend allowed by the Emperor to support the Priests and Novices, but they get much more by letting of Lodgings to Travellers, who generally lodge in their Cells, than the Emperor's Allowance. Besides, they have a genteel Way of begging from Strangers, by bringing Tea and Sweet-meats to regale them.

THE Fishers and Carriers by Water, who are born and bred in their Boats, and on the Water, must also be buried in it, unless they have Money enough to purchase a Burying-Place ashore.

THEY have many Sects among them, but all agree in the Tranfanimation of Souls, yet not one Sect persecutes another, but allow free Liberty to believe what they think best, and it is very natural for Men to embrace what they think is best, whether it is the best or not.

THE *Christian* Missionaries have converted many by the Indulgence of several Emperors, particularly of *Chunghee*, and those Apostles indulge their Profelytes in many Things opposite to the System and Canons of the Western *Christianity*, as Polygamy, Concubinage, and the Invocation and Adoration of *Pagan* Saints, as well as *Christian*, in their Apotheosis, which has caused no small Disturbance at *Rome*.

THE Emperor of *China*'s Revenues, by Report, amount to one hundred and eight thousand Millions of *Tayels*, out of which he maintains fifty *Caloes* or Privy-counsellors at one hundred thousand *Tayels* yearly. The Princes of the Blood are honoured with the Government of Provinces, and are allowed, out of the royal Treasury, from five hundred thousand to ten hundred thousand *Tayels* yearly. He has fourteen Provinces, wherein he maintains eighty hundred

hundred Soldiers in each, and each Soldier is allowed ten *Tayels per Annum* in Silver, and a *Catty* of Rice, and an Ounce of Salt *per Day*, which are delivered monthly out of the Emperor's Granaries. In a Word, I look on *China* to be the richest and best governed Empire in the World.

THE next Island of Note is *Formosa*, but there are several small Islands between it and *Luconia*, which belong to *China*, tho' of no great Account, and because they are flat and low, they are called the *Bashee* Islands.

FORMOSA is a noble Island, and affords Plenty of Gold, raw Silk, fine white Sugar, Sugar-candy, and Copper finer than in *China*. Before the *Tartars* subdued it, it had Kings of its own, but tributary to *China*. The Natives differ much from the neighbouring People of *China* and *Luconia*, both in Physiognomy and Make. The *English* and *Dutch* had their Factories there, but about the Year 1678, when all *Fokien* had submitted to the *Tartars*, they were ordered to withdraw their Factories from *Tey-won*, a small Island close to the great one, on which their Factories stood. The *English* obeyed, and removed over to *Amoy*, but the *Dutch* received Supplies from *Batavia*, and endured a long Siege, but were at last forced to submit, tho' they sold their Factory, and many of their Mens Lives pretty dear, for the *Tartars* lost above five thousand Men in reducing it. It is now wholly under the *Tartars*, and the *Chungtoek* of *Fokien* has the Superintendency of it.

WHEN it was tributary to *China*, about the Year 1650. there was a strange Distemper raged on the Island for three Years together, for most of the Virgins between twelve and eighteen Years of Age, had a Trick of hanging themselves, in so much that very few Maidens were left on the Island, nor could any Remedy be found to prevent it, before an old *China* Man found one out, and addressed himself to the King, desiring him to make a Trial of hanging (all those that hanged themselves privately) by one Leg on the Sides of High-ways, for Passengers to gaze on. The King took his Counsel, and hanged up some so, and in one Month's Time the Maidens refrained from hanging, and have continued good Girls ever since.

THE Religion of *Formosa* is purely *Pagan*. They all worship the Sun, Moon, and the Stars their Children. Some worship the first living Thing they see in the Morning, except a Lizard.

BETWEEN *Teywon* and the Coast of *Fokien*, lie the *Piscadore* Islands, so called from the great Quantities of Fish caught about them. There are many Shallows lie a good Distance off them, on which an *English* Ship from *Surat*, called the *Jessab*, was shipwreck'd in the Year 1697, but all the Men were saved; and on the Report of a *Jesuit*, Missionary who was Passenger, that he had some Things on board for the Emperor, on which Mr. *Reynolds* the first Supercargo, was forced to take a Journey to *Peking*, who cleared himself, but brought Scandal on holy Mother Church, for forging Things so palpably false, for the good Father's Trunk was saved, and opened by proper Officers, and not one Thing that he had reported to be in it, was found.

IN the Year 1700, the new *East-India* Company of *England*, settled a Factory on *Chusan* by Mr. *Allen Catbpole*, but by the Oppression of the *Tartar* Officers, and the Company's Neglect of sending Money sufficient to carry on their Trade, Mr. *Catbpole* removed the Factory again in the Beginning of the Year 1703, and carried it to *Palliocondre*.

C H A P. XXVIII.

A short Account of the taking of the Manila Ship, in the East Indies, by Mr. Anton in the Ship the Centurion, in the Year 1743.

IN the latter End of the Year 1739, it was foreseen that a War with *Spain* was inevitable; it was the Opinion of several considerable Persons then entrusted with the Administration of Affairs; that the most prudent Step the Nation could take, on the breaking out of the War, was the attacking that Crown in her distant Settlements; for by this Means (as at that Time there was the greatest Probability of Success) it was supposed we should

cut

cut off the principal Resources of the Enemy, and reduce them sincerely to desire a Peace; as they would hereby be deprived of the Returns of that Treasure, by which alone they could be enabled to carry on a War. Had this Scheme been then executed with the utmost Expedition, the City of *Manila* would with Ease have fallen into our Hands, and we might have made ourselves Masters of the Island of *Cuba*. But as Mr. *Anson*, through the many Disappointments he met with in fitting out his Squadron, and the Delays of his sailing Orders did not arrive in the *Indies* till after the Departure of the *Manila* Ships, he missed an Opportunity which might not only have humbled the Pride of *Spain*, but might also have furnished this Nation with a sufficient Sum to have paid off the National Debt.

At length Mr. *Anson* as Commodore sailed from St. *Helen's* in the *Centurion*, having under his Command seven other Ships, the *Pearl*, the *Gloucester*, the *Severn*, the *Wager*, the *Tryal*, and two *Pinks*, *Victuallers*; on the eighteenth of *September*, in the Year 1740, and in forty Days we arrived off the Island of *Madera*, where Mr. *Anson* received Intelligence of the Squadron commanded by Don *Joseph Pizarro*, the *Spanish* Admiral, consisting of six Men of War; not one of which returned to *Europe* except the *Asia*, the other five were lost in Consequence of the Precautions they took to avoid the Enterprize of the *English*. From hence Mr. *Anson* sailed to St. *Catharine's*, and then to Port *Julian*, and on the ninth of *June* 1741, at Break of Day, arrived at the Island of *Juan Fernandes*. But during these Transactions, the *Wager* was lost with many of her Men, and the Remainder, which were about one hundred became disorderly, drunken and mutinous, and returned towards *England* in the Long Boat. Mr. *Anson* lying in the Bay at the Island of *Juan Fernandes* spied a *Spanish* Merchantman, took her, which was the first Prize he had taken, her Burthen was about four hundred and fifty Tuns, with fifty three Sailors on board white and black, and twenty-five Passengers. With this Prize he left the Island of *Juan Fernandes*, and steered to the Eastward. From hence he went on a Cruize towards *Paita*, and the *Tryal* fell in with a *Spanish* Merchantman of six hundred Tuns, of which she soon made
a Prize;

a Prize; but the *Tryal* being in a bad Condition we deserted her, and put on Board the *Spanish* Ship every Thing that was valuable, we sunk her, calling our Frigate by the Name of the *Tryal's* Prize. Soon after which we saw another Sail, which we chased, and firing fourteen Shot at her she struck, she was a *Bislayer*; of three hundred Tuns, and named the *Santa Teresâ de Jesus*. Approaching *Paita*, the *Nuestra Senora del Carmin*, whose worth was four hundred thousand Dollars, fell into our Hands. This Merchantman had but just left the Harbour: where we entered with all the Celerity possible, besieged the Town of *Paita*, and took it without any considerable Loss. The Sailors entered the Houses in Search of Pillage, and what chiefly occurred to them were the laced and embroidered Clothes, with the Tye or Bag-wig and laced Hat, and the Womens fine Gowns and Petticoats of the *Spaniards*. These glittering Habits our Tars put on over their own dirty greasy Trowsers and Jackets; so that when a Party of them first appeared thus ridiculously metamorphosed one could not be easily satisfied they were our own People. Having removed every Thing that was valuable in the Town into the *Centurion*, and secured the Treasure of the whole Fort, and taken on board eighty Prisoners we burnt down the Town, whose Buildings were but of one Story, built of Wood, and covered with Leaves, we left it, and sailed for *Quibo*. In this Passage we found, that the *Glocester* had picked up two *Spanish* Snows, one whose Cargo consisted of Wine, Brandy, Olives, with Spices to the Amount of seven thousand Pound, and the other had a great Quantity of Double Doubloons and Dollars to the Amount of near twelve thousand Pound. After this we took a *Spanish* Bark called the *Jesu Nazareno*, of inconsiderable Value.

FROM *Quibo* we sailed for the Coast of *Mexico* in hopes of succeeding in the great Purpose we had in View, that of intercepting the *Manila* Galeon. We cruized off the Port of *Acapulco* for some Time without Success, but at length to our inexpressible Joy, on the twentieth of *June* we discovered a Sail to the South East. The Commodore with the *Centurion* stood immediately towards her, and in a short Time came so near as to see her from the Deck.

The

The *Galeon* did not change her Course, but bore down upon us, and fired a Gun, and took in her top-gallant Sails, and an Engagement ensued, which was maintained on both Sides with great Resolution and Briskness; but at length overpowered with the superior Bravery and Courage of our Men the *Nuestra Señora de Cabadonga* (for that was the *Manila* Ship's Name) was taken, a Prize, amounting in Value to near a Million and half in Dollars. The *Galeon* was much larger than the *Centurion*, had five hundred and fifty Men, and thirty-six Guns mounted for Action, besides twenty-eight *Pidreroes* in her Gunwale, Quarters and Tops, each of which carried a four Pound Ball, and she was well provided with small Arms. She had sixty-seven killed in the Action, and eighty-four wounded; while the *Centurion* had only two killed and a Lieutenant, and sixteen wounded; all of whom but one recovered.

The Particulars of the Cargo of the *Galeon* being ascertained it was found, that he had on board one Million three hundred and thirteen thousand eight hundred and forty-three Pieces of Eight, and thirty five thousand six hundred eighty two Ounces of Virgin Silver, besides some *Cochineal*, and a few other Commodities, which, however, were but of small Account, in Comparison of the Specie. And this being the Commodore's last Prize, it hence appears, that all the Treasure taken by the *Centurion* was not much short of four hundred thousand Pound, independent of the Ships and Merchandize, which she either burnt or destroyed, and which by the most reasonable Estimation could not amount to a less Sum than six hundred thousand Pound more; so that the Loss of the Enemy by our Squadron did greatly exceed a Million. To which, suppose we add, the Charge of the Court of *Spain* in fitting out *Pizarro*, with the Loss of his Men of War, the Total of all these Sums will be most exorbitant, and shews, that notwithstanding the numerous Disadvantages the *English* Commodore and his Men laboured under, did yet prove exceeding prejudicial to the *Spaniards*.

Mr. *Anson* with his Prize sailed for the River of *Canton*, where he arrived on the fourteenth of *July* following, and anchored somewhat short of the *Bocca Tigris*. Here he

stayed several Months, and having took in Provisions on the seventh of *December* the *Centurion* and her Prize unmoored, and stood down the River on her Return to *England*; but some *Chinese* Merchantmen in his Passage down the River offered the Commodore a certain Sum for the *Galeon*, which on some Consideration he accepted and delivered her to the Merchants on the fifteenth of *December*, and the same Day got under Sail. And on the third of *January* 1743-4, the *Centurion* came to an Anchor at *Prince's Island* in the Streights of *Sunda*, and continued there wooding and watering till the eighth; when she weighed, and stood for the *Cape of Good Hope*, where on the eleventh of *March* she anchored in *Table-Bay*.

DURING his Stay here he entered about forty new Men; and having, by the third of *April* 1744, compleated his Water and Provision, he, on that Day weighed, and put to Sea; and the nineteenth of the same Month saw the Island of *St. Helena*, which he did not touch at, but stood on his Way; and on the tenth of *June* spoke with an *English* Ship from *Amsterdam* bound for *Philadelphia*, from whom Mr. *Anson* received the first Intelligence of a *French* War; on the twelfth he got Sight of the *Lizard*; and on the fifteenth in the Evening, to the infinite Joy of all concerned, they came safe to an Anchor at *Spithead*. Thus was this Expedition finished, when it had lasted three Years and nine Months.





APPENDIX.

SECT. I.

The Success of an English Squadron in the East Indies.

THE War which broke out between *France* and *England* in 1744, soon spread to the *East-Indies*; whereupon Commodore *Barnet* was sent thither with a Squadron of His Majesty's Ships, in order to protect the Trade, which he performed with great Spirit and Resolution; as appears from the following Account published in the *Gazette*, in *August* 1745.

The *Deptford*, Captain *Barnet*, Commodore, and the *Preston*, Lord *Northesk*, of sixty and fifty Guns, separated from the *Medway*, Captain *Peyton*, and the *Diamond*, Captain *Moore*, of sixty and twenty Guns, some Time after they left *Madagascar*, where they had been for Water and Provisions; the two first went for the Streights of *Sunda*, and thence to the Streights of *Banca*, and the two last proceeded for the Streights of *Malacca*. The Commodore and his Confort disguised their Ships by Painting, &c. after the *French* and *Dutch* Manner; after being some Time in the Streights of *Banca*, appeared the three *French* Company's Ships, laden from *Canton*, for *Europe*, viz. the *Dauphin*, Captain *Butler*, the *Hercules*, Captain *Dufrein*, and *Le Jason*, Captain *Delametrie*; the *English* hoisted *Dutch* Colours, and, as soon as the *French* came near they lowered the *Dutch* Colours and hoisted *English*, calling at the same Time to strike theirs to the King of *England*, which not being done, the Commodore gave the *French* Captain, *Butler*, a Broadside, which he and his Conforts returned, during which the *Dauphin*, with a Cannon-shot carried away Commodore *Barnet*'s Tiller Rope, which disconcerted him for some Time.

The *Hercules* and *Jason*, by Reason of the little Breeze and their Distance, could not in Time come to the *Dauphin*'s Aid, and jointly attack the fifty Gun Ship, while the other could not for some Time after, which Circumstance, it is said, might have given Occasion to the *Hercules* to escape, sailing better than the

rest: After a brave Resistance they were forced to strike; then the Commodore sent Officers and Men to take Possession, and to bring the *French* Officers and Men on board his Ship, where he received them like a gallant and generous Officer, shewing them all the Favour and Friendship depending on him, and usual in such Cases; the like good Treatment received the rest of the Gentlemen from Lord *Northesk* on board the *Preston*.

The two chief Supercargoes, *Mes. Margrin* and *La Val*, with the three second Captains and two Officers were, by Order of the Commodore, put on board the *English China* Ships, and the rest, with the Ships, carried to *Batavia*.

The other two Ships, *Medway* and *Diamond*, in their Way to the Streights of *Malacca*, called at *Ahin*, where they found a *French* Privateer, fitted out and sent by the Company from *Pondicherry*, to cruise in the *China* Seas; they carried her with them through the Streights of *Malacca*, and in their Way took a *French* Ship from *Manila*, said to be rich.

When we came through the Streights of *Banca* (says the Officer who gave this Account) these two Ships were lying with the two Prizes disguised like their Consort, who took the three *French China* Men, of which they had no Account, but being told by us, that the *French* Ships had left *Canton* long before us, they therefore resolved to go to their Rendezvous at *Batavia*.

The *St. Louis*, Captain *Johannes*, worth 12,000 *l.* laden from *Canton* and bound to *Mauritius*, was taken some Days afterwards by Captain *Cumming* in the *Fame*, a Privateer of thirty Guns from *England*.

A Letter from Commodore *Barnet* in the *Gazette* of the seventeenth says, that these Ships were about seven hundred Tons, thirty Guns, and an hundred and fifty Men each, very deeply and richly laden, chiefly with Tea, *China* Ware, and Silk; and the Supercargoes say, the Cargo of each would in *France* have been worth more than 100,000 *l.* Sterling.

Other Accounts added, that the *French Manila* Ship had on board seventy-two Chests of Dollars, of 3000 *l.* each, and two Chests of Gold alone worth 30,000 *l.*

SECT. II.

An Account of an Engagement between the French and English Fleets, and the Taking of Madras, in a Letter from Fort St. David, dated Aug. 17.

JUNE 25. 1746, at Day-break, his Majesty's Squadron in *Negapatan* Road made several Ships to the Offing, to which they went out, and found them to be nine *French* Ships. The Wind being light, could not get up with each other, till Half past Four in the Evening, at which Time the Engagement began,

gan, and lasted till about Seven, when it grew dark. The two Squadrons continued near one another all the next Day. At Four in the Afternoon Captain *Peyton* summoned a Council of War, where it was agreed not to engage the Enemy, but to proceed to *Trincomaly* Bay; as the *French* did for *Pondicherry*, and arrived there the seventeenth, fourteen killed, and forty six wounded in the *English* Squadron. The *French* Squadron consisted of the *Achilles*, a seventy Gun Ship, six Company's Ships, and two Country Ships. Captain *Peyton* kept the Squadron at *Trincomaly* till the Beginning of *August*, when he came on the Coast, and the sixth appeared off *Negapatan*. The *French* Squadron of eight Ships (one being gone to *Bengal*, and since lost in the River with two hundred and eighty *Europeans*) weighed from *Pondicherry*, *July 24*, for the Southward, and stood out to meet the *English* Squadron, which stood to the Southward from them, and the *French* then returned.

The seventeenth the eight Ships weighed for *Madras* Road, where they arrived the eighteenth, and fired on the Ship *Princess Mary*, which was returned from the Ship, and the Fort; each Ship gave a Broadside as she stood to the Northward, and another as she return'd, and then stood to the Southward again. We are since inform'd, the *French* had two Motives for this Expedition; one was, to make a Plea with the Country Government that the *English* committed the first Hostilities ashore; the other, to see if Captain *Peyton* would come to our Assistance or not.

The twenty-third Captain *Peyton*, with the Squadron, stood in to *Pullicat* Road, where he sent his Lieutenant Mr. *Wemyss*, on board a Vessel in the Road, who was there told of all the Circumstances of their attacking the Ship *Princess Mary*, and of their then being between *Madras* and *Pondicherry*; on which Captain *Peyton* disappeared, and has never been heard of, or from, by any of the *English*, though there have been no Cost or Pains spared for that Purpose, as may easily be imagined from the melancholy Situation of Affairs on the Coast. The last Letter received from any one belonging to the Squadron, was from Captain *Peyton* to Governor *Morse*, dated *August 4*, when he was just come out refitted.

This unhappy Conduct of his so animated the *French*, that they determined on attacking Fort *St. George*. We call it unhappy, because it has truly proved so in its Consequence; though what Reasons Captain *Peyton* may have had for this Proceeding, we know not. Accordingly, *Sept. 2*. in the Morning, they weighed again from *Pondicherry*; the fourth they landed their Men at *St. Thomas*, and thereabouts; and on the fifth began the Attack, chiefly depending on their Shells; the tenth the Town surrendered, but on what Terms we are not perfectly inform'd; as yet no Terms are complied with. *M. de Primency* is gone thither from *Pondicherry* to command the Garrison.

Octob.

Octob. 2. the seven *French* Ships in the Road, having taken what Quantity of Money, Goods, Ammunition and Stores they thought proper, were to sail the third for *Pondicherry*, and from thence immediately hither (*Fort St. David*) to attack this Place. But it pleased God that Night and the next Morning it blew so hard, as to founder the *Duke of Orleans*, their second Ship in Force, and two more. The *Achilles* of seventy Guns, the Commodore's, and only Ship of considerable Force, either cut away or lost all her Masts, as did the three others; so that twelve hundred Men have perished, together with upwards of sixty *English* Prisoners, and the whole Squadron utterly disabled, and their Design against this Place rendered impracticable for the present. The Company's Vessels, the *Mermaid* and the *Advice* Snows, were both taken by the *French* Squadron in *Madras* Road, and both lost in the Storm. The *Princess Mary* was scuttled, and run into the Surf, but is since got off by the *French*. The *Sumatra* and *Brillante*, from the West Coast, passed by this Place the nineteenth of *August*, and not observing the Signal, sailed on into the Squadron, which having *English* Colours, they took for our's, and are lost. The *French* say, they had the Nabob's Permission for committing these Hostilities ashore, and declare publicly they gave him one hundred thousand Pagodas for the Liberty of so doing, though he now disowns it, saying, that his Son was going to the Assistance of *Madras*, but that it was given up before he could get thither.

August 25. arrived at *Mibie* three *French* Ships, one called the *Centurion* of seventy Guns, one of forty, and another of twenty Guns, which three Ships arrived at *Pondicherry*, *Sept. 27.* and sailed from thence the twenty-fourth Instant; four that came out of *Europe* in Company with them are said to be gone for *China*. The three Ships advised above to be sailed from *Pondicherry* are returned, so that there are now in the Road and Offing five Ships compleatly rigged, and five disabled, besides small Vessels.

July 1. 1747. the *East-India* Company received the following Advices: On *Octob. 17. 1746.* the Nabob, by Order of *Nizam Mulmullock*, the Vizier, came with nine hundred Men, to compel the *French* to evacuate the Town of *Madras* to the *English*; but on the twenty-second two hundred *French*, out of five hundred in *Madras*, sallied out and surprized Part of his Camp, and with three hundred more from *Pondicherry*, attacked the Nabob at *St. Thomas* on the twenty-third at Night, and being joined the next Morning by a Party from *Madras*, routed his Forces: On which he returned to *Aratt*, and it was said was there raising more Forces to come down against the *French*.

Octob. 30. M. Paradis, who commands at *Madras*, published by Beat of Drum, that all Treaties of Ransom and Capitulation made with *M. de la Bourdinay* to be void, and required all the *English* to quit *Madras*, the *Mount*, and *More*, in two Days; on which, notwithstanding the Inclemency of the Season, they all

all dispersed to different Places, except the Governor and Mr. *Monson*, who were sent Prisoners to *Pondicherry*.

On *Dec. 8.* the whole *French* Garrison of *Pondicherry*, consisting of about a thousand regular Troops, two hundred train'd *Peons*, and many others, with Cannon, Mortars, &c. arrived within a Mile of the Bound Hedge of Fort *St. David*, the Deputy Governor of which Place detached sixteen hundred of his Black Military, with Orders to attack the *French* immediately, and harraßs them as much as possible all Night, which they did, and at Day-break began a regular Engagement, the Enemy having Cannon forced their Way quite to the Garden-house, when the Moors came advancing upon them, and a hundred Men of the Garrison, which was all they could spare, at the same Time falling out, the Enemy fearing to be surrounded, retreated with great Precipitation, and being pursued by the whole Force, lost above two hundred Men, among them four Officers of Distinction, with all their Tents, Ammunition, six Camels, two Mortars with their Shells, three or four Drums, two Chests of Arms, Provisions, Palankees, &c.

M. Bourdenay, Commander of the Squadron that took *Madras*, on his Return to *Pondicherry*, laid down his Command, and retired to *Eustatia*, a *Dutch* Settlement, where converting the Plunder of *Madras* into Jewels, he took Shipping for *Holland*. By the Loss sustained at *Madras* the *French* said it appeared, that *M. Bourdenay* had secreted thirteen Millions of *Livres*, about seven hundred thousand Pound Sterling, and were resolved to imprison him till he refunded; but were prevented, at least for some Time, by his being taken on board a *Dutch* Ship, with two of his Officers, and some of his Treasure, by an *English* Privateer, and was lodged in *Pendennis* Castle, from whence he was brought to *London* in Custody of two Messengers.

The *English*, to repair their Losses, and be revenged of the Enemy, resolved to attack *Pondicherry*; and having collected all their Forces, besieged the Place both by Sea and Land with great Vigour, and it was as strenuously defended for a considerable Time by the Garrison. But the Winter being far advanced, and the Severity of the Weather too intense to continue the Siege with any Probability of Success, it was broke up: And that it was not renewed the ensuing Summer, was owing to the Peace, which, this Year 1748, was concluded at *Aix la Chapelle*; by which an End was put to all Hostilities, and *Madras* returned to the Possession of the *English*.

The general Tranquillity occasioned by this Peace, did not continue long in the *East Indies*; where, though the *French* did not directly break it, yet by stirring up Quarrels between the Nabobs in Alliance with either Party, and siding with their Allies by Degrees brought on a War between the two Companies, more violent and destructive than had been known in those

Continu-

Countries for many Years, as we shall see in the Sequel: But first shall give an Account of some remarkable Occurrences that happened in the Interim.

S E C T. III.

*An Account of the Dutch surprising the Island of Madras.
Written by a Person on the Spot, and authenticated by
the Testimony of several others present.*

MADURA is in the *East-Indies* near *Java*. It is a pleasant, fertile, and rich Island; and, till the Year 1747, was governed by its own King. It is inhabited by *Malays*, distinguished by their Courtesy to Strangers, particularly to the *British*, and by the general Integrity of their Dealings.

The *Dutch* have, on various Pretences, made themselves Masters of many of the *Indian* Islands; and are Tyrants over the Princes of those which remain unconquered. Amongst the last was, till that Time, *Madura*; upon which, on some shameful and ridiculous Pretext, they made several Descents in that Year; sending Ships from *Batavia*, their capital City in *India*, to which unhappily, *Madura* lies near; and plundering, murdering, and making Slaves of all they met.

The Sovereign of *Madura*, a Person of distinguished Courage and Conduct, opposed them often with Spirit, but seldom with Success. His People were unskilled in the *European* Art of War; and their Numbers availed them nothing.

At length, perceiving there was no defending the Island against the Enemy, he determined to throw himself into the Protection of the Sultan of *Benjar*, to whom he was related.

He communicated his Resolution to his People; he advised them to submit to a Power they could not resist; but as himself must be destroyed or carried off a Slave, he informed them of his intended Escape. They took their Leave with Tears, committing his sacred Person to the Care of Heaven.

He took with him one of his Sons, a Number of his Wives, a Body of faithful Domesticks, and his most valiant Soldiers, and a great Treasure in Gold and precious Stones. Thus furnished, getting into some Boats, he made the best of his Way towards the intended Asylum.

The *Dutch* attacked his little Party in several Boats as they made off; but were repulsed with Loss. The *Madurians* were always valiant, but now they were desperate. Having freed themselves from this Opposition, they made for *Benjar*. And the *Dutch*, expecting this would be their Refuge, sent a Vessel to intercept their Passage, or to arm the Sultan against their Reception; which was in *Benjar* River before them.

They

They discovered it in Time; and they kept concealed under Shore. In the Night they got by the *Dutch* Vessel, and came up with a larger, which proved an *English* one; it was the *Onslow*, Captain *Congreve*.

The Son of the Sovereign of *Madura* was at that Time with the *English* at *Bencoolen*; and the Father's great Opinion of our People's Virtue, made him immediately throw himself into their Protection; desiring to be carried to *England*, or to some of the *English* Settlements in *India*.

He proposed to resign his Title to the Kingdom to the *English*; to deliver up to them the very considerable Treasures he had with him; and direct them to the richest Part of the Island, where they should come into immediate Possession of a much greater.

The Captain, who was on Shore at *Caytonia*, accepted the Proposal; and the Sovereign of *Madura*, who all this while lay concealed in a Creek, was, with his Wives and Servants, taken on board in the Night, dismissing his Soldiers. But, inconsiderately, the *Mandurian* Boats were left in Sight about the Ship in the Morning.

The *Dutch* saw this, and not daring to attack the Vessel, they demanded him of the Sultan of *Benjar*. "The Captain of the *English* Vessel, said they, is in your Power; secure him till the King of *Mandura* be given up, or expect the same Fate *yourself*." This was the insolent Message of the *Hollanders* to the Sultan. He obeyed; he seized Captain *Congreve*, laid him in Irons, and refused to set him at Liberty, till the Sovereign demanded should be given up by his People. The Captain at first refused; but after some Days; seeing the Sultan resolute, he wrote Orders for delivering up the unhappy Monarch, with all that belonged to him.

The King, whose Person and Manner were full of Dignity, had gained, during his Stay on board, the Respect of his Officers; and his Condition had obtained him the Compassion of all in the Vessel. He had ordered Presents, and they were delivered; every Sailor declared himself ready to spill his Blood, without Reward, in his Defence.

The King was at Supper with the commanding Officer in the Round-house, when the Letter from the Captain was delivered. He read its Contents in the other's Face, who abruptly retired to the great Cabin; he there got his People together, and sent his Servant to know truly what was intended. He received no satisfactory Reply; and he could perceive Treachery and approaching Ruin. He found they were about to assault him by Violence, and he prepared for the Destruction, not for an impossible Defence.

They forced open the Door, and he saw them enter against him, armed with Cutlasses, Guns, and Bayonets. He saw his own Fate, and he determined, according to the savage Greatness

of the *East*, his Wives should not, after his Death, be carried into Slavery. When he was no longer able to protect, he destroyed them. He began in the Presence of the astonished Crew to sacrifice them by his own Hand. Tears waited upon every Blow; but beginning with the greatest Favourite, whom he flabbed to the Heart; he would have gone round, had not our People forced in upon him. They wounded him, and made him Prisoner; he was put in Irons, and then first acquainted with his Fate.

“ O *English!* *English!* is it you, exclaimed he, who refuse “ Protection to the Oppressed! You! who join to destroy “ them! Can the good *English* (they were always called so) see “ their Friends, the *Madurians*, enslaved; and not assist them? “ Can they see a King insulted by Usurpers, and not defend “ him? There is no Generosity in white Men? Nay, there is “ no Truth!—Why did you promise to protect me? You, not “ the *Dutch*, have dethroned the Sovereign of *Madura*! How “ came I here but by your Engagements to defend me? Do “ it! Or if you are afraid of that, be honest, set me on Shore “ again, and leave me to my own Valour. If I must die, let “ me not think the *English* false and fearful.”

“ Where, continued he exclaiming, where is now your “ Greatness and your Power? Your Generosity and Justice? “ Lords of the Seas, you are afraid of *Dutchmen*? Protectors of “ the Distressed, you give me up, who threw myself and King- “ dom into your sworn Protection!

When the unhappy Monarch was out of Breath with Upbraid- ings, the Officer told him, they pitied him, and pointed to the Tears of all present. “ I see it, answered he; but I demanded “ not your Pity, it was your Protection I asked; it was that “ you promised, and Heaven will punish you unless you grant “ it!”

The *Dutch* Boats now appeared; and he was informed, that he must go on board them. He turned to his People, and with a serious Dignity bid them follow: “ And, says he, if any here- “ after name the *English* in your Hearing, tell them they are not “ that good People the honest *Mulays* think!—However, con- “ tinued he, taking his Leave of our People, be kind to the “ Prince my Son, whom you have amongst you. Give him the “ Protection you refuse to his Father. Tell him, O *English!* “ of my Sufferings; and tell him that his Father, when he went “ to Death, commanded him to revenge them. If Virtue, “ concluded he, cannot enforce this, let me buy it of you! “ Take my Treasures:—for why should I enrich my greater “ Enemies!”

As he spoke this, he poured out his Gold and Jewels, and descended without Emotion into the Boat which the *Dutch* had sent for him. Our People saw it with weeping Eyes; but the *Dutch* expressed no more Concern than if a Malefactor had been delivered

to them for Execution. They returned to their Ship; which without Ceremony failed off as soon as it was dark, and was no more heard of till in Port.

The Island remains in the Hands of the *Dutch*; and the King's Condition may be guessed, for he was carried to their Settlements at the *Cape*.

But to shew that the *Dutch* have as little Regard to their Friends and Allies, as they have even to Strangers and Enemies, and that the Laws of God and Man, of Nations and Humanity, are but as Threads of Flax before a Candle, when they happen to obstruct their Interest, has been manifest on many Occasions, and will farther appear from the following Petition of the *Eaji-India Company*:

To the King's Most Excellent Majesty,

“ That Your Petitioners conceive the Freedom of Navigation
“ to Your Majesty's Subjects, and those of the States General
“ of the *United Provinces*, are settled by the Marine Treaty of
“ 1674; notwithstanding which about 1746, the *Dutch East-*
“ *India Company* caused Notice to be given to Your Petition-
“ ners Servants in *India*, that they claimed an exclusive Right
“ to many Islands there, though not possessed or settled by them,
“ and particularly to that of *Borneo*.

“ And Your Petitioners having in 1746, sent the *Dragon* and
“ *Onslow* to load Pepper at *Benjar* in *Borneo*, before the same
“ could be completed, a Squadron of five *Dutch Ships* of Force
“ and two Sloops appeared before the Place, and the Commo-
“ dore went on Shore, and compelled the Sultan not to deliver
“ any Pepper; so that the *Onslow* was obliged to depart with
“ about half her Loading, and the *Dragon* went empty from
“ thence to *Batavia*, where she met with the *Prince Edward*,
“ whose Supercargoes directed the Captain of the *Dragon*, as
“ by their Instructions they had a Power to do, to go back to
“ *Benjar*, and take in his Loading of Pepper: Upon which
“ Baron *Imhoff*, the *Dutch Governor* of *Batavia*, gave Your
“ Petitioners Supercargoes Notice in Writing, that, if she did,
“ it must be at her Peril; on which Your Petitioners Super-
“ cargoes were obliged to desist.

“ In 1747, the Ship *Fanny*, of Fort *Marlborough* in *Ben-*
“ *coolen*, being furnished with a Pass from Your Petitioners Go-
“ vernor there, and destined to *Priamong*, a free and neutral
“ Port upon the West Coast of *Sumatra*, was hindered from
“ prosecuting her intended Voyage, by a Protest from the
“ *Dutch Settlement* at *Pandang*, claiming an exclusive Trade to
“ the West Parts of *Sumatra*, and several adjacent Islands, to
“ the great Loss of the Owners. Your Petitioners Servants and
“ those under their Protection at *Bencoolen*, having enjoyed a
“ free Trade upon these Coasts, and knowing that the late
“ *Dutch Claim* was without Foundation, and not suspecting
“ that

“ that any Nation could be capable of asserting such pretended
 “ Right by Acts of Cruelty and Barbarity, some Time in *June*
 “ or *July* 1748, a *Chinaman* residing there, fitted out two *Praws*,
 “ which, with their *Cargoes*, were of the Value of twelve or
 “ thirteen Thousand *Spanish* Dollars, upon a Voyage to *Sinbel*,
 “ *Porto Nias*, and *Natal*, which are free and open Ports of the
 “ Island of *Sumatra*; and, having obtained a proper Pass, pro-
 “ secuted their Voyage, in the Course of which they fell in with
 “ a Vessel well manned, commanded by a *Dutchman*, and fitted
 “ out for the Purpose from *Pandang*, who forcibly seized both
 “ the said *Praws*, and producing their Passes, tore them in
 “ Pieces, and threw them overboard, and bound the whole
 “ Crews in Fetters, and deliberately determined to murder them
 “ all, consisting of thirty seven Persons, Inhabitants of *Bencoolen*:
 “ And for that Purpose the said *Dutch* Captain, in cool
 “ Blood, ordered them to be brought severally upon Deck, and
 “ most inhumanly slain before him, and their Bodies thrown in-
 “ to the Sea, and afterwards carried both the Vessels to *Pan-*
 “ *dang*. But one of the said Persons who had received several
 “ Wounds, endeavouring to save himself by swimming, the
 “ *Dutch* fired at him, whereby he had the Misfortune of a
 “ Musket-Ball passing through both his Cheeks; he neverthe-
 “ less reached to Shore, and gave this Account of the Transac-
 “ tion. Your Petitioners Governor and Council represented
 “ this Matter to the *Dutch* Settlement at *Pandang*, and de-
 “ manded Satisfaction for this Insult, and Restitution of the said
 “ Vessels and *Cargoes*, but without Effect; and by a Letter
 “ from the *Dutch* Governor of *Batavia*, they asserted the Right
 “ of the *Netherlands East India* Company to such exclusive
 “ Trade; and Baron *Imhoff*, the Governor, having repeated
 “ the same by his Protest of the twenty-fifth of *March* 1749,
 “ against the Ship *Delawar*, another Ship belonging to Your
 “ Petitioners, destined to *Benjar* for Pepper.

“ Should the Behaviour of the *Dutch* pass unobserved, and
 “ the exclusive Trade by them insisted upon be permitted, Your
 “ Petitioners have too just Reason to apprehend, that they would
 “ soon not only establish themselves in this exclusive Trade they
 “ now so unjustly claim, but totally exclude Your Petitioners
 “ from all free Trade to or in the *East-Indies*.

“ Your Petitioners, therefore, most humbly beseech Your
 “ Majesty, that You will be pleased to take the same into Your
 “ Consideration, and give such Directions as may procure am-
 “ ple Satisfaction for what is past, and may for the future effec-
 “ tually maintain and secure the Trade carried on in the *East-*
 “ *Indies*, by Your Petitioners, &c.

East-India-House, Octob. 27. 1749.

We shall now proceed to give an Account of the War that
 was begun and carried on between the Nabobs in Alliance with
 the

the *French* and *English*, and the Share that each Side had in the Contest.

Extract of a Letter from Fort St. George, in the East-Indies, dated July 5, 1752.

The President and Council of Fort *St. George* having received Information some Time ago, that the *Chunda Saib* and his Allies were endeavouring to harrass us in our Districts, sent for a Reinforcement from *Bengal*, and also sent Captain *Clive* to *Madras*, who having collected our Forces, and taken the Field, found the Enemy strongly encamped at *Vendalour*, a Place about fifteen Miles distant from hence. The Enemy decamped in the Night, and took the Rout of *Arcot*, and were pursued by the Nabob's Forces; they gained *Covercepante*, about sixty Miles off, which Place was appointed for their Rendezvous, their Intention having been to surprize *Arcot*. Here an Engagement ensued, in which most of their *European* Forces were killed and taken Prisoners, and their Cannon and Baggage were also taken. Upon this Advice Captain *Clive* was immediately ordered to march; he took *St. David* in his Way; and while he was there, the Ship *Dorrington* arrived, with Major *Lawrence*, who, at his own Request, had the Command of the Forces given to him, and he set out on the seventeenth of *March* from Fort *St. David*, at the Head of a Party of four hundred *Europeans*, and one thousand Seapoys, and took under Convoy a large Quantity of Stores and Ammunition for *Trichinopoly*, and proceeded, without Molestation, till he came with his Forces to *Coiladdy* on the twenty-eighth, when the Enemy strove to take Advantage of his Situation, a strong Detachment of *French* from *Chunda Saib's* Army having thrown up an Intrenchment in the Way he was to march cannonaded him from it, and endeavoured to interrupt his Passage; which induced Major *Lawrence*, on the Nabob's Part, to return it, and occasioned the Loss of some Men on both Sides: But, the Enemy not advancing, he went on the next Day for *Trichinopoly*, about sixteen Miles distant, and as the Road was in Sight of the Enemy's Camp, they came out with their whole Force to oppose him, Major *Lawrence*, in order to secure the Baggage, marched to meet them; this brought on a Cannonading from them, which did him but little Damage; but his Guns galled the Enemy very much, and forced them to retreat into a hollow Way; upon this Major *Lawrence* drew off his Men, and joined the Army that Night. In this Action the Enemy lost above three hundred Horse, besides *Allam Cawn*, a Man of great Interest in the Country. *Chunda* was soon obliged to raise the Siege of *Trichinopoly*, and collect his Forces in *Syringham*, a neighbouring Island; and the *English* Forces having possessed themselves of all the strong Posts quite round it, they so effectually prevented

prevented Provisions from coming to the Enemy, that *Chunda's* great Army of above thirty thousand Men was dispersed in less than two Months; and himself, with the *French*, and a few black Horse Scapoys, who held out, were in a miserable Condition for Want of Sustenance. Upon this the Nabob summoned them to surrender Prisoners; and after they had sent *Chunda* in the Night-time to *Monacjee*, they delivered up the Island of *Syringham* on the third of *June*, on Condition that the *French* Officers should have Leave to go to *Pondicherry* on their Parole, never to serve against the Nabob or his Allies; and the Soldiers to be sent to *Europe* by the first Opportunity, but in the mean Time to be kept Prisoners. As the Allies could not agree who should keep *Chunda*, who was taken at *Monacjee* by the *Tanjore* Ally, to end the Dispute, his Head was struck off. The whole Business was done in a few Sieges and some Skirmishes, in several of which not a Man of our Forces was lost; so that in reducing the Blacks to the Nabob's Obedience, and making thirty Officers, and near a thousand *European* Soldiers Prisoners, we had not fifty Men killed.

M. Duplex, at the Desire of *Salabad Jing*, solicited for a Peace, which the Nabob was willing to consent to, provided it was made to our Satisfaction, as he owned himself much obliged to us.

Extract of a Letter from Major Lawrence, at Trichinopoly in the East-Indies, dated June 12. 1752.

We have killed and taken Prisoners an Army, with all their Artillery, which amount to about forty Pieces of Cannon and ten Mortars. We found among the Prisoners thirty *French* Officers, about six killed, and about eight hundred private Men: They were acting as Allies to the Rebels, that have almost destroyed this Country; and we gave our Assistance to the lawful Prince, who is so sensible of his Obligation to the *English*, that I have great Hopes our Company will be able to carry on their Trade here to more Advantage than any other *European* Nation. I am going to begin my March through the *Arcot* Country to settle the Tranquillity of it, and am about an hundred Miles from the Sea-side.

Letters, which afterwards arrived from the *East-Indies*, confirmed all the above Accounts of the Advantages the *English* had obtained over the *French* and their Allies; and likewise mentioned three fresh Battles in that Country, in which the *English* were victorious, and greatly to the Honour of Captain *Clive* and Major *Lawrence*.

In *October* 1753, Captain *Clive* arrived in *England* from the *East-Indies*, and gave the Company an Account, That the *English* maintained themselves in all the Posts which they became possessed

possessed of after the last Engagement between them and the *French*. That the latter had made some new Motions, as if they intended an important Enterprize, but, it was imagined, their only View was to embarrass the *English*: That the *French* seemed rather inclined to stand upon the defensive, rather than to act offensively, on Account of the considerable Losses they had sustained, which had greatly discouraged the Nabobs their Allies: That M. *Dupleix* had recalled all the regular Troops that had been joined with the *Indians*, leaving with them only a Body of Troops which he lately raised in the Country, and disciplined in the Manner of the *Europeans*: That there was great Reason to presume, that there would be a Scarcity of Provisions at *Pondicherry*, all Kinds of Provisions being very scarce in the Neighbourhood, and the Ships from *Europe* not bringing a sufficient Quantity to supply their Necessities: That the *English* had still a sufficient Supply of military Stores to defend themselves in Case they were attacked, and that Provisions were furnished them in great Abundance by the *Indians* in Alliance with them.

Letters from Fort St. David, February 15. 1753. advised, that there had been a great Mortality among the *Swiss* Troops in the Service of the *East-India* Company, and that the Face of Affairs is much altered since the great Repulse which the *French* met with before *Trichinopoly*. The King of *Massour*, who had marched to the Assistance of the Nabob, in the Interest of the *English*, and had obliged the *French* to raise the Siege of *Trichinopoly*, is since become an Enemy to that Nabob, upon Pretence that he had broke his Word with him, and now actually blocks up that Town himself. A Chief of the *Marattes*, named *Moraro*, who had joined us, is also gone over to the *French* Army, at a little Distance from our's, which is encamped and entrenched at *Trivady*, where the Nabob is in Person. There we wait for the *French*, who will find it very difficult to attack us; but, in the mean Time, the *Marattes* destroy every Thing near the Camp, and we are obliged to live with the greatest Frugality. The Black Troops in the Service of the Nabob desert in whole Drove for Want of Provisions and Pay; and, the Nabob having very little Resources from his Province, great Part of which is occupied and laid waste by the Enemy, the whole Weight and Expence of the War will fall upon the *English* who are already considerably in Debt, and perhaps they one Day or other may have a War with the Nabob for the Payment of the Money they have advanced. According to the Advices we have received from the Officers of our Nation, who are Prisoners at *Pondicherry*, the *French* were soon to be joined by a new Nabob, whom they had caused to be proclaimed, and that he is Brother-in-law to him who lately had his Head cut off. These Advices add, that a Peace was concluded between the King of *Golconda*, and another powerful Nation of the *Marattes*, which has engaged to send to the

Assistance

Affistance of the *French*, a Body of twenty-five thousand Horse. Thus the War is brisker than ever, and becomes more and more difficult to put a Stop to.

Extract of a Letter from Major Stringer Lawrence to the Court of the Directors of the East-India Company, dated at the Camp near Trichinopoly, Sept. 26. 1753.

Since my Letter of the twenty-fourth Instant, Captain Ridge joined me with a Detachment of above two hundred *Europeans*. This Addition made me resolve to attack the Enemy, as the *Nonsoons* approached, and their Situation was such, that they cut off our Provisions, which must have ended in the Loss of *Trichinopoly*: Accordingly, on the nineteenth I made a Motion in the Night towards the Left of the Enemy's Camp, for they had Possession of two large Rocks, about a Mile distant from each other, and I found it necessary to gain one of them. The whole Day of the twentieth was spent in cannonading, and the better to conceal our Design, I had ordered out an eighteen Pounder from the Fort, that they might think we had no other View than that of disturbing them in their Camp with our Shot. This lulled them into a Security; and at Four of the Clock in the Morning of the twenty-first, our *Europeans* being disposed into three Lines, with the Seapoys on our Flank, and the Horse in our Rear, we attacked the Rock on our Left, called the *Golden Rock*, and gained it without any Loss, the Enemy retiring after a faint Resistance, and leaving behind them two Pieces of Cannon. This Earnest of Success encouraged the Men greatly, and determined me to push on to the main Body; so, that no Time might be lost, I disabled the two Guns, and advanced towards the *Sugar Loaf Rock*, just as the Day began to break. The Enemy were drawn up close to the Rock, and had fortified themselves with Breastworks; so it was necessary to gain their Black Camp, that we might fall upon them in the Rear. This was effected with little Trouble, and our Soldiers marched through a constant Fire from nine Pieces of Cannon, attacked a Line of Men, which greatly out-numbered themselves, and in ten or twelve Minutes drove the Enemy out of their Lines.

They however rallied, and made some faint Resistance afterwards, supported by the *Marattes*, who rode up very desperately: But as these could not sustain a galling Fire, which fell upon them from all Quarters, they at length ran away, and left us complete Masters of the Field of Battle, their whole Camp, Baggage, Ammunition, and ten Pieces of Cannon. The Remains of their Army retreated, some towards *Altoora* and *Syringham*, some towards *Tondamons* Country, and some towards *Tanjore*. The Polligars and Seapoys bring in Prisoners every Minute.

The

The Action lasted near two Hours: We took eight Officers, and one hundred Soldiers, besides the killed, which might be about sixty more. The *Marattes* saved the rest, and prevented a Pursuit, as they were vastly superior to *Monage*, our *Tanjore* Friend. On our Part, we had six Officers wounded, and several Men killed and wounded. I received a slight Wound in the Arm with a Musket-Ball; but I thank God it does not prevent me from keeping the Field.

Letters from the *East Indies* also mentioned the Death of Captain *Chase*, who had the Command of a Company in that Service, and had served in the Marines here in the last War. This young Gentleman, (the younger Brother of a good family in *Buckinghamshire*) being an Officer whom Major *Lawrence* knew he could confide in, was left by the Major with a small Party in a Village called *Tividy*; which, as soon as the Major retired with the main Army, was surrounded and attacked by the whole *French* Forces. Captain *Chase* had the Courage to make a Sally on them in the Night, in which he lost two Officers and several *Indian* Soldiers. The next Day they summoned him to surrender, which he refusing, they battered his little Fortification in Breach, and his *Indian* Soldiers mutinying and refusing to defend it, they were all taken Prisoners. The Captain was carried to *Pondicherry*, where he survived his Misfortune but a few Days, leaving behind him the Character of a brave and experienced Officer, though under twenty-eight Years of Age, and is much lamented at Fort *St. George*.

Letters from Fort *St. George*, dated November 28. 1756. gave an Account, that the *French* made an Attempt to take *Trichonopoly* (by Surprise) a strong Place belonging to the Nabob, in which was a Garrison commanded by Captain *Kilpatrick*. They made the Attack about Four of the Clock that Morning with eight hundred *Europeans*. Their Black Forces were to make several false Attacks on different Parts of the Town. By the Darkness of the Night, and the Carelessness of the Guard, they got over the Ditch, fixed their Ladders, and six hundred of them, without firing a Shot got Possession of a Battery on the outward Wall, called *Dalton's Battery*: By this Time an accidental Shot or two alarmed the Garrison, who immediately repaired to their Posts, and attacked the Party on the Battery, who defended themselves till Day light, and made several Attempts to scale the inward Wall, and petard the Gate, but were kept off by the Garrison. By Day break, those who did not chuse to venture their Necks, by jumping off of the Battery to save themselves, called out for Quarter, which was given them. There were taken in the Battery two hundred ninety-seven *Europeans* Prisoners, besides sixty-five wounded, and forty-two killed in the Ditch, besides nine Officers. The rest of their Loss was not known, but it was believed, must be pretty considerable. In this Action the Garrison had scarce any Loss.

E c

From

From the Time of the before-mentioned Action, until the Middle of *February* following, nothing material happened, when Colonel *Lawrence*, who was then encamped near *Trichonopoly*, was obliged, according to Custom, to send a Party to escort Provisions to the Camp, consisting of two hundred and thirty *Eurpeans*, eight Officers, about five hundred Seapoys, and four Pieces of Cannon. They marched on the twelfth of *February*, and on their Return on the fifteenth, were attacked by a Party of the Enemy, consisting of one hundred and twenty *French*, two Companies of Foreigners, the *French* Troop of one hundred and twenty Men, one thousand Topasses, six thousand Seapoys, all their Black Cavalry, in Number about eight thousand, and seven Pieces of Cannon. This Detachment moved in the Night, and came up with Colonel *Lawrence's* detached Party by Break of Day, as they were on the March. What Men could do, they did; but the commanding Officer afraid of losing his Baggage, divided his Force to save it; upon which the Enemy fell in amongst them, and, although they paid dear for it, killed or took Prisoners almost the whole Party.

The Governor and Council of Fort *St. George*, on receiving Advice of this Action, dispatched two Vessels with Troops on board for Fort *St. David*, to join Colonel *Lawrence*, where they arrived about the Middle of *March* last; and the Colonel advised, that his Men were in good Spirits, and only wished for an Opportunity to repair this Slip of their Countrymen.

Extract of a Letter from a Gentleman in India, dated at Calcutta, Jan. 10. 1754.

Since my last I can give you a Piece of News, which is authentick. We have had another smart Engagement in these Parts, and have put the *French* so entirely to the Rout, that I should think they will not be able to face us again, our Forces were inferior much to theirs, nine thousand *Europeans* and *Indians*, and on their Side, twenty-one thousand. The Want of Provisions, and extreme hard Service in our Army induced them to attack the *French* in their Trenches, and they have obtained a compleat Victory, taken all their Artillery, consisting of eleven Pieces of Cannon, several Mortars, &c. all their Baggage, four or five hundred *European* Prisoners, with the Officers of the Dey, the General being gone to make a Visit to the neighbouring Nabob. In the Bazar, or Market, was great Plenty of all Manner of Refreshments, which was of the greatest Consequence. The Number of killed and wounded on our Side is inconsiderable; as to theirs I cannot give any Account, the Letter I received from one of the Officers, being wrote in so great a Hurry, that he does not mention any other Particulars; but the *French* themselves were so secure of Victory, that they had
posted

posted a Party of Horse to oppose our Retreat; and a Report was spread, that they were ordered to give no Quarter.

These Hostilities between the *French* and *English* Companies in the *East-Indies* were a great Detriment to the Trade on both Sides, and would probably have ended in the Ruin of one or both, had they been continued much longer. The Directors therefore of the *French* Company, commissioned M. Duvalier, their Agent at *London* to enter into Conferences with those of the *English*, and after some Time a Convention was agreed upon between them, which was presented to and approved of by the Ministers of both Courts. According to this Convention, the two Companies were reciprocally to restore the Territories taken by the respective Troops since the Year 1748, except certain Districts, of which the *English* reserved the Possession on Account of their favourable Situation for the Security of their Settlements. Thus the *French* ceded to the *English* certain Territories in *Gokonda*, and the latter, in Return, gave the *French* certain Districts contiguous to *Pondicherry*. A Line was to be drawn to separate their respective Territories, and the Conditions were settled of the Neutrality to be observed, whenever a War broke out among the *Indian* Princes: They were neither of them to interfere in their Differences; and the two Nabobs, who were raised to that Dignity by the Influence of either Party, are acknowledged such by both. By this Agreement the Commerce of the two Nations in the *East-Indies* would meet with no Obstruction so long as the Peace should subsist in *Europe*.

S E C T. IV.

*Some Account of Angria the Pirate, and the Taking of
Geriah by Vice-Admiral Watson.*

TULAGEE *Angria* is a petty Prince of *India*, or *Indolstan*, a vast Extent of Country in *Asia*, subject to the *Great Mogul*, who governs it by Viceroys, called Nabobs, Chans, and Rajas, who are absolute Sovereigns over their several Provinces, to which they succeed by hereditary Right, and acknowledge the *Mogul* as Supreme Lord only by an annual Tribute. These Princes have frequently made War on each other, without Permission from the *Mogul*, and have often refused to pay him the Tribute. At this Time they affect Independence with Impunity, as the *Mogul* was a few Years since divested of almost all his Power by *Kouli Kan*; and in the Year 1754, was deposed by the *Morrhatoes*, a People who inhabit a large inland Tract of his Dominions, and whose Power has always made them insolent and rebellious. *Tulagee Angria's* Dominion consists of several Islands near *Bombay*, and an Extent of Coast along the neigh-

bouring Continent of above one hundred and twenty Miles in Length, and sixty in Breadth, with several Forts that were taken by his Ancestors from *European* Setlers. As many Particulars concerning these Ancestors, and the Manner how their Territory was acquired, as Books, or Intelligence could furnish, will be found in the following Narrative.

About the Year 1643, an *Arabian* Vessel was by the Strefs of Weather driven down the Coast of *Concan* to the South of *Bombay*, as far as *Choul*, and forced on Shore on the Dominions of a Tributary to the *Great Mogul*, called the *South Raja*. The People on board got on Shore, but the Crew as soon as they had escaped Shipwreck, accused the Master of great Cruelty and Injustice, and the Officers of the Raja, upon this Accufation, put him to Death, and seized the Vessel.

The principal Man among the Crew, was one *Lamb Angria*, by Extraction a *Caffree*, born in an Island in the Gulph of *Ormus*, and by Religion a Mahometan. It happened that at this Time the *South Raja* was at War with the *Mogul*, and had been twice defeated; the Crew of this Vessel, therefore, being sixteen in Number, were sent as Recruits to his Army, which was then encamped near *Surat*, escorted by an Officer and one hundred Men. This Party, on the third Day of their March, fell in with an advanced Party of the *Mogul's* Troops, consisting of five hundred Men. The Officer, seized with a sudden Pannic, immediately deserted his Command, and the whole Company would have been taken Prisoners, if *Angria* had not, with a Courage and Audacity, that often on sudden Emergencies is implicitly obeyed, put himself at their Head, and by taking Advantage of some loaded Carriages, which served as Barricadoes against the first Onset, and improving the Situation of some neighbouring Defiles and the Approach of Night, not only defended his Party, but issuing unexpectedly upon their Rear the next Morning, through a Defile through which he had silently marched in the Night totally defeated, and, except about thirty-six, cut them all to Pieces. He then heaped the Spoils upon the Carriages which had served him for a Bulwark, and proceeded in his Route.

The Raja received the first Account of this Atchievement from *Angria's* own Mouth, and as a Reward for his Bravery and Conduct, immediately promoted him to a considerable Command in the Army. *Angria* soon after signalized himself in a general Engagement with the *Mogul's* Forces, over which he gained a compleat Victory. He was advanced to be Commander in Chief, and soon after married the Daughter of the Raja's first Minister, by whom he had a Son, named *Pusab Angria*, who at the Age of twenty Years had obtained, by his Father's Interest, a very considerable military Command.

About two Years afterwards the *South Raja* died, and his Successor refusing to pay the Tribute demanded by the *Mogul*, the
Mogul

Mogul ordered the Nabob of *Surat* to invade his Dominions. The Raja, whether he had taken any Displeasure against *Angria*, or whether he thought him too young for a Command that required not only Courage but Experience, gave the Post, which *Angria* expected in this Expedition, to another.

Angria was so much offended at this Disappointment, that he took an Opportunity to quit the Raja's Dominions, and offer his Service to the Nabob that was marching against him. The Nabob accepted the Offer, and gave him a considerable Command. The Nabob was victorious, and *Angria*, urged by his Resentment and his Pride, to shew that he was not unworthy the Command which the Raja refused, and that he was able to punish whoever should offend him, performed many Feats of desperate Bravery, and took the Officer Prisoner that had been appointed in his Stead. *Angria* insulted in this Instance of Success with a savage and malicious Joy, and commanding that his Captive should be brought before him in the Presence of the Nabob, he drew his Sword, and after insulting him with many opprobrious Terms on his Change of Fortune, he turned to the Nabob, and told him, he should now see him sacrifice to his Revenge a Man to whom he owed his first Disgrace. He then advanced furiously to the Victim, in order to strike off his Head, but the Nabob commanded his Guards to interpose. He told him, that he would admit no Prisoner of any Man who had fought under his Banners to be murdered in cold Blood. *Angria* knew it would be in vain to contend, and therefore suddenly put up his Sword; but from that Moment he conceived so violent a Hatred against the Nabob, that he was perpetually contriving his Ruin.

While his Mind was in this State. some Emiffaries of the Raja whom he had deserted, made him Offers of great Advantage if he would return. These Offers he secretly accepted, but would not withdraw, that he might improve the first Opportunity that should offer of betraying the Nabob to his Enemies.

In Consequence of this Resolution, he soon after advised the Raja to advance against the Nabob with his whole Army, promising to join him as soon as the Troops should engage. The Raja confiding in *Angria*, and minutely following his Instructions, came upon the Nabob with so much Advantage, that being joined by *Angria* with fifteen hundred Men, and three hundred Horse, he obtained a compleat Victory, killing near six thousand on the Spot, and plundering the City of *Surat*.

This War was soon followed by a Peace, greatly to the Advantage of the Raja, who gave *Angria* his Sister in Marriage, by whom he had two Sons, *Pusab Angria*, and *Connagee Angria*.

Angria the Father died in the Infancy of these Children, who were educated by the Raja their Uncle with great Kindness. *Pusab* died a Boy; and when *Connagee* was twenty Years old, the Raja gave him the Island of *Kennery*, being a Rock of about a
Mile

Mile and a half in Circumference, as a petty Sovereignty, placing several Officers of State about him, and giving him also a Number of Vessels, called Galley-wats, about the Size of our *Gravesend* Tilt-boats, carrying six Swivel Guns, and sixty Men.

With this Territory, and this Fleet, *Connagee Angria* commenced Pirate. *Kennery* lies just in the Mouth of *Bombay* Harbour, so that no Vessel could pass without coming into *Angria's* Reach; and the Rock besides its natural Advantages, was fortified by an impregnable Fort. After several Years of successful Rapine, in which he was abetted by the Raja and his Successor, he obtained not only a more considerable naval Force, but an Army of the Raja's People, with sixteen thousand auxiliary *Morattoes*, with which he conquered the Coast as far as *Dabul*, and took *Geriah*, where the *Portuguese* had built a strong Fort, which he garrisoned and improved, so as to render it one of the most formidable Places in all *India*.

By a perpetual Acquisition of new Territory and new Treasure, *Angria* obtained the Power and State of a Sovereign Prince; and in the Year 1712, he had twenty thousand Men constantly in his Pay; he sent out his Generals to fight his Battles, and gave Audience to Ambassadors from the neighbouring States.

He now began to meditate the Conquest of some Parts of the Dominions of his Friend the South Raja, and having obtained Powder and Ball from the *Portuguese*, and formed many offensive Alliances with the neighbouring Princes, he suddenly invaded the Territories of his Friend, and took *Allabeg*, a Place of great Strength and Importance. He next seized upon *Hannary*, a small Island near *Kennery*, where he established a Fishery: After many Struggles between *Angria* and this Prince, a Treaty of Peace, offensive and defensive was made between them; the principal Article of which was, that *Angria*, in Consideration of holding quietly all he had conquered, should attempt to conquer no more.

Angria having now founded a new Kingdom, and being acknowledged as a Sovereign by the neighbouring Powers, became formidable even to the Mogul, with whom after many Battles with various Success, he concluded a Peace. The *European* Nations also thought it their Interest to enter into Treaty with him for Security of their Trade, which it was so much in his Power to annoy. A Treaty was concluded with him by *England* in 1715, after an unsuccessful Attempt by a very considerable naval Force, with a numerous Army on board, under the Command of Governor *Boone*.

Angria having soon after violated this Treaty, as he had done every other, another Squadron was sent against him from *England*, under the Command of the late Admiral *Matthews*, in 1721, but this Expedition was rendered unsuccessful by the Treachery

Treachery or Timidity of the *Portuguese*, who had engaged to assist *Matthews* with Troops from *Goa*, but did not fulfil their Engagement.

In 1734 *Connagee Angria* died, and was succeeded by *Sambajee Angria* his Son, who added to his hereditary Dominions, and became the Terror of all his Neighbours, particularly of the South Raja.

Sambajee Angria died in 1745, and having no Children, he was succeeded by *Tulagee Angria*, his Brother, from whom *Geriah*, his Capital, is now taken.

This Man is now about forty Years of Age, about five Feet ten Inches high, of an olive Complexion, and a bold Aspect. His Dominions extended from *Bombay* to *Munlo*, a Sea-port, distant about one hundred and twenty Miles South, and they extend seventy-six Miles in Length. He had the Ports of *Ziwanchi*, *Antiguria*, *Dabul*, and *South Rook*, besides his Islands of *Kennerly* and *Hannary*, and his Forts of *Allabeg* and *Golaby*. He generally kept up an Army of thirty thousand *Caffres*, *Seapoys*, and *Topasses*, and as many *Morattes* as he could seduce from their Allegiance to the South Raja their Sovereign. His Gunners and Sea-Officers were mostly renegado *Europeans*; he had a large Train of Artillery, besides the Cannon of his Forts and Shipping, and twelve Elephants. His Island of *Kennerly* is nine Miles distant from any Part of the Continent; all the North, South, and West Parts are rocky, but to the Eastward there is a fine sandy Cave, which the Castle fronts, flanked by two Bastions on each Side mounted with six Guns each, from which any Boat attempting to land, may be sunk with great Surety.

Fort *Geriah* has an excellent Harbour, in which the Tide rises and falls as regularly as in the River *Thames*. This Harbour is one of the best upon the Coast, and the Fort might be rendered almost impregnable. The Island of *Golaby* lies between *Golaby* and *Chaule*, about fourteen Leagues from *Bombay*, and ten Miles from *Chaule*.

The naval Force of *Tulagee Angria*, consisted of about fifteen Grabs, which carried six and nine Pounders, and a great Number of Men at small Arms; five Ketches, two Ships and forty Guns, and about forty Galley-watts, and other small Craft.

Tulagee Angria has withheld his Tribute two Years, and, when the South Raja sent to demand it, he slit the Ambassadors' Noses, and sent them ignominiously back. The South Raja thus outraged, sent last Winter to *Bombay*, to desire the *English* would join him to destroy *Angria*, and has ever since ravaged his Country, and blocked up his strong Holds by Land. The *English* promised to assist, and in October 1755, Vice-Admiral *Watson* left the *Coromandel Coast* with his Squadron, and coming to *Bombay* to refit, informed Governor *Bourchier*, he was ready to act against *Angria*, and, whilst Things were preparing, sent his first Lieutenant,

Lieutenant, Sir *William Hewitt*, in an armed Vessel, to sound the Harbour of *Geriah*, and make proper Observations, and great Part of our Success was owing to his Discoveries.

On Feb. 6. 1756, the Land Forces embarked, consisting of seven hundred *European* Soldiers, three hundred *Topasses*, or black Port Soldiers, and three hundred *Seapoy*, under the Command of Colonel *Clive*. On the seventh the Squadron set Sail from *Bombay*, and joined the *Moratta* Fleet, consisting of three or four *Grabs*, and forty or fifty Galley-watts, commanded by *Narypant*, in a Creek to the Northward of *Geriah*, called *Rajipur*, where stood a small Fort, which they had just taken from *Angria*. On the Shore lay the *Moratta* Army, consisting of five thousand Foot, and four thousand Horse, under *Ramaicepunt*. Here *Angria* had been treating to surrender the Fort to the *Morattas*, who had been sent against him by the South Raja, upon certain private stipulations; but endeavouring to go by Land from *Geriah* to *Gelaby*, he was taken by a Detachment of their Army, and was at this Time Prisoner amongst them, having left his Brother-in-law in Command of the Fort.

When the Admiral arrived off the Harbour, on the eleventh, he summoned the Castle to surrender; but receiving no Answer in the Time he proposed, and finding the *Morattas* (from whom he had received no Assistance) were trifling with him, he weighed, in the Afternoon, and stood into the Harbour in two Divisions, the King's Ships and those of the Company. The Enemy fired at our Ships as they passed their Batteries; but as soon as they were got by them, and properly placed, they began such a Fire as soon silenced the Batteries, and likewise the Fire from their *Grabs*. Soon after four of the Clock, a Shell was thrown into the *Restoration*, an armed Ship, which *Angria* some Time ago took from the *East-India* Company, which set her on Fire, and very soon after his whole Fleet shared the same Fate, and were all entirely destroyed. The Fort fired briskly about Half an Hour; but the incessant Fire from our Ships and Bomb Ketches, not only lessened the Fire, but destroyed the Houses.

At five of the Clock the Signal was made to cease Firing, which raised the Spirits of the Enemy, and encouraged them to renew their Cannonade. On this the bloody Flag was hung out, and we continued firing till six of the Clock, at which Time a Flag of Truce was sent on Shore, expecting the Garrison would surrender. At nine of the Clock our Troops landed a Mile and a half from the Fort, and were joined by near ten thousand *Morattas*. In the Morning, seeing the Flag of Truce hung over the Walls, we marched towards the Garrison; but as soon as we were got to the Bottom of the Hill near the Fort, they fired upon us, though they killed only one Man, and wounded an Officer in the Shoulder, on which we retreated to our former Ground. Colonel *Clive* then went on board the Admiral to concert Measures for another Attack. On this a Signal was
hung

hung out for the Line of Battle Ships only, and the Bomb-ketches to renew their Fire, which was continued with such Success for three Hours, that the Enemy capitulated, upon which a Company of our Soldiers took Possession, and hoisted the *British* Flag on the Ramparts: But when the Fort was surrendered, the *Morattes* attempted to take Possession of it before us, which had they done, a very small Part of the Plunder would have fallen to our Lot; and this they would have done, had it not been for the gallant Behaviour of Captain *Forbes*, who commanded the Company sent to take Possession of the Fort: He drew his Sword, made his Men face to the Right about, and swore by his Maker he would cut the *Moratta* General's Head off, if he offered to advance a Step farther; which so terrified him and his Men, that without further Molestation he left Captain *Forbes* to take Possession of the Fort.

In the Fort were two hundred and fifty Iron and Brass Cannon of all Sizes, and a prodigious Quantity of Ammunition and Provisions, of rich Goods and some Money. The Garrison consisted of about three hundred, though there were near two thousand in the Fort; and *Angria's* Mother, two Wives, two Children and Brother-in-law, are among the Prisoners, who have been treated by the Admiral with Generosity and Humanity, In Silver Rupees we have found about one hundred thousand Pounds, and in other Effects near thirty thousand Pounds, but we are searching in Expectation of a great deal more; so that I hope we shall share very considerably in the Plunder of this notorious Pirate. We released eight *English*, two *Scotts*, and three *Dutchmen* from Imprisonment in *Geriab*, who had been taken in several Vessels by *Angria*.

S E C T. V.

An Account of the Loss of the Company's Settlements at Bengal, in a Letter from a Gentleman at Fort St. George.

IN the Month of *September* 1756, we heard that our Settlement at *Bengal* was taken, and in the Beginning of *October*, we had a Confirmation of it. The Destruction of that Place will be a great Loss to that Company. As I have seen the Letter which was sent to the Governor and Council here, I shall give you the Substance of the Affair:

It seems the Governor and Council at *Bengal* protected an old Nabob, deposed, from the Resentment of the young one his Successor. The latter sent to demand him, but the *English* refused to deliver him up. Upon which he raised an Army of thirty thousand Horse and the same Number of Foot, with three or four hundred Elephants of War. The *English* sent out Spies

F f to

to discover their Number, which they never knew exactly till they were jett upon them. They summoned the Fort to deliver up the old Nabob, promising upon that Condition to withdraw their Troops immediately. The Enemy then threw up a small Breastwork opposite the Fort, and mounted two twelve Pounders upon it. They fired two or three Times in an Hour; but if they had fired till Doomsday, they could never have made a Breach. Finding our Gentlemen determined not to give up the Factory without making an Opposition, he proposed a Truce, and inveigled Mr. *Watts*, our Chief, to his Tent, under Pretence of accommodating Matters. When he had got him to his Tent, he made him sign a Paper, acknowledging himself indebted to the Nabob in a large Sum of Money; and then ordered him to send Mef. *Cillet* and *Dafon*, two of the Council. As soon they came to the Nabob's Tent, he sent Mr. *Dafon*, and Mr. *Cillet* to prevail on our People to surrender the Factory, with the Guns, Ammunition, &c. at Discretion, keeping Mr. *Watts* as a Hostage for the Performance of it.

On the fourth of *June* the Factory of *Cassimbuzar* was surrendered, notwithstanding it was warmly opposed by many of the Gentlemen.

As soon as he had performed this Exploit, he immediately marched with all his Forces, consisting of seventy thousand Horse and Foot to *Calcutta*, threatening to drive the *English* out of the Country. On the fifteenth, he began the Siege by attacking one of the Redoubts at the Entrance of the Town, but was repulsed with a great Slaughter of his Men. The next Day he made an Attack on our advanced Posts at the Goal and Court-house, which kept a constant Fire on his Troops, by which many of them were killed.

Notwithstanding this Opposition another Attack was made on the eighteenth, when those Posts were abandoned by our Troops, which gave the Nabob's Forces an Entrance into the Town, which obliged us to retreat to the Fort.

A Council of War being called to consider of the State of Affairs, the Captain of the Train acquainted the Council, that there was no Ammunition in the Fort for three Days; on which the Women were sent on board the Shipping lying before the Fort. The Governor and some of the principal Officers likewise got on board the Ships and went away, leaving the People in the Fort without a Possibility of securing a Retreat.

The whole Number left in the Fort being two hundred and fifty effective Men, we held out the twentieth in the Evening, when the Ammunition being near spent, a Flag of Truce was hung out. During the Parley of the Walls, the back Gate was betrayed by the *Dutch* Guard, and we were obliged to surrender at Discretion. The same Night one hundred and seventy of us were crammed into a Hole not large enough for fifty of us to breathe in; the Effect of it was, that only sixteen were alive the

the next Morning. Four of us were sent to the Nabob's Camp, and put into Irons; but what became of the other twelve that escaped I tell in Miniature, I have not been able to learn.

The twenty-eighth of *October* we sent the Ship, full of Troops and Ammunition, to reinforce the Company's Servants, as we hear it will be delivered up to us shortly. The Company is reported to have lost by this Affair two Crores of Rupees. Each Crow contains a hundred Lack, and each Lack an hundred thousand; that is, twenty Millions of Rupees, which make two million, two hundred and fifty thousand Pound sterling.

The same Day, *October* the twenty-eighth, our Ambassadors arrived from *Pooner*; where they had been three Weeks treating with the *Moratto* Prince, to whom we have delivered *Gorlah*, and they in Return, have given us several Villages at *Seven-rooke*.

This amazing Catastrophe of *Fort Williams*, and the City of *Calcutta* in *Bengal* is so much the more surprizing, as the *English* had always lived in a good Understanding with the old Nabob, who, on many Occasions, had shewn them much Respect and Favour. It is certain that for some Time past the Country Government in *India* have had a secret Jealousy of the *Europeans*, and were therefore willing to lay hold of any Opportunity to convince them that they were not Proprietors of the Places in which they were settled, but held them by Permission, according to the good Pleasure of the Great Mogul.

It is here, that the old Nabob and the young one shew no great Deference or Respect to the Court of *Dilly*, but notwithstanding this they would have Foreigners believe, that they are upon good Terms with, and derive their Authority from the Mogul. It is said, that Monarch has sent his eldest Son, with one of the principal Generals, and a great Army to attend him, in order to dispossess the young Nabob, and to place the young Prince in the Government of *Bengal*, and two other great Provinces; the News of which obliged him to leave *Calcutta*, as soon as he had taken it.

S E C T. VI.

An Account of the Retaking of Calcutta, and the other Forts.

LETTERS from Admiral *Watson*, Jan. 31. 1757. off *Calcutta*, in the River *Hughley*, advised, that having sailed the sixteenth of *October* last, with all the Squadron, and the *Walpole* and *Marlborough* Indiamen, from *Madras* to *Bengal*, he anchored, after a tedious Passage, on the fifth of *December*, in *Balafore* Road; and having crossed the Braces on the eighth, proceeded up the River, and arrived at *Fulta* on the fifteenth, where

he found Governor *Drake*, and the Gentlemen of the Council on board such Ships and Vessels as had escaped falling into the Hands of the Moors. As the Pilots would not take the Charge of the Ships till the Springs were over, the Admiral could not proceed till the twenty-eighth, when he sailed with the *Kent*, *Tyger*, *Salisbury*, *Bridgewater*, and *King's Fisher* Sloop. The next Afternoon Colonel *Clive* was landed, in order to march and attack *Basudgia* Fort by Land, at the same Time that the Squadron appeared before the Place, which anchored, and began to cannonade the Place about eight of the Clock in the Morning on the thirtieth; and at Half past Eight, the King's Troops were landed to support Colonel *Clive*. The Ships soon silenced the Enemy's Fire; and, at Seven in the Evening, one hundred Seamen were landed under the Command of Captain *King*. At Half past Eight the Body of the Fort was on Fire, and immediately News was received that the Place was taken, but the few People in it had all escaped. One of the Company's Captains was killed, and four Soldiers wounded. This Fort was extremely well situated for Defence, having a wet Ditch round it, but badly provided with Cannon, only eighteen Guns, from twenty-four Pounders and downwards, and about forty Barrels of Powder, with Ball in Proportion, being found in it. On the first of *January*, the *Kent* and *Tyger* anchored between Fort *Pama* and a Battery opposite to it, both which the Enemy abandoned as the Ships approached. About forty Guns, some fourteen Pounders, and all mounted on good Carriages, with some Powder and Ball, were found in this Fort and Battery; and the Admiral left the *Salisbury* as a Guardship to prevent the Enemy from regaining them. In the Night the Admiral sent the Boats, manned and armed, up the River, to burn a Ship and some Vessels, said to be filled with Combustibles, which was executed without Opposition. The next Morning early, the Company's Troops were landed, and immediately began their March to *Calcutta*. The *Kent* and the *Tyger* soon after proceeded up the River, together with the twenty Gun Ship and Sloop. At forty Minutes after Nine the Enemy began to fire upon the *Tyger* from their Batteries below *Calcutta*, which they abandoned as the Ships approached. At twenty Minutes past Ten the *Tyger* and *Kent* made a very warm Fire, insomuch that the Enemy were soon drove from their Guns, and presently after ran out of the Fort, which Captain *Crote*, with the King's Troops, and an Officer from the *Kent*, entered a little before Eleven. Four Mortars, thirty-one Guns of different Sizes, and a considerable Quantity of all Kinds of Ammunition, were found in the Fort. The Ships have suffered very little in their Masts, Yards, and Rigging, and have only lost nine Seamen and three Soldiers killed, and twenty-six Seamen and six Soldiers wounded. An Expedition was then proposed against *Hughley*, to be executed by the twenty Gun Ship and Sloop, the Boats of the Squadron manned and

and armed, assisted by all the King's Troops, amounting to one hundred and seventy, the Company's Grenadiers, and two hundred *Seapoys*, which were to be landed under the Command of Major *Kilpatrick*; and every Thing being prepared they failed the fifth of *January*, under the Command of Captain *Smith* of the *Bridgewater*; and on the eleventh, the Admiral received an Account of the taking that Place, in which were found forty Guns, from twenty-four Pounders downward, with a Quantity of Ammunition. The City of *Hugbley* has been since burnt and destroyed, together with the Granaries and Storehouses of Salt, situate on the Banks of each Side of the River, which will be of great Prejudice to the Nabob, as they contained a Store for the Subsistence of his Army, while in that Part of the Country.

Some farther Particulars of the above Expedition, in a Letter from an Officer of the Kent, dated at Calcutta, Febr. 1. 1757.

We arrived in the *Ganges* the twelfth ult. at *Fulta*, the unhappy Rendezvous of our poor Countrymen, who were excluded their Settlements. We remained there putting our Land and Sea Forces to rights, till the twenty-first at Night, when we failed to *Burgesfort*, it being the strongest the Moors had on the River, the twenty-ninth at Night we landed at *Maypow*, about four Miles from that Fortrefs, and marched till Eight next Morning, without halting, though almost often out of Sight in Mud and Water. The thirtieth in the Morning we found ourselves about two Miles above the Fort, and the same Distance from the River; about Eight, the *Kent*, *Tyger*, *Salisbury* came-to, and began a most furious Cannonade. The Reason of this forced and hazardous March was to cut off the Garrison's Retreat, and prevent a Reinforcement from *Calcutta*, who were then on their March; about Ten, when we were amusing ourselves with the Fire from the Ships, we were alarmed, and about ten Minutes after, a Body of three thousand Horse were within Pistol Shot of us; our People stood the Shock, and our two Field Pieces flanked them with Grape and Round Shot, which obliged them to retreat, though they rallied several Times with great Resolution; the Engagement lasted an Hour, and was just over, when a thousand of our brave Coast *Seapoys* joined us, who were posted on the River Side, with Part of *Oldbriton's* Regiment. They left near five hundred Men on the Field with Horses, Camels, and one Elephant. We lost but one Officer, Ensign *Kerr*, a Relation of Lord *Ancram*, our Loss of Men was inconsiderable. At Three in the Afternoon we marched down to the River Side, which covered us from the Fort, the Ships keeping a constant Fire; before Night, made several Breaches, while our whole Body disposed themselves, and made it so hot for the Besiegers.

sieged, that their Fire did little Execution. At Ten we stormed and took it, when our Friend Captain *Dugald Campbell* going on the Bastion to forbid the Sailors and *Seapys* firing from without, as they were killing our Men, was shot dead on the Spot, being wounded in five Places, and died universally esteemed and regretted. We demolished Part of the Works on the thirty-first, spiked up the Guns, &c. and sailed for *Tannas* Forts, about two Miles below *Calcutta* the first of *January*; but they abandoned them on our Approach. The *Salisbury* was left a Guardship here; and the second, we marched over Land, while the Admiral and *Tyger* came before *Calcutta*, which held out Half an Hour, and killed the *Tyger* seven or eight Men. They had no Notion of our being able to take it, as they had built an elegant Mosque, and left the Company's Warehouses almost full of Goods. We are clearing away, and fortifying the Place with all possible Expedition we have got a fortified Camp four Miles Distance, where we expect an Engagement soon, as a Body of Moors, &c. are about twenty Miles distant. We have taken since we came here the great City *Hughley*, forty Miles up the River, and reduced most of it to Rubbish.

S E C T. VII.

An Account of an Engagement between three East India-men and two French Men of War, in a Letter from Captain Willson, of the Suffolk.

ON the eighth of *March* 1757, in Lat. 35:40 South; and 6:30 to the Eastward of the Cape of *Good Hope*, in Company with the *Houghton*, Captain *Walpole*, and the *Godolphin*, Captain *Hutchinson*, we saw two Sail, who gave us Chace; and coming up with us in the Night, kept on our Weather Beams till Morning. Being suspicious of a War we made ready to engage. At Dawn of Day we all spread our Colours, and I made a Signal for a Line of Battle a-head, which being presently formed, we hauled up our Courses, took in our small Sails, and laid-to, to receive them. As the Day broke we could perceive the Ships to be *French*, they largest being a Two-Decker, within twenty-four Ports in her lower Tier, and the other a Frigate of twenty-six Guns; they bore down to us, and before they came within Gun-shot, hoisted their Colours, and the large Ship fired a Shot at us, which I immediately returned, but both falling short, we desisted firing till they came within our Reach, when a general Fire beginning on both Sides; they hauled up to the Westward to bring their Broadfides, and began also. The Attack was short; our Heads lay different Ways, we were soon out of the Bearings of each others Guns. All our Ships received some Shot; and the great Ship's Main-top Sail being brought down,

down, they made Sail to the Westward; on which we wore, and making Sail after them, soon came up, got considerably nearer, and brought our Larboard Guns to bear. A warm Engagement ensued for about Half an Hour, when the *French Ship* hoisting her Main-top Sail made Sail from us; we immediately crowded after them, but they went from us fast. Being out of Gun-shot they spoke with each other, and soon after tacked; there being little Wind they fell much to Leeward, before they could bring their Ships to; when they let all their Sail, we hauled up our Courses to receive them. They came much nearer than before, and a very smart Fire was maintained on both Sides, whilst they were passing. When they were out of the Bearing of our Guns, we set all our Sail, making a Shew of standing for their Wakes: But as they continued their Course to the Eastward with all their Sail, we shipped our's to the Westward, and lost Sight of each other in less than six Hours. By the Shot lodged in our Hulls, we found that the great Ship carried twenty-four and twelve Pounders, and the small one twelve Pounders.

As these Ships were not in a proper Station for Cruising, we conclude they were on their Passage for *Mauritius*.

I should do our Officers and Seamen Injustice, if I did not inform you they behaved with all the Bravery and Intrepidity peculiar to our *English* Seamen.

S E C T. VIII.

An Account of the Taking of several Forts by the English, and of the Articles of Peace acceded to and signed by the Nabob of Bengal: And also the Articles agreed to between Admiral Waton and the Council of the French East-India Company: In three Letters from Vice-Admiral Waton.

Fort-Williams, Feb. 24. 1757.

ON the second of *February* the Nabob's army were seen marching by the *English* Camp, about a Mile Distance towards the Town; and when they were got to a convenient Spot of Ground, they encamped there. Hereupon Colonel *Clive* applied to the Admiral for a Party of Seamen to reinforce him. Accordingly Captain *Warrick* received Orders on the fourth to take upon him the Command of a Detachment of Sailors to join Colonel *Clive*, in order to drive the Nabob out of his Camp. On the fifth, at One in the Morning, Captain *Warrick* landed his Men a little above *Kelsal's* Octagon, which were as follows; one hundred and eighty from the *Kent*, one hundred seventy-three from the *Tyger*, one hundred and twenty from the *Salisbury*, twenty-nine from the *Bridgewater*, thirty-seven from the Sloop, and thirty from the *India Men*, in all five hundred sixty-

sixty-nine Men. About Two he joined the Colonel, whose Troops were under Arms, and ready to march, on which our Men were disposed of, to guard and attend the Train, which consisted of six Field Pieces, and one Haubitzer. Soon after this, they marched off the Ground in the following Order: The King's Troops and Company's Grenadiers in the Front, the Sailors with the Train next, the Battalion after, and Seapoys in the Rear. At Three the Colonel altered his Disposition, and marched the Battalion before the Train. In this Order they marched till Five, when the Troops in the Van were charged by the Enemy's Horse in their Camp; but it did not seem to retard our March; by the Time our Rear-guard were entered the Engagement became general from Hedges and Bushes; on which we played our Artillery, defending to the Right and Left our Army all the Way through the Camp, in which we found dead Men and Horses. Here our Men were diverted by killing their Bullocks, Camels, and what Horses were left in our March, which we continued with great Rapidity, driving the Enemy before us, till they lodged themselves in a Tope near *Meter's* Garden, behind the Hedges: From hence they detached a large Body of Horse, with two Pieces of Cannon, to the Cross-road of *Bunglo*, which we soon dislodged with our Field Pieces, after receiving a few Shot; and from thence marched into the Fort. In this Action were killed twelve Seamen, two Captains of the Company's Troops, seventeen private Men, and ten Seapoys. The Number wounded were about fifteen Seamen, and fifty Soldiers and Seapoys. Lieutenant *Lutwidge* of the *Salisbury* was the only Officer mortally wounded.

The Nabob's Army was said to consist of fifteen thousand Foot, and ten thousand Horse. We have had various Accounts of his Loss. A Bremin, who was soon after in the Camp, says, thirteen hundred Men were killed and wounded, and that twenty-one of the former were Officers. Besides this Loss, upwards of five hundred Horses were killed, several Draught Bullocks, and three Elephants. This Attack, though not attended with all the wished-for Success, yet it was sufficient to make the Nabob very solicitous to hasten the Business of a Peace, which was concluded on, and consists of the following Articles.

Articles acceded to, and signed by the Nabob of Bengal,
Febr. 9, 1757.

I. Whatever Rights and Privileges the King has granted the *English* Company in the *Phirmaund*, and *Husbulhoorums* sent from *Dilly*, shall not be disputed or taken from them, and the Immunities therein mentioned be acknowledged and stand good. Whatever Villages are given the Company by the *Phirmaund* shall likewise be granted, notwithstanding they have been denied by

by former Subabs. The Zemindars of these villages, not to be hurt or displaced without cause.

Signed by the Nabob in his own Hand,

I agree to the Terms of the Permit.

II. All Goods passing and repassing through the Country by Land or Water, with *English* Dutrick, shall be exempt from any Tax, Fee, or Imposition, from *Caste*, *Grants*, *Zemindars*, or any others.

I agree to this.

III. All the Company's Factories, seized by the Nabob, shall be returned. All Monies, Goods and Effects belonging to the Company, their Servants and Tenants, and which have been seized and taken by the Nabob shall be restored. What has been plundered and pillaged by his People, made good by the Payment of such a Sum of Money, as his Justice shall think reasonable.

I agree to restore whatever has been seized and taken by my Orders, and accounted for in my Sincery.

IV. That we have Permission to fortify *Calcutta* in such Manner as we may think proper, without Interruption.

I consent to this.

V. That we shall have Liberty to coin Siccas both of Gold and Silver, equal Weight and Fineness to those of *Muxadavad*, which shall pass in the Provinces.

I consent to the English Company's Coining their own Imports Bullion and Gold into Siccas.

VI. That a Treaty shall be ratified, by signing and sealing, and swearing to abide by the Articles therein contained, not only by the Nabob, but his principal Officers and Ministers.

I have sealed and signed the Articles in the Presence of God.

VII. That Admiral *Charles Watson* and Colonel *Robert Clive*, on the Part and Behalf of the *English* Nation, and of the Company, do agree to live in a good Understanding with the Nabob; to put an End to these Troubles, and be in Friendship with him while these Articles are performed and observed by the Nabob.

I have sealed and signed the foregoing Articles upon these Terms; That if the Governor and Council will sign and seal them with the Company's Seal, and will swear to the Performance on their Part.

I then consent and agree to them.

Extract of a Letter from Vice-Admiral Watson, dated on board the Kent, off Chandenagore, March 31. 1757.

Colonel *Clive* being joined with three hundred of the *Bombay* Troops, who by this Reinforcement had with him seven hundred *European* and sixteen hundred Blacks, he immediately marched to *Chandenagore*, where he had not been long, before he took Possession of all the *French* Out-posts there, except one Redoubt, situated between the River-side and the Fort Walls, wherein were

mounted eight Pieces of Cannon of twenty-four Pounders, four of which pointed down the River. On the twenty-fifth Instant I sailed with the *Kent*, *Tyger*, and *Salisbury*. The twenty Gun Ship and Sloop I ordered up the River some Days before to cover the Boats attending on the Camp. On the eighteenth I anchored about two Miles below *Chandenagore*, and observed the *French* had done every Thing in their Power to obstruct our Passage, by sinking two Ships, a Ketch, a Hulk, a Snow, and a Vessel without any Masts, all directly in the Channel, within Gun-shot of the Fort, and laying two Bombs, moored with Chains, across the River. This caused some Delay, till the Bombs were cut adrift, and I could discover, by sounding, a proper Channel to pass through, which the Pilots found out without being at the Trouble of weighing any of the Vessels. Before this was sufficiently known to venture, Admiral *Pecock* came up to me in his Boat, and hoisted his Flag on board the *Tyger*. On the twenty-fourth, at Six in the Morning, I weighed, and sailed up in the following Order; the *Tyger*, *Kent*, and *Salisbury*. At ten Minutes after Six the Enemy began to fire from the Redoubt, which was abandoned as soon as the leading Ship got a-breast of it. At three Quarters after Six the Ships were placed, when I caused the Signal to be made for engaging, which continued very brisk on the both Sides till a Quarter past Nine. The Enemy then waved over their Walls a Flag of Truce, and desired to capitulate; and the Articles being agreed upon and signed, I sent Captain *Latham*, of the *Tyger*, ashore to take Possession of the Fort. Colonel *Clive* marched in with the King's Troops about Five in the Afternoon. They had in the Fort twelve hundred Men, of which five hundred *Europeans* and seven hundred Blacks, eighty-three Pieces of Cannon from twenty-four Pounders downwards, three small Mortars, and a considerable Quantity of Ammunition. Besides the Ships and Vessels sunk below, to stop up the Channel, they sunk and run ashore five large Ships above the Fort; and we have taken four Sloops and a Snow. The Enemy had killed in the Fort forty Men, and seventy wounded. The *Kent* had nineteen Men killed, and forty-nine wounded; the *Tyger* thirteen killed, and fifty wounded. Among the Number killed were, my first Lieutenant, Mr. *Samuel Percu*, and the Master of the *Tyger*. Among the Number wounded were, Mr. *Pocock* slightly hurt, Captain *Speke* and his Son by the same Cannon-Ball; the latter had his Leg shot off. Mr. *Rawlins Hey*, my third Lieutenant, had his Thigh much shattered, and is in great Danger. Mr. *Stanton*, my fourth Lieutenant, slightly wounded by Splinters; but the greatest Part of the Wounded have suffered much, being hurt chiefly by Cannon-shot: Several of them cannot possibly recover. I must do this Justice to all the Officers and Men in general, to say, agreeable to their usual Bravery, they behaved with great Spirit and Resolution on this Occasion; as did also the Land Forces, who kept

kept a good and constant Fire the whole Time from two Batteries of four and two Guns, they had raised very near the Fort.

Kent, off Calcutta in the River Hughley, Apr. 14. Since the Date of my last Letter several of the Wounded are dead, among whom is Mr. Rawlins Hey, my late third Lieutenant, and Captain Speke's Son. There are many more in great Danger.

Articles of Capitulation proposed by the Director and Council for the French East-India Company's Affairs at Chandernagore to Vice-Admiral Watson, with his Answers, on the twenty-third of March, 1757.

Articles of Capitulation for Fort d'Orlean of Chandernagore, proposed by Peter Renault, Esq; Director General, and the Gentlemen of the Council for the French East-India Company's Affairs, to Charles Watson, Esq; Vice-Admiral of the Blue Squadron of his Britannic Majesty's Fleet, and Commander in Chief of all his Majesty's Ships and Vessels employed in the East Indies; and of the Marine Force of their united Company of Merchants trading to, and in these Parts. And,

Answers made by Charles Watson, Esq; Vice-Admiral of the Blue Squadron of the Britannic Majesty's Fleet, and Commander in Chief of all his Majesty's Ships and Vessels employed in the East-Indies; and of the Marine Forces of the united Company of Merchants trading to, and in these Parts, in the Name of his Britannic Majesty, to the Proposals made by the Governor and Council for the Affairs of the French Company at Chandernagore.

Art. I. The Lives of all the Deserters shall be saved.

Ans. The Deserters to be absolutely given up.

Art. II. All the Officers of this Garrison shall be Prisoners on their Parole of Honour: that they shall have Liberty to carry with them all their Effects, and go where they please on promising they will not serve against his Britannic Majesty during the present War.

Ans. The Admiral agrees to.

Art. III. The Soldiers of the Garrison shall be Prisoners of War, so long as the present War continues; and when Peace is made between the King of France and the King of England, they shall be sent to Pondicherry, and till then be entertained at the Expence of the English Company.

Ans. The Admiral likewise agrees, with this Difference only, that instead of sending the Soldiers to Pondicherry, they shall be sent to Madras or to England, as the Admiral shall hereafter think proper; and that such Foreigners, who are not of the French Nation, and choose voluntarily to enter into the English Service, shall have Liberty.

Art. IV. The Seapoys of the Garrison shall not be Prisoners of War, they shall have Leave on the contrary to return on the Coast in their Country.

Ans.

Ans. The Admiral agrees to.

Art. V. The Officers and Men of the *European Ship St. Con-
test*, shall be sent to *Pondicherry* in the first *English Ship* which
goes to the Coast.

Ans. The Officers and Men of the *European Ship* shall be
upon the same Footing as the Soldiers, and to be sent to *Madras*
or to *England* as soon as possible.

Art. VI. The *French Jesuit Fathers* shall have Liberty to ex-
ercise the Functions of their Religion in the House which has
been assigned them, since the demolishing of their Church, with
Silver Ornaments, and every Thing that belongs to the Church,
shall be given them, and also their Effects.

Ans. The Admiral cannot agree to any *Europeans* residing
here, but that the *French Jesuits* may go to *Pondicherry*, with all
the Ornaments of their Church, or wherever they please.

Art. VII. All the Inhabitants, of what Nation or Quality so-
ever, as *Europeans, Muscetes, Christians, Blacks, Gentils, Moors*
and others, shall be put in Possession of their Houses, and all in
general as shall be found belonging to them, either in the Fort,
or on their Estates.

Ans. In Regard to this Article, to be left to the Admiral,
who will do Justice.

Art. VIII. The Factories of *Cassembuzar, Dacca, Pat-
na, and of Ballasore*, shall remain at the Command of the
Chiefs who direct them.

Ans. To be settled between the Nabob and the Admiral.

Art. IX. The Director, Counsellors, and those employed un-
der them, shall have Leave to go where they please, with their
Cloaths and Linen.

Ans. The Admiral agrees to.

At Fort d'Orlean of *Chandenagore*, March 23. 1757.

<i>Laportiere</i>	<i>F. Nicolas</i>	<i>Sugues</i>
<i>P. Renault</i>	<i>M. Fournier</i>	<i>A. Caillott.</i>

The Admiral expects an Answer by Three o'Clock this After-
noon, and that the *British Forces* may take Possession of the
Fort by Four.

The abovementioned Propositions have been accepted of by the
Council; in Consequence of which we have delivered up the
Fortress of *Chandenagore* to Admiral *Watson*.

Chandenagore, March 23. 1757.

<i>Laportiere</i>	<i>F. Nicolas</i>	<i>Sugues</i>
<i>P. Renault</i>	<i>M. Fournier</i>	<i>A. Caillott.</i>

Thus, at length, have been settled the Animosities and Diffe-
rences between the *English* and *French*, and may the Peace now
concluded be lasting and uninterrupted! With this happy Event
we will beg Leave to finish our History of the *East-Indies*.

